INSTRUCTIONS 1

Agreed upon by the Lords and Commons assembled in PARLIAMENT

For Sir *Thomas Barrington*, Sir *William Masham*, Sir *Martin Lumley*, Sir *Henry Mildmay*, of Wanstead, Sir *Thomas Cheek*, *Harboule Grimston* Esquire.

Members of the House of Commons, and Deputie-Lieutenants for the County of *Essex*, and Committees to be sent into the same County.

And for Sir *William Hicks*, Sir *Richard Everard*, Sir *Tho. Honywood*, Sir *Henry Holdcroft*, Sir *William Roe*, Sir *William Martin*, Sir *John Barrington*, *Timothy Middleton* and *John Sayer* Esquires, the rest of the Deputy-Lieutenants of the said County, for preservation of the peace of the said County.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons that this be forthwith printed.

John Browne. Hen. Elsyng. Cler. Parl.

Printed by A. N. for *Richard Best*. October 5. 1642.

MVSEVM
BRITAN
NICVM

Instructions agreed upon by the Lords and Commons Assembled in Parliament for the County of *Essex &c.*

WHereas it doth appeare to the Lords and Commons now assembled in Parliament, that the King seduced by wicked Councell, hath raised War against the Parliament, and other his good subjects, and hath drawne together great Troopes of Papists and ill-affected persons, and sent out Commission for the levying of others, to the great hazard of Religion, and the publicke peace of the Kingdome.

You shall take speciall care therefore that the Ordinance concerning the *Militia* be from time to time put in execution through the said County of

of *Essex* as you shall see cause, And for that purpose, you or any two or more of you shall have power and authority to Arme, Traine, and put in readinesse all and every the Inhabitants of that County fit for the Warre, alwell Trained Bands as other Voluntiers both Horse and Foote, and them under the Command of such Collonels, Lievtenant-Collonels, Serjeant Majors, Captaines, and other Officers, as the Lievtenant of the said County, or you or any three or more of you shall in his absence nominate and appoint to lead and conduct, aswell against all Forraigne Forces that shall in Hostile manner invade the said County, as for resisting and opposing of all other Forces which shall bee either within the said County or else-where raised to the disturbance of the peace of that County. And the Sheriffe and all other Officers of the said Countie are hereby enjoyned to assist you, and every of you therein. And if any person whatsoever shall levie or endeavour to levie or billet any Souldiers, or to raise, draw, or keepe together the Trayned Bands or other Armed Forces of the said Countie, or any other Forces by colour or pretence of any Commission or Warrant from

his

his Majestie under the great Seale or otherwise, without Order and consent of both Houses of Parliament. You are to make knowne to the Trayned Bands, or other Inhabitants of the said Countie, that those who shall appeare upon any such Warrant, or obey any such Commission shall bee held disturbers of, and enemies to the publicke peace, and those who shall not appeare upon any such Warrant or Commission, nor doe any thing in execution thereof, shall bee protected by both Houses of Parliament. And you or any one or more of you shall in the name and by the Authoritie of both Houses of Parliament require and command all persons to forbeare the execution of such Commission or warrant, and to cause the same to be delivered up to you, or any of you, to bee sent to the Speaker of the House of Commons; and you or any two or more of you, are hereby required to draw together such of the Trained Bands and other Forces of the said Countie as shall bee expedient for the suppressing of all such Assemblies, and for the apprehending of all or any person or persons as shall after admonition and command by you

or any of you made unto them, to forbeare the execution of any such Commission or Warrant, or the calling, or gathering, or keeping together of any such forces or Assemblies still persist in doeing the same, and likewise such as shall beare Armes by colour of any Warrant or Commission from his Majesty under the great Seale or otherwise, without Order or consent of both houses of Parliament and also such disaffected persons as shall be found railing any parties or factions against the Parliament, to be ready upon like to answer such their offences as to law and iustice shall appertaine,

You or any one or more of you, shall stay, search, and examine, or cause to be staid, searched, and examined all suspitious persons and carriages, and to search or cause to be searched all suspitious places, and to seize upon all horses, Armes, Ammunition, Money, Plate, or other provisions whatsoever, which you or any one of you shall have iust cause to suspect, is or are raised or provided for the fomenting or maintayning, any such unnaturall and unlawfull

Warre-

War against the Parliament and the Kingdome.

You or any two or more of you, shall observe and execute the Ordinances of both houses of Parliament of the 4th of August last for the suppression of the Rebellion, and Commotion raised by the Marquesse of *Hartford* in the County of *Somersetshire*, and other Westerne Counties, and by the Earle of *Northampton* and others in the County of *Leicester*, *Northampton*, *Warwicke*, and other adjoyning parts and of any other Rebellion or Commotion raised or that shall be raised by any other person or persons within the said County of

You, or any two or more of you, shall conduct and leade all such forces of horse and foot as shall be appointed by the Lord Generall the Earle of *Essex* for the service of the Parliament and Kingdome, and shall fight with, kill and slay all such as shall by force oppose you, or any of you, in the execution of that Ordinance, and all other their Assistants and ayders, and abettors,

and

and you or two of you shall levie such other forces of horse and foote as his Excellence shall by his Commission giue you power to levie under such Colonels, Commanders and other Officers as shall bee by him appointed or directed, & you shall persue the said Traitors & Rebbels and their Adherents in the said County or in any other places or Counties of the Kingdome into which they shall retire themselves, all which forces so to bee raised shall have the same pay as the rest of the Army is to have, and you shall defend and protect his Majesties subjects from violence and oppression by the illegall Commission of Array or otherwise, and you shall hinder and forbid the execution of that illegall Commission and in all places to the uttmost of your power endeavour to preserve and restore the peace of the Kingdome.

You or any one of you shall take from the said Rebells and Traytors all such Armes Ordnance and Ammunition as they have taken from his Majesties subjects, and restore the same to the

You

You or any one or more of you shall take care that such resolutions and Orders of both houses as have been or shall be delivered or sent downe unto you or any of you be put in execution, and shall require the Sheriffes and Justices of the Peace, and all other His Majesties Officers and Subjects of the said County, to be aiding and assisting unto you & every of you for that purpose.

You shall likewise declare unto all men, that it hath ever been, and still shall be the care and endeavours of the Parliament to provide for His Majesties safety, and that they doe not, nor never did know of any evill intended towards His Majesties Person, which might move him to require any extraordinary Guard, that his greatest safety is in the affections and fidelity of His Subjects, and in the advice and counsel of His Parliament; and His greatest danger in withdrawing himselfe to such disaffected and malignant persons, obnoxious to justice for their great enormities, who under colour of doing Him service have raised forces which they labour to encrease, to the hazard of ruining Religion and the whole Kingdom.

And you or any one or more of you shall in the name of the Lords and Commons require the Sheriffs of the said County to publish through-

out the same the Declarations commanded to be published by both houses of Parliament, And you, and every of you shall endeavour to cleere the proceedings of Parliament from imputations and aspersions, and shall from time to time certifie us of all things which you conceive necessary for the present service, and that we may have a speedy account of it, and that our directions to you, as wel as your advertisements to us, may have cleere and speedy passage, you and every of you shall lay a strict charge upon all Postmasters and Messengers, that they doe not suffer any Letters or other dispatches to or from the Parliament to be intercepted or stayed, and if any shall presume to make stay of any such dispatches, you and every of you shal direct the Postmasters and Messengers to repaire to the Justices of the Peace, Constables, and other Officers for their aid and assistance, who are hereby required to take speciall care that there be no such interruption.

You or any two or more of you are hereby authorised and required forthwith to disarme all Popish Recusants and other dangerous and ill affected persons, as well Clergymen as others, as have testified, or shal testifie their ill dispositions to the peace of the Kingdom and proceedings of Parliament, and all such Armes, and all other

Armes formerly taken from Popish Recusants shal be imployed by you for the defence of the said County.

You or any one or more of you shal take care that none of the Recusants Armes or other Ammunition of the said County shall be taken or carried out of the same, upon any pretence or command whatsoever, without warrant from both Houses of Parliament. And you, or any one or more of you shal give order and directions to the Sheriffe of the said County, Justices of the Peace, and other Officers, to require and command all Popish Recusants in the said County to confine themselves to their dwelling places according to the Statute in that case provided; and if any such Recusant shal be found to transgresse therein, you or any one or more of you shal cause the Justice of Peace forthwith to bind them to their good behaviours, and upon refusall or neglect to give security, accordingly to commit them to prison, and further proceed against them according to Law.

You or any one or more of you shal also in the name of both houses of Parliament require all such persons who have in their custody any part of the publique Magazine of the said County, to deliver the same to you or any two of you, to be dis-

disposed of, and imployed for the defence of the County; and in case of refusall, you are hereby authorised to seize, take, carry away, and dispose of the same for the purpose aforesaid.

And you or any two or more of you are likewise to give charge from both houses of Parliament to all Collonels, Captaines, Lieutenants & all other Officers for the Militia, that they shall be observant to such directions as they shal from time to time receive from the Lord Lieutenant of the said County, or his Deputy, or any of them, for the due performance of any the commands of the said Houses.

You or any one or more of you shal resist and repell, and are hereby authorised to resist and repell by the power of the said County, and by all other waies and meanes, all such force and violence as shall be raised or brought by any person or persons, to the hinderance or disturbance of this present service, or for the Arresting or seizing of the persons of you or any of you, or any other which shal be imployed in performance of the Ordinance, instructions, and commands of both houses of Parliament, for any thing done in execution thereof. And the Sheriffs and Justices of peace of the said County, and all other Officers & subjects, are hereby required to be aiding,

and assisting to you and every of you, for the better and more speedy execution of the premisses. And you and any two or more of you shall observe with the consent of two of the Members of the house of Commons aforenamed, have power and authority to fortifie any part or place of the said County, in such manner and sort as you or any two or more of you, with the consent of two of the Members of the house of Commons aforesaid shall think fit for the safety of the said County, and for the more security of the same shall set such several all guards and forces in all places and Towns within the said County, as you or any two or more of you, with the consent of any two of the said Members of the house of Commons, shall think fit and requisite, and to cause the Boats within the said County to be watched, guarded and fired as occasion shall require.

You and every of you shall take care to put in execution the Propositions and Orders made by the Lords and Commons, now assembled in Parliament, for bringing in money or Plate to maintaine Horse and Armes, for the preservation of the publique peace, and for the defence of the King and both houses of Parliament; As also other instructions and additions for Deputy-Lieutenants which are Members of the house of

Com-

Commons, and other Deputy-Lieutinants of severall Counties concerning the last propositi-on according to a Declaration of the Lords and Commons made thereupon.

You or any three or more of you shall or may call together the Inhabitants of the County at such times and places as you shall thinke fit, and propound to them what Horse, Men, and Armes they will finde and maintaine, or what money they will contribute for the defence of the said County; which forces and all other forces that shall be raised in that County by the authority of the Lords and Commons in Parliament, and their Officers; you or any two or more of you shall lead, conduct, and imploy for the defence of the said County; and you or any two or more of you shall have power to appoint Treasurers to receive the said Monies so raised, as aforesaid, who are hereby required to issue forth the same, as they shall receive order or warrant from you or any two of you under your hands, for the providing of Armes and Ammunition for the defence and security of the said County; as also for the paying of such Officers and Souldiers as shall be levied and imployed for the purpose aforesaid, and of all other necessaries for the defence of the said County.

You

You or any three or more of you shall or may in the absence of the Lieutenant of the said County make and appoint such Captaines and other Officers as shall be requisite for the service and defence of that County, and to remove them out of their places, and to make others from time to time, as you shall think fit for that purpose.

You or any two or more of you shall or may require strong Watches and Wards to be set by the Constables or such other person as you shall thinke meete in all convenient places in that county for the peace and safetie thereof.

You or the greater part of you whereof two to be Members of the house of Commons may joine in assotiation with the adjacent counties for the mutuall defence each of others county.

You or any one or more of you shall or may apprehend all such persons as shall oppose you, or refuse to obey you in the premises, and to send him or them in safe custody up to the Parliament, or the Committee of Parliament for the defence of the Kingdome, to be proceeded with according to justice.

You and every of you shall observe and execute all such further directions and instructions

as

as you shall from time to time receive from both houses of Parliament, as likewise from the Committee of the Lords and Commons appointed to take care for the safety of the Kingdome, and whatsoever you shall doe therein or any other person in ayd and assistance of you, it shall be accepted as good and acceptable service to the Kingdome. And for their and your so doing, they and you shall be defended and protected by the authority of Parliament; and resolution of the Lords and Commons to protect those that shall obey and further their commands, you shall publish and declare upon all occasions for the better encouragement of the Subjects of this Kingdome in that behalfe.

FINIS.

The DECLARATION And VOTES Of the LORDS and COMMONS Assembled in Parliament:

Concerning the late Treaty of PEACE in YORK-SHIRE.

Wherein they renounce the said agreement, as being very prejudiciall and dangerous to the whole Kingdome, that any one County should stand as Neuters, and withdraw themselves from the assistance of the rest.

Together with the fourth Article of the Lord Generals Instructions, sent to Mr. Hotham, and Sir Ed. Rodes, with power to them to publish it, and to pardon all those that shall submit within 10 dayes.

Die Martis, Octob. 4. 1642.

ORdered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that this Declaration and Votes be forthwith Printed and published.

John Browne, Clerk. Parliam.

October 5. London Printed for *John Wright*. 1642.

The DECLARATION And VOTES Of the LORDS and COMMONS Assembled in Parliament:

Concerning the late Cessation of ARMS in YORKSHIRE.

Wherein they renounce the said Cessation, as being very prejudicial and dangerous to the whole Kingdome, that any one County should treat a Neuter, and withdraw themselves from the assistance of the rest.

Together with the Lord Fairfax his Article of the Lord General's Instructions to Major Gen. Sir Ed. Rhodes, with power to them to publish it, and to pardon all those that shall submit within 10 dayes.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that this Declaration and Votes be forthwith Printed and published.

Jo. Brown Cler. Parl.

London, Printed for John Wright, 1642.

A DECLARATION Of the LORDS and COMMONS Assembled in PARLIAMENT



Upon perusall of certaine Articles dated the 29 of September 1648. betwixt the Lord Fairfax and divers other well affected to the Parts of the Kingdome, and Major Gen. Skippon and others, who have declared themselves in sundry Petitions, concerning the priviledges of the Parliament, and furtherance of the worke of God against them, and of many grievous pressures lately practised upon the good Subjects of this Kingdome, in the County of Kent. And being confident that if the Lord Fairfax and the rest of the Gentlemen engaged by their Letters, Declarations, Petitions, and Remonstrances, were plainly and clearly understood by all men, both

both in the effect, and in the consequence, their good intentions to the peace of that County, and of the Kingdome, are such, that they would never have consented to any thing so prejudiciall thereunto, as this seeming Neutrality would be, by making that County many wayes serviceable to those ill Counsells, whereby his Majesty is incited against his Subjects, and no way useful to the Parliament, in protecting of them. Wherefore the Lords and Commons do declare,

First that none of the parties to that agreement had any authority by any Act of theirs, to bind that County to any such Neutrality as is mentioned in that agreement, it being a peculiar and proper power and privilege of Parliament, where the whole body of the Kingdome is represented, to bind all or any part thereof.

2 That it is very prejudiciall and dangerous to the whole Kingdome, that one County should withdraw themselves from the assistance of the rest, to which they are bound by Law, and by severall Acts and Declarations of Parliament.

3 That it is very derogatory to the power and authority of Parliament, that any private men should take upon them to suspend the execution of the Ordinance of the Militia, declared by both Houses to be according to Law, and very necessary at this time for the preservation of the peace and safety of the Kingdome.

4 That many things in that agreement are very unequall, contrary to the nature of a Neutrality, giving much more advantage to one party, than the

the

the other) prejudiciall to the publike defence of the Kingdome, undertaken by the Parliament, and would be a great impediment to that good agreement betwixt his Majesty and his Subjects, which both Houses doe so earnestly desire and indeavour.

For these and other reasons, we hold our selves bound in conscience, in performance of the severall Protestations that we have made, to hinder all further proceedings upon that agreement. And therefore it is Ordered by both Houses of Parliament, that no such Neutrallity be observed in that County, which will advantage the Forces raised against the Parliament, and no way benefit *Yorkshire*, but rather most dangerous to them by keeping that County without any defensive force, whereby it will be open to the King to bring backe his Army at his pleasure, and to make that his winter quarter, to which the plenty of that County and neerenesse of *Newcastle* for supplies by Sea, are like to invite him, whereby it will become the Seat of the War, and if this should not fall out, yet if the rest of the Kingdom be suppressed, what hope can *Yorkshire* have but to be involved in the publike misery? And therefore in wisedome for themselves, and justice to the State, they ought not to withdraw themselves from the common cause, but to joyne with the Parliament in the defence of the Religion and liberty of the whole Kingdome, and with them to labour by all good meanes to procure a generall Peace, and protection from the King to all his Subjects, which both the Houses of Parliament have by many humble Petitions desired of his Majesty, but cannot yet obtaine. And if they should suffer

any particular Counties to divide themselves from the rest of the Kingdome, it will be a meanes of bringing all to ruine and destruction; Wherefore it is further Declared, that neither the L. *Fairfax*, nor the Gentlemen of *Yorkshire*, who are parties to those Articles, nor any other Inhabitants of that County, are bound by any such agreement, but they are required to pursue their former Resolutions, of maintaining and assisting the Parliament in defence of the common cause, according to their generall protestation, wherein they are bound with the rest of the Kingdome, and against the particular Protestation by themselves lately made; And according to such Orders and Commissions as they shall receive from both Houses of Parliament, From the Committee of Lords and Commons appointed for the safety of the Kingdome, or from the Earle of Essex Lord Generall.

Die Martis, Octob. 4. 1642.

Resolved upon the Question by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament.

THat Master *Hobart*, and Sir *Edward Rodes*, and other the Committees for raysing of mony, Plate, and Horse, for the defence of King and Kingdome in the County of *York*; And such as they or any two of them shall nominate, shall be Commissioners for the advancing and raysing of Monies, Horse, and Plate upon the propositions, and shall have power to appoynt Commissaries to value the Horse, and Treasurers to receive the Monies and plate.

Resolved upon the Question, &c.

That Master *Hobart* and Sir *Edward Rodes*, shall have the like Instructions as other commiss, with this addition that they shall have power to seize and apprehend all Delinquents that are so Voted by the parliament, and all such others as delinquents, as have or doe shew themselves opposite and disobedient to the Orders and proceedings of parliament.

Resolved upon the Question, &c.

That the 4 Article of the L. Generals Instructions, shall be extracted and sent to Master *Hobart &c.* with power to them to publish it.

The

The 4 Article of the Lord Gen
ralls INSTRUCTIONS.

YOu shall publish and declare, that if any, who have be
so seduced by the false aspersions cast upon the pro
dings of the Parliament, as to assist the King in the Ac
of those dangerous Counsells, shall willingly within t
dayes after such publication in the Army, returne to th
duty, not doing any hostile Act within the time limi
and joyne themselves with the Parliament, in defence of
ligion, his Majesties Person, the Liberties and Lawes of t
Kingdome, and priviledges of Parliament, with their
sons, and Estates, as the Members of both Houses, and
rest of the Kingdome have done; That the Lords and C
mons will be ready upon their Submission to restore
persons in such manner as they shall have cause to
ledge they have beene used with Clemency and favo
provided, that this shall not extend to admit any man
either House of Parliament who stands Impeached, wit
giving satisfaction to the House wherof he shall be a M
And except all persons who stand Impeached or particul
voted in either House of parliament for any delinquency w
soever, Excepting likewise such Adherents of those who
Impeached in parliament of Treason, as have bin Ex
persons and chiefe Actors in those Treasons. And except
Earle of *Bristoll*, the Earle of *Cumberland*, the Earle of *N*
castle, the Earle *Rivers*, Secretary *Nicholas*, Master
Porter, Master *Edward Hide*, the Duke of *Richmond*, the Earle
Carnarvan, the Lord Viscount *Newark*, the Lord Visco
Faulkland, one of the principall Secretaries of State to
Majesty.

FINIS.

A true and exact

RELATION

OF THE

Proceedings of His Majesties

ARMY

IN

Cheshire, Shropshire and *Worstershire.*

Together

With what hath happened to the late Lord *Strange* now Earl of *Derby*, before *MANCHESTER.*

WITH

The Resolution of the Town to oppose him; and the number of Men which were slain.

LONDON,
Printed for *M. Batt*, Octob. 5
1642.

A true and exact

RELATION

OF THE

Proceedings of His Majesties

ARMY

IN

Cleveland, Sherwood and Yorkshire.

Together

With what hath happened to the

late Lord Strange in the Isle of Man,

before his ARRIVALL

WITH

The Resolution of the Town to oppose

him; and the number of Men which

were there.

BRITISH MUSEUM

LONDON,

Printed for M. Sm. Gent. 1642.

Bridgenorth, Octob. 1. 1642.

OUr Countrey is in a most miserable condition, there is nothing can be expected but a totall ruine thereof, except God do miraculously help us with assistance from the Parliament. The Kings Souldiers are altogether bent on mischief, taking, wasting, and spoyling those things we should live by: they do take our Corn unthresht to litter their horses, spoyling that which many a poor creature wants: if any one speak, be it man or woman, either a Pistoll or a Sword is straight set to the party, with many grievous oathes; They know what they do, they are the Kings servants, and will not be limitted of their will: you may judge by this what a case we are in; and for any thing we can perceive, like to be worse, for as long as these outrages are permitted, no question but the Kings Army will encrease: What with Papists, Atheists, and all desperate Ruffians, they have made *Shrewsbury* strong, as it is reported to us; many Pieces of Ordnance, 300 Carts laden with Ammunition,

and our County of *Shropshire* is very much awed, many wel-affected people withdraw themselves; The Sheriff here hath lately seized certain thousands of pounds at our Town of *Bridgenorth*, intended to be sent down *Severn* lately to *Bristoll*, by M. *Charlton* of *Ayley*, M. *Baker* of *Hamond*, and others: We have many brags here of the Cavaliers, what victories they have had at *Worcester*, though we know for certain they are notorious lyes, yet we dare not contradict them; it grieves the soul of every good Christian, to see how His Majestie is misled. We are glad to hear of your constancy to the King and Parliament, our affections are the same, though we dare not shew it: for all the reports you have heard, you may perhaps understand by the next, that *Shropshire* is not altogether so malignant as it is reported to be, fear makes us yeild to many things. I am in haste.

Yours, T. C.

Chester, Octob. 1. 1642.

WE are here in great fears, 260 horse loads of Arms are come hither out of the North, & they tell us of 15000 men that will come out of *Lancashire*, and the parts adjoyning, besides what *Cheshire* and the parts of *Wales* will afford. The Lord *Chelmley* sets out 200 Foot, and 20 Horse. The Lord *Grandison* with 200 Horse, hath possest himself of *Newark* for the King. O

and hath billetted his Troops in the Town, who have ſince their entrance, plundered divers houſes of well-affected men in the Town and Country, which hath put the people round about into ſuch a fear, that many flie from the country to the city, & take houſes, and carry their beſt goods thither. I my ſelf am come this laſt week to live in *Cheſter*, and have left my ſervants to look to buſineſſe in the Country. Since my coming hither, there were 200 ſouldiers billetted in our little village, and 13 of them appointed to my houſe, who, I thank God, departed without doing any more hurt, then what victualls they eat, which they took in an orderly manner. His Majeſty departed *Cheſter* on Tueſday, and went hence by *Wregham* to *Shrewsbury*, whence he came: At his departure from us, he put 100 men for a Garriſon into the Caſtle, and commanded Sir *Thomas Delves*, Sir *Richard Wilbraham*, M. *Philip Manwaring* of *Badely*, and M. *Berkind* the Pronotary, and his ſon, to wait upon His Majeſty, and to be confined to Court. The ſame day the King went, Captain *Salisbury* and his men did burn Sir *William Bruertons* Decoy; and the Kings Souldiers in all places where they come, grow very inſolent, and do much ſpoyl and miſchief; the Commiſſioners of Array by the Kings coming hither are much ſtrengthned in theſe parts, for the aforeſaid men which the King hath taken away with him, were the chief of thoſe that attempted to put the *Mili-*

tia

tis in execution. The report is here, that the King likes the City ſo well, he intends ſhortly to return and winter with us. My Lord *Strange*, now Earl of *Derby* (for on Munday laſt his father died here in *Cheſter*) is gone with great Forces againſt *Manchester*, who have fortified themſelves, and reſolve to keep him out with all the might they can; they have three Pieces of Ordnance; my Lord *Strange* hath ſix Pieces; Bullets have been exchanged on both ſides, and two of my Lords men ſlain, and ſome Commanders; which hath ſo far incenſed him, that he is reſolved to have the Town, or to die before it. The times are like to be miſerable, God grant a happy Reconcilement.

Worceſter

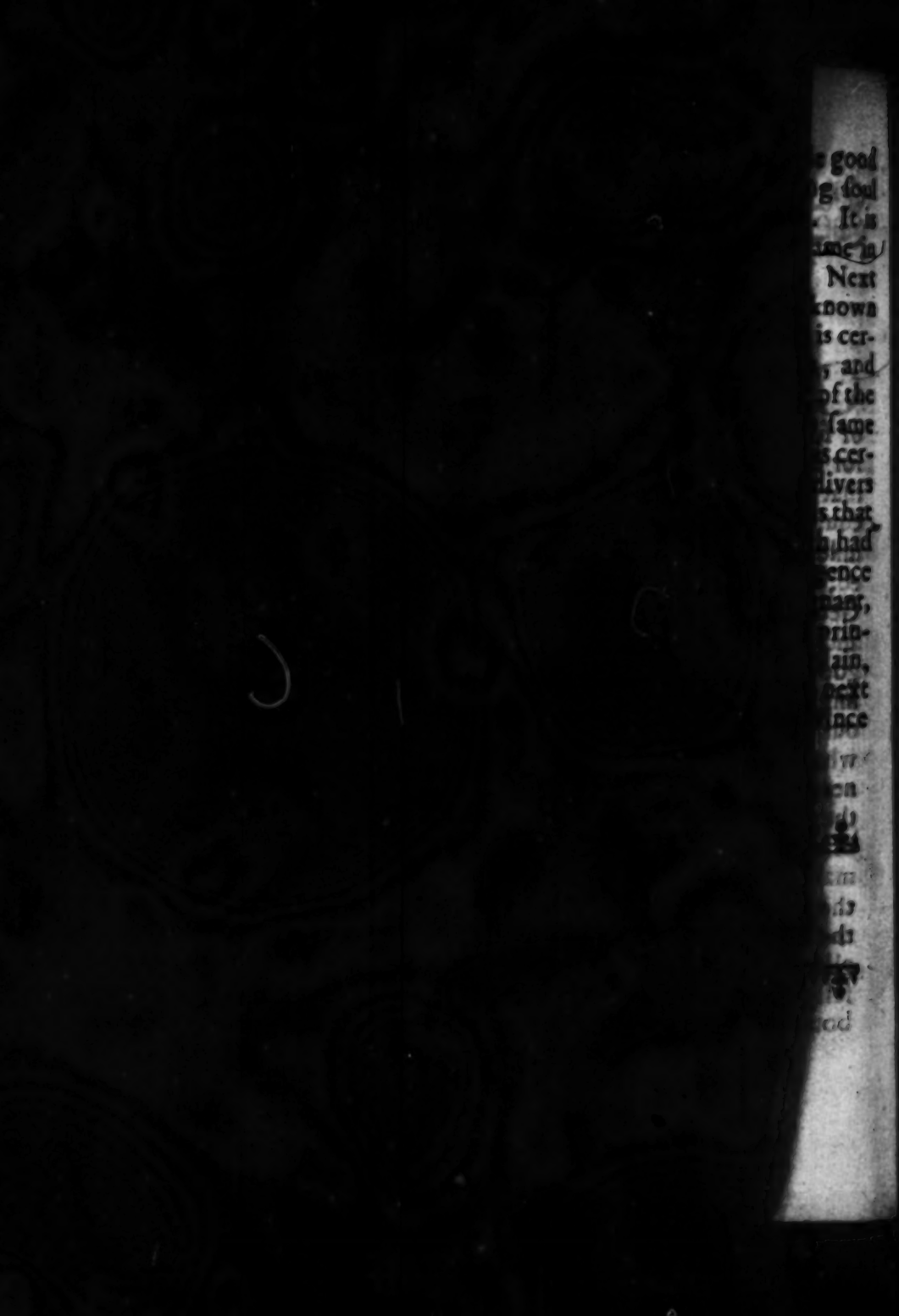
Worceſter, September 29. 1642.

ON Munday laſt we ſet forward with his Excellencie, accompanied with ſix Regiments of foot, and 26 or 27 troops of horſe purpoſing for *Coventry*, but News neer *Coventry* reaching us, that the Enemy being at *Worceſter*, his Excellencie commanded our march thither, where within 8 miles upon Friday laſt in the morning we attained, from whence Sir *William Belford* Lieutenant Generall of the horſe with 10 commanded troops and 600 Muſquetiers, were commanded to make good the paſſage to the City, that our Army might march in ſafety from the Enemy: Upon our paſſage we found little or no Intelligence of what ſtrength the other party was; and drawing neer the City, we found the Enemy engaged on the other ſide the bridge, and in fight with ſome of our troops, ſo that it was impoſſible for us to make good our purpoſes, being not able to paſſe the River, we laid ſeverall Ambuſcadoes about the City, and the horſe ſhewed themſelves, but all in vain, for the Enemy durſt not make the leaſt ſally upon us; but they after the skirmith, and about one of the clock at night ſtill and ſilently

with

with their losse departed the City, and made good their retreat towards *Bewdley*, and no living soul would give us the least notice of the same. It is certainly reported, that Prince *Robert* came in with 11 Troops and 500 Dragooneers. Next morning was found dead 24. but all not known when they were viewed; Prince *Maurice* is certainly reported to be shot through the jaws, and Prince *Robert* in the heel: Some two more of the great ones amongst them were buried the same Friday evening ere they departed: *Wilmot* is certainly run through the body, and it is said divers of them dyed upon the way, but certain it is that their losse was full as great as ours, which had been more, could we have had any Intelligence out of the City, which is desperately Malignant, and the Country also. Of our side onely of principall Officers, Sargeant Major *Douglas* was slain, and Colonell *Sands* sore wounded. Our next march will be towards *Ludlow*, where Prince *Robert* is.

FINIS.



4

Some Late

OCCVRRENCES

IN

SHROP-SHIRE

AND

DEVON-SHIRE.

Dated, *September* the last.

London Printed for *H. Blunden*, *October* 5. 1641.

Some Late

OCCVRRENCES

IN

SHROP-SHIRE

AND

DEVON-SHIRE.

Dated, September the last.

London Printed for H. Blunden, October 5. 1642.

September the last.

ON Tuesday last at night his Majesty came safe to *Shrewsbury* from *Chester*, And upon Warrant granted out the Friday before, most part of the Gentry, Clergy, Freeholders, and substantiall inhabitants of the County appeared before him last Wednesday at Shrewsbury, in a Meadow called the Gay, where his Majesty, and the Prince came in Person, and made a short Speech, which the Crowd being great, I could heare little of, but the substance of that he intended to speak was put in writing, and read to the People, which was to this effect: *That such was the insolencies of a rebellious and malignant party against him, who had robbed and spoiled him of his goods, and kept his revenues from him, and had now set forth an Army to warre against him, that now he was enforced to desire the aide and reliefe of his good subjects, to supply him in this necessity, for the defence and safety of his Person, the preservation of the true Religion, and maintenance of our Lawes, and Liberties, hoping they would be as liberall to their abilities in supplying him, as others that were grown wanton with plenty, had been bountifull to maintain War against him, but yet rather than he would put*

too heavy a presſure upon his good ſubjects, he would melt down his own Plate, ſell and morgage his Land to maintain his juſt rights and ours. There was no Monies nor Plate paied with that I did ſee, for his Majeſty referred it to his high Sheriffe, and other Commiſſioners, to uſe the time and method they thought fit, and ſo we ſhould be called a-gain to expreſſe our affections to them. The Lord grant us faith and conſtancy to undergoe all troubles that lie upon us, and ſend a happy and ſpeedy reconciliation betwixt Prince and People, to Gods glory, and all our comforts.

Our Country is now in a ſad full condition, by reaſon of the multitude of Soldiers daily billeted upon us, both of Horſe and Foote. I have had of thoſe gueſts all this week, and expect little better next week. We had in Town, on Thurſday night laſt, ſome 20 or 24 Captaines, beſides other Officers, and incredible number of ſoldiers belonging to them. All the Country over, within 20. or 24. miles of Shrewsbury, are full of ſouldiers, your Father hath ſome 40. for his part, being ſome of thoſe that came from *Nantwich*, which after they had made what ſpoile they could there, are now billeted a good part of them in *Prince* parish, they are of my Lo. *Grandiſons* Regiment, and ſuch for condition; that I think the Earth affords not worſe, they have plundered divers mens houſes in a moſt woefull manner: Your friend and mine, hath had in money and goods taken from him, to the value of 50 li. A Gentleman of

quality was enforced to shift for himselfe, and leave his house, and they have taken possession of it, and live upon the spoile of his household provision, Corn, and Cattel, neare 30. men, and at least 40. Horses, since Munday last, and shew no sign of parting as yet, but endeavour the ruine of his house and goods, and if any fault be found, threaten to burn it to the ground: We have escaped reasonable well in Town as yet, with some little losse, I praise God for it, I have none as yet, but how long I, and many others shall be free, the Lord above doth know, for we have one outrage or other committed daily, they ride armed up and down, with Swords and Pistols, Muskets, and Dragoones, to the great terror of the people, that we scarce know how in safety to go out of doors, they take mens horses, breake and pillage mens houses both night and day in an unheard of manner, they pretend quarrell against the Roundheads, as they call them, but for ought I see they will spare none if they may hope to have good booty. Prince *Robert* came to Shrewsbury last Munday night, I saw him my selfe on Wednesday, the Marquesse of Hertford is reported to be there likewise. So with my best respects unto you, I remaine,

Yours, what's kind you know.

Octob. 1. An. 1642.

September the last.

SEptember 21. here was newes that the Cavaliers were come out of Sherborn Castle, which made Exeter prepare themselves, but their purpose was toward *Minhead*, and from thence to *Wales*, but they were prevented by the Earle of *Bedford's* Troopes, only the Lord Marquesse, the Lo. *Paulet*, Sir *John Stowell* with others, escaped to *Minhead* on Sunday night, Sept. 25. much threatning the Town to give them passage, or they would fire the Town, so that at length got away in a Coale-boat, but the rest took their way toward *Monkton*, where they found such entertainment, that they were compelled to passe another way, some got lodging at *Chittington*, others travelled all night to shift from the Earle of *Bedford's* Troopes, and are now taken prisoners, but alas, they are quite worne out, for their Horses pine away, and waxe feeble for want of fodder, for the Country would hardly relieve them, though they carryed themselves very peaceably, and paid to a Mite for what they tooke, which made the Countrey the more compassionate on them. But on Munday, the 26. the Troopers came to *Monkton*, where they had notice of 3. or 4. Captaines, being

at

at the Lady *Pollards*, where they presently rode toward her house, and found them there sitting at Dinner, and took them Prisoners, with Sir *Hugh* her son, and carryed them to *Moulton*, purposing to bring them to the Parliament, but they rifled the Ladies house, and tooke away great store of Linnen, and other implements, and all the Horses, Bridles, Saddles, Halters, and all Horse furniture that was to be found in house or field were carryed away, but the next day it was restored againe, as much as could be found out, though not all, &c. On Tuesday they tooke Sir *Ralph Siddenham* Prisoner, but *Basset* was fled, he being the only man for the Array, none so eager in pursuance thereof as he, and since we heare the Earl of *Bath* is taken Prisoner also, truly I must needs say he was a very peaceable, courteous Noble man, and so well and quietly hath carryed himselfe in this Commission, what ever the Country say of him, but thus much I must needs say, those men will never get renowne and credit againe of their Countrey; but in this mean time the Cavaliers have recovered *Cornwall*, and were entertained at Sir *Bevill Greenvilles*, and now have a very strong Castle there, so that it will be in vain for the Troopers to pursue them, without great strength, and the longer they delay, the more they will be fortified, so that it will be the more difficult to take them; I wish we had peace, and so the God of peace grant us peace. *Amen.*

FINIS.

at the Lady Pollards, where they precisely rode toward her house, and found them there sitting at Dinner, and took them Prisoners, with Sir Hugh her son, and carryed them to Newbery, purposing to bring them to the Parliament, but they rifled the Ladies house, and took away great store of Linnen, and other imployments, and all the Horses, Bridles, Saddles, Halters, and all Horse furniture that was to be found in house or field were carryed away, but the next day it was restored again, as much as could be found out, though not all, &c. On Tuesday they took Sir Ralph Hopkins Prisoner, but Sir Ralph being the only man for the Army, came to easier imprisonment therefore he; and since we hear the Earl of Bath is taken Prisoner also, truly I must needs say he was a very peaceable, courteous Noble man, and so well and quietly hath carryed himselfe in this Commotion, what ever the Country say of him, but this much I must needs say, these men will never get reputation and credit again of their Country; but as this man is one the Cavaliers have recovered Devizes, and were entertained at Sir Revill Grenvils, and now have a very strong Castle there, so that it will be in vain for the Troopers to pursue them, without great strength, and the longer they delay, the more they will be fortified, so that it will be the more difficult to take them; I wish we had peace, and so the God of peace grant us peace. Amen.

FINIS.

5

NEWES FROM MANCHESTER

Being

A TRVE RELATION OF

The

Battell fought before

MANCHESTER.

Wherein the Lord *Strange* loſt 150. Men beſides 100 taken Priſoners, with the loſſe only of 12 Men of the Town ſide, whereof ſix of them were taken Priſoners.

Sent in a *Letter* to a private Friend.

Octob. 5th *LONDON*,
Printed for *Richard Beſt*. 1642.

NEWES FROM

MANCHESTER

Being

A TRVE RELATION OF

The

Battell fought before

MANCHESTER.

Wherein the Lord strange loft

150. Men beliedes 300 taken Prisoners,

with the loss only of 13 Men of the Town

side, whereof six of them were

taken Prisoners.

Sent in a Letter to a private

Friend.

LONDON,

Printed for Richard Bell. 1642.

NEWES FROM MANCHESTER,

Being a true relation of the Battell fought before *Manchester*.

SAturday the 24 of *September* last in the night came a great company of Horse and Foot, to the number of two or three thousand, against the Towne of *Manchester*.

Sunday morning my Lord *Strange* now Earle of *Derby*, for his father died this week at *Chester*, my Lord *Mollineux*, Sir *John Girlington* high Sheriff of the County of *Lancaster*, Sir *Gilbert Gerard* Colonell of the Horse, with diverse other Captaines and Gen-

Gentlemen of the County, with some six or seven Canons, came likewise neere unto the Towne; But the Townsmen, having some notice on the Saturday evening of their approach, did send to the Inhabitants thereabouts, who on Sunday and Monday came in abundantly with Muskets, Pikes, Halberts, Staves, and such like, to the number of two thousand, And these Gentlemen likewise came in aid of the Towne, Master *Holland*, Master *Egerton*, Master *Duckenfield*, Master *Arden*, Master *Butterworth*, Master *Booth*, Sir *George's* second Sonne, Master *Hide* and some others.

And upon Sunday fore-noone we were called out of Church from Sermon, and since then there have beene many hot skirmishes both in the Night and Day, especially Monday in the afternoone, and in the night, their Ordinance killed none but onely a strange Boy was gazing about him but not in Armes.

There have not beene slaine of the Towns side above five or six and as many taken

taken prisoners, there are slaine on the other side about an hundred and fifty, whereof some speciall Commanders, Master *Standish* of *Taxbury* is slaine, Captaine *Biron*, Captaine *Tilesley*, and many others of good quality, and about an hundred taken Prisoners; The Souldier hath ransackt and pillag'd, and done abundance of hurt in the Country thereabouts; The Towne-men fetch them in, and bring in Horse and man in great companies, foure or five bring in two or three apeece.

Upon Monday night they burnt a great Barne with much Corne and Hay of M. *Greenes*; and some Houses of Master *Foxes* at the Deanes Gate end. The Towne is daily expectant of ayde from the Parliament and the Army. Wee have beene full of feares, ofte called out of Bed in the night, and in great distresse, but Gods great goodnesse hath greatly preserved us beyond all expectation. If I would but relate unto you all the passages it would fill you with admiration, to see how gratious God hath

beene to us; but the Towne is the better for some fortifications made by a Garison, by Chaines, and Mudwalls at the Towne ends, and I hope much the better for good Prayers. The matter is the more unkindly taken, because the Lord *Strange* hath brought some that were sent from the Town upon his warrant to meete the King at *Warrington*, against the *Towne*, and the Souldiers say they had no knowledge of comming against *Manchester*, But were tould they were to goe for some other purpose that way. They say Captaine *Leigh* of *Adlington* is at *Stockport*, with Forces against the Towne, but they say they will not goe out of the County, Captaine *Robert Bradshaw*, Captaine *Radclife*, Captaine *Chetwell*, and Captaine *Barrington* hath done very great service.

This is the substance of what I know, I have been in Town all the time. The Lord grant us peace, Pray for us and the peace of this Kingdome.

Since I writ this Letter I have ſent you a Catalogue of thoſe that were ſlaine before Mancheſter, by them in the Towne.

1. Lord *Mollinux* the Earle of *Derbies* Son in Law.
2. Colonell *Tyllſley*.
3. *Standiſh* Eldeſt Son of his Father of *Duxbury*.
4. Captaine *Byron*.
5. Captaine *Aſhton* of *Penket*, Eldeſt Son of his Father.

Two other Captaines.

And 200. Common Souldiers.

The old Earle dying the 25 of the ſame moneth this Earle his Sonne inſtead of mourning, tooke this good worke in hand, to deſtroy his owne Country Neighbours.

FINIS.

Since I writ this Letter I have
got your Catalogue of the
thirty three before Manchester,
by them in the Towne.

1. Lord Strange the Earle of Derbies Son in Law.
2. Colonell [illegible].
3. Sir [illegible] Eldest Son of his Father of Duckenfield.
4. Captaine Byrom.
5. Captaine Alton of Pirkey. Eldest Son of his
Two other Captaines.
And 200. Common Souldiers.
The old Earle dying [illegible]s of the lamentable
[illegible] his Sonne [illegible]d of mourning, to take
his good worke in hand, [illegible] his own Coun-
try Inhabitants.

FINIS.

6

A SPEEDY POST FROM HEAVEN, TO THE KING OF ENGLAND.

Never put out by any before.

VVritten by *A. H.*

K



Octob: 5.

London, Printed in the yeare. 1642.

BRITISH MUSEUM

A Speedy Poſt from Heaven; to the King of *England*.

THat he fight not againſt the Goſpell and the truth of Gods word, and thoſe his loving ſubiects that will defend his regall perſon, Crowne and dignite, and ſeale it with their bloud: leaſt it happen to him as to former Kings of *Iſrael* and *Iudah*. Read the twentie one of *Ezekel* the 25. 26. 27. *And thou prophane wicked Prince of Iſrael whoſe day is come when iniquity ſhall have anend.*

Thus ſaith the Lord, *remove the Diadem and take off the Crowne this ſhall not be the ſame, exalt him that is low, and abaſe him that is high.*

I will Overturne overturne it, and it ſhall be no more untill he come, whoſe right is, and it will give it him, Read *Iſaiah* the 14. and the 4. verſe that thou ſhalt take up this Proverbe againſt the King of *Babilon* And ſay *how hath the oppreſſor ceaſed the Golden Citie ceaſed, 5. the Lord hath broken the ſtaffe of the wicked, and the Scepter of the*
Acts 6. *Rullers he who ſmote the people in wrath with a continuall ſtroke, he that ruled the nations in anger 16. perſecuted and none hindereth.*

20. 21. *Thou ſhalt not be Joyned with them in buriall, becauſe thou haſt deſtroyed thy land and ſlaine thy people, the ſeede of evill doers ſhall never be removed, prepare ſlaughter for his Children, for the iniquitie of his father that he do not riſe nor poſſeſſe the land nor fill the face of the world with Cities.*

Ier. 22. *The iudgment of God upon three Kings*

Sha-

Shallum of Jeboiakim and Coniah for opreſ-ing of their ſubiects and breaking their Co-venant with God.

Ahab being left to the Councell of his wicked Wife loſt his Kingdome and his poſ-terity after him. 1. Kings 21.

You may read the iudgment of God, through wicked Counſell vpon Ahaziah. 2. Kings 1. 1.

O King add not thou to this number of wicked Councell, but add to the number of thoſe good Kings who by giveing eare to Good Councell, preſerved thier Kingdome longe to them ſelves, And theire poſterytie, as *King David* in the first place that he was ſoe far from ſeek-ing his owne Councell that he ſaid to his people, what ſeemeth to you beſt I will do, and who is beſt for the but the high Court of Parliament, there was but two in Davids Charge, but thou O *King* haſt three in thy charge that thou haſt 2. Sam 18. 4.

haſt not onely neglected to ſettle the peace of them, but thou haſt by all means laboured the utter diſtruction of them with the firſt, the hoſtile manner againſt Scotland, and the bleeding condition of *Ireland*, and as for *England* my pen ſhakes to write the Condition of it, not knowing what will befall it, haveing begun, not how to end, ſeing thy ſelfe o *King*, And thy poſterytie being compaſt about with thine enemies, and ſo little regarding thy freinds, which is the great court of Parliament, O KING returne to it and forſake theſe wicked counſell of all *Achitophels* which ſeeking nothing more, the aboliſhing of the Goſpell and the beſt of thy Subiects, whoſe names here followeth,

Lord Kimboulton Maiſter Straud, Mr. Martin, Sir Henry Ludlow, Mr. Hollis, Mr. Pim, Mr. Hamden, Sir Arthur Haſſlridg, Alderman Penington, Captaine Venn,

the

the Earle of Warwicke, the Earle of Essex, the Earle of Stamford the Lord *Brooke* Sir *Iohn Hotham, these are* like Davids worthies and mightie men that brake through the hosts of the *Philistims* to fetch water for *David* in his necessitie, but *David* would not drinke the bloud of these men, then doe not the o King drinke the bloud of these men, which seekes to preserve thy Kingdome for thee and thy posterytie, from these wicked sonnes of *Belial* that are thy counsellors against all right and law of God, of nature and of the kingdome, and this power and order hath equitie and truth in their mouth and the two edged sword in their hand to execute vengance upon the heathen and punishment upon the phople, to bind their Kings with Chenes, and and their Nobles with fetters of Iron, to execute upon them the Iudgment written.

2 Sam. 23.

Psa. 149. 6. 7. 8. 9.

In

In this Pſalme what became of all them that the holy Ghoſt ſets downe ſuch prayers and deſires to light upon them, that goe againſt any truth of God, and divers other places of Scripture, which might be aledged for this purpoſe.

63. Pſal.

FINIS



THE REMEDIE OF SCHISME.

OR, A MEAN TO SETTLE the Divisions of the Times.

Set forth in a seasonable Sermon before an Honorable Assembly [illegible].

By WILLIAM SLATER, Batchelar in Divinitie, Preacher of Gods Word in the City of *Exeter*.

PSAL. 133. 1.

Behold, how good, and joyfull a thing it is, for Brethren to dwell together in unity.

ROM. 16. 17.

Mark them which cause Divisions among you, contrary to the Doctrine which you have learned, and avoid them.

LONDON:

Printed by *T. Paine*, and *M. Symmons*, for *Tho. Slater* at the Swan in Duck-Lane. Oct. 6

1642.

Reader, thou must be entreated, for the prevention of ill censure, ere thou read, to correct these following errata, which, at the first view pervert the sense.

Pag. 17. lin. 7. for his, read this. & l. 28. ib. for *appellatur*, r. *appellatur*, p. 20. l. 20. & 22. for hereſie, r. hearſay. & l. ib. 23. for zealous, r jealous p. 22. l. 21. for clean, r. clearly. p. 23. l. 13. for, for, r. how. p. 24. l. 23. r. *Bezaleel*. & l. 37. ib. for laſt, r. leaſt. p. 25. l. 14. for *hereſcit*, r. *herebit*. p. 31. l. 21. for earneſt, r. Harveſt. p. 46. l. 22. for true love Chriſtian, r. true Chriſtian love. p. 463. l. 32. for ſew, r. ſow.

BRITISH MUSEUM

TO
THE HONORABLE,
Sir JOHN POULET
Knight, Son and Heir to the Right Honorable IOHN Lord POULET, Baron of *Hinton St. George*, one of the Knights of *Sommerset-shire* for this present *Parliament*; The Hope of his Family, and the Honor of his Countrey &c.

The Felicity of Heaven and Earth.



AS it is no mean joy to your Countrey, to see the noble spirits of ancient prowesse, and vertue, eminent in your famous progenitors, to sparkle with new vigour, in your breast; so, doth it exceedingly glad me, to view the eximious and brightned Piety of your present Parents, (the exemplarie Worthies of this Age) so likely to become Hereditary, and by a sacred [illegible] to be transsignated to posteritie: The happy Contemplation of both which, hath animated me, (the issue of your Father's Beneficiary) to shrowd this poore peece of my Theologicall Essayes, under your protection: Not, that I, with Narcissus, *can so dote upon this off-spring of my own brain, as to hold it worthy of your eyes; nor that my shallow thoughts durst swell up to so high ambition, as to think themselves competent to devise a meet present for so high an acceptation; but for that your illustrious noblenesse, as a Jewels splendor, adding grace, and lustre to some worthlesse case, can set an estimate on the lowest gift: It comes unto you, not that you (chiefly in this surfeit of the Presse) need it, but, as that Hospitable Prelate,* Alonso Carrilio, *said unto his Steward, (complaining to him of the*

ſuperfluous number of his Followers, whom yet he ſtill means to entertain) becauſe it needs you; under the wings of whoſe countenance, and favour, it ſhall be ſheltred, as Tiberius was by his * Laurell, from all the thunderbolts of envy, or malevolence; Nor am I hopeleſſe (Honored Worthy) that your amiable candor, and known ſuavitie will vail this boldneſſe, in your humble ſervant; who, (as the Queen of Sheba, heretofore, did Solomon) cannot but, (beſides my own private notices) admire you, upon * Report; as being a known Patron of Piety, a Mæcenas to Schollars, a Foe to Popery, a Champion of the Church, and a renowned Almoner to the needy: For all which, (though at ſo great a diſtance) I (however but as an Amos among the * Herdmen of Tekoa) can aſſure you, as the * Poet did the great man of his Time; that the ſeverall voices of ingenuous men accord in this one harmony; Lo, a true Patriot of his Countrey.

* Sueton. in Tiber. ca. 69.

* 1 Kin. 10. 1.

* Amos 1. 1.

* Martial. l. 1. Epigr. 3.

Vox diverſa ſonat, populorum eſt vox tamen una,
Cùm verus patriæ diceris eſſe pater.

But the eximious eminency, in this kind, is ſo conſpicuous to all; that I ſhall but darken ſo blazing a Topaze, by my rude poliſhing: All I ſhall adde more, is that of * Pliny to Trajan, Seria te carmina, honorq; æternus Annalium, non hæc brevis, & pudenda prædicatio colet: I ſhall leave this piece, to be better blazoned by the Heralds of Time, and embelliſhed in the laſting Chronicles of after Ages.

* Plin. in Panegyr.

What remains? but that I ſollicite, earneſtly, the throne of grace, for the accumulation of Heavens choiceſt favours, to be powred upon you; and with you, upon your vertuous Conſort, and whole noble family; to which, that together with ſo ancient, and Honorable blood, the right Religion may become equally hereditary, even untill Time it ſelf ſhall be no more, ſhall be the fervent prayers of him, who ſhall ſtrive to approve himſelf,

March 2. 1641.

Your much devoted ſervant,
to be commanded,

WILLIAM SCLATER.



THE REMEDIE of SCHISME.

1. Cor. 11. 18, 19.

For, first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I hear that there are divisions among you, and I partly beleeve it: for, there must be also heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.

I Need not make Apology (Right Honorable, and Beloved) for this choice of Scripture now; when as the practise of too many seems not more to be a Commentary on it, than, (which all good hearts may bleed to meditate) after a sort, indeed, an invitation to it: that expression of our Saviours, in another, being alas! too true, on this occasion: [a] *Never was this day, is this Scripture fulfilled in our eares*: as if that first [b] enmitie sowen by the old serpent, (known to the vulgar by his [cloven] foot) betwixt the two seeds, spawned in the infancie of the Creation, and nonage of the Church, ran still, as tainted blood, in the veins of succession, and strove, as *Diotrephes*, for an ambitious [c] preheminence, even in this dotage of the worlds (which is not, sure, more

The occasion of this Text, why now chosen.

a Luk. 4. 21.

b Gen. 3. 15.

c 3. Epist. Joh. 9.

more full of the [a] phancy, than of morosity, and waspish discords.

Lord! what unnatural jars are here? as once between the [*] struggling Twins of *Rebeckah*, in the same wombe of one, and the same mother, the Church: we are brethren, fraternesse, one to the other; *Fratres uterini*, Brethren from the wombe, [illegible], having one Father, in heaven, and one mother, upon earth; (for, he who hath not the [c] Church, for his Mother, on earth, hath not God, for his Father, in heaven, as S. *Cyprian* truly) and yet, (which is not more the misery, than the shame of Christians) how seems one estranged, in affection, from another, more than ever Jews, and Samaritanes; of whom we read, in the Gospel, that they might not [f] converse: as if that tender Spouse of Gods own Son, characterized to us by her one-ness, *Cant.* 6. 9. emblematized by that glorious Metropolis of Judea, Jerusalem, (a City, saith the [g] Psalmist, built as one compacted, and at unity within it self) had now, like *Tamar*, torned an issue; which, as *Pharez*, makes rude [h] breaches through her side: set in their Musique, nought but divisions, and, in those divisions, endlesse parts: *Quæ gens, quæ regio tulit, tam multa dictu gravia, perpessu aspera, quam hodie nos?* was once the just complaint of [i] *Lipsius*; this is a sore grievance, and where is he, who can enough bewail it? *Non enim pauci soluti inter nos sumus, sed partibus (ô patria, quâ salus in furore!) novis, pereas*; Our divisions being like to a Mathematicall line, *Semper divisibile, in semper divisibilia*; or indeed, like to S. *Pauls* condemned Genealogies, or, King *Davids* daily Troubles, [k] endlesse, and [l] innumerable: how much better were it for one Christian with another, to be, as is observed of *Saul*, and *Jonathan*; who were lovely, and pleasant in their lives, and in their death, they were not [m] divided? They should not be, as that Angel, at the poole of Bethesda, who moved not, save onely to [*] [trouble] the waters, but rather, as those Armies of them above in heaven, *Revel.* 19. 14. of whom S. *John* relates, that they followed the Word, upon white horses,

a *Mundus senescens patitur* [phantasias]; *Gerson.*
* Gen. 25. 22.
c *Habere jam non potest Deum patrem, qui Ecclesiam non habet matrem. S. Cyprian, de unitat. Ecclesiæ, Sect. 5.*
f Ioh. 4. 9.
g Psal. 122. 3.
h Gen. 38. 29.
i *Tust. Lipsius.*
k 1 Tim. 1. 4.
l Psal. 40. 12.
m 2 Sam. 1. 23.
* Ioh. 5. 4.

horses, clothed in fine linen, white, and cleane; they followed, not on foot, saith [n] *Barradius*, in a slow pace; but, on horse-back, in velocity, and [o] swiftnesse; in fine [linen], to denote the cleanesse of their intentions, not in the [linsy-wolsy] of double mindednesse; in [white], the emblems of Innocence; and in [cleane] linen, without the spots of any secret, or close impuritie; without the rents, and rags of Division: for, lo! as [Armies], they troop [together], as in one band: much like to that flock of sheep, whereto, the teeth of the Spouse are resembled, *Cant.* 4. 2. that came up from the washing [even thorne].

For this, its worth our notice, how our Saviour (who was, in prophecie, foretitled the [p] *Prince of Peace*) chose that time, (being the eternall Word of God) to be [q] made flesh, and to come into the world, when as the Emperour *Augustus* shut up the doores of [r] *Janus* Temple, and swayed the Monarchy of the world, in tranquillitie, and peace. The [s] ἐπιφάνεια, or, the burthen of the Angels Carroll, at his birth, was [t] as well Peace on earth, as Glory to God in the highest, *Luk.* 2. 14. The subject of his Sermons, afterwards, was rest, and peace to the weary, and troubled, *Matth.* 11. 28. when he sent abroad his disciples to preach, he would not let them carry gold, nor silver, nor brasse, nor scrip, along with them, *Matth.* 10. 9. that they might not have; as S. [u] *Ambrose* notes thereupon, matter of falling out in the way, no nor staves, verse the tenth, *ut exigant instrumenta alienis*, to deprive them (in case they should differ) of a means of revenge: it was the first branch of their Commission, into whatsoever house they entred, to say first, Peace be to this house, *Luk.* 10. 5. *Pax, quæ præsentes sociat, absentes invitat*, in the glosse of [x] *Chrysologus*; Peace, which is the glue, or soder, to conjoyn men present; Peace, which is the load-stone, to draw men absent: in short, peace was that legacie, which he (as the map of the whole world full of his other favours) bequeathed, on his last Will, and Testament, to his deare disciples, saying, *Peace I leave*

n *Barradius*, l. 3. c. 19. concord. Evang. p. 447. D.

o Equus fallaces, apud Persas, & mollari solitus: in Græcis idem non traducitur, ut Pausanias scribit, in Laconicis quadrigæ eriam eidem antiquitàs dicatæ, velut ὑπὲρ τῆς τάχυτητος τῶν. ut verba sunt Heliodori Æthiopic. 10. --vide Seldenum de Diis Syris, Syntag. 2. p. 2. 3.

p Isa. 9. 6.

q Joh. 1. 14. r κλεῖσαι πύλας Janum Plaut. --vacuum duellis Janum quirini clausit, Horat.— Vide Barradi. l. 3. c. 16. p. 465. D. & c. quæ supra.

s S. Ambr. ad cap. Mat. 10.

t Chrysolog. ser. 138. p. 586.

teave with you, my peace I give unto you, Joh 14.27. After his Resurrection, finding them together, he came, and stood in the midst amongst them, and said, *Peace be unto you*, Luk. 24. 36. This was Christs practise: And now, as S. *Bernard* excellently, *Opera pretiosissima, ut sicut sumus hæredes hominis, ita simus & imitatores sanctitatis*; It very meet, that as we all inherit the name, so should we also imitate the sanctitie of Christ, suitably unto that of *Ignatius*, [illegible] it is convenient, not onely to be [called] but (that which alone can render us truly happy) to [be] Christians: and, as it was said of *Hippocrates*, and *Sosander*, (two, who were nearly related) whose professions corresponded not unto their Names; for, the one comprizing, in his Name, an horse, the other, a man; The first of these, *Hippocrates*, was a great Physitian, and cured men; the second, *Sosander*, skilled better, to cure horses; which thing a third observing; for shame, first, said he, [illegible], either change your names, or alter your professions: For this, that good Emperour *Theodosius* finding one *Demophilus*, a Christian, and a Prelate, to be [contentious], told him plainly, *Si tu pacem fugis, ego te ab Ecclesia fugere mando*; If thou flie peace, I'le make thee flie the Church: Our Apostle here, verse the sixteenth of this Chapter, well assured him, that, if any man did seem [to be contentious]; the Church of God [had] not, surely, [ought not] to have any such Custome; and good reason, for if the thorns of strife be suffered to grow up once among them, no marvell, if all thriving, by the means of grace, be choaked in them.

And indeed, the main scope of S. *Paul*, in this text, is conceived to be, an acquainting the Corinthians of the cause of their non proficiencie by the means of grace, and what the Reason was, that, when they came together, in the Church, to partake the Supper of the Lord, yet they were still the worse, for that holy, and salutiferous banquet, *ver.* 17. Now, the [cause], and withall, the [signe] of that miscarriage, were those intestine

u S. Bern. epist. & S. Cypr. de zelo, & livore, Sect. 10. Christi [nomen] induere, & non per Christi [vitam] pergere, quid aliud, quam prævaricatio est divini nominis?

w Plutarch.

x φθονοῦντας.

y Matth. 13. 22.

The scope of the Text.

testine discords, and those ill-hearing divisions, that as some broken ulcers, or the running issues of an impostumated body, he had heard to be both raised up, and too much fomented among them, *ver.* 18. And the speciall inducement, that led the Apostle, and father of their faith unto a likelihood, that his credulitie of that report was not wholly uncharitable, was founded upon something [greater], that, of necessitie, [must] be in the Church; and that was heresie: For, if heresies, which are the [greater] evil, [must] be; then schisms, and divisions [may] be; but heresies [must] be; probable it was therefore also, that divisions might be; For, so we read, First, of all, *When ye come together in the Church, I hear that there are divisions among you, and I partly believe it; For, there must be also heresies among you, &c.* And thus, [in a Lordship, ye have seen] both the ayme, and the [drift] of my Text; which by the key of Analyticall reason, may be unlocked, and opened into a gallery, which leadeth us into two most faire, and spacious roomes; plainly, it may be resolved into these two generall parts.

The Division of the Text.

1. An Imputation, *vers.* 18. That there were divisions among them.

2. The Ground, or Reason of that Imputation, because there must be heresies.

The former of these, however I need not divide, (for that the words be, in themselves, already full of divisions) yet, for order sake, I herein observe these particulars.

1. The Crime it self imputed, There were divisions.

2. The place, where, or, the Company among whom they arose; in the Church, and, among you.

3. The mean of Information, by which S. *Paul* came to know it, *Hearsay.*

4. The Measure of his Credulity, upon that *Hearsay*, *He partly believed it.*

In the latter, we have 1. The nature of heresies, what they are.

2. The necessitie of heresies, how they must be.

3. The place of heresies, where they arise.

4. The use, or end of heresies, why they are permitted in the Church of God.

These are the parts, in which, as in a peece of Arras displayed, I have shewed you the severall pictures folded up in this Scripture: which, (were it happily in a skilfuller hand) might yet be branch't out farther, and embroydered into more varietie, as some rich piece of Tyssue, wrought full of Demonstrations: But, even thus we see, how this little [a] cloud of words, which in the first view, was but as that seen by *Elijah's* servant, to be spanned by an hand, is now wombd-out, as it were, and swollen into fuller bottels; ready, (as King *David's* plentifull [b] rain), to be distilled, and to drop down into the eares, and hearts of you (the Lords inheritance) to refresh them: In summe, ye have seen the measures of my Sermon, and you [illegible] noble patience, daigne to favour me with the one, whilest I am, by Gods blessing, in the dispatch of the other, I shall be as compendious, as the majestie of the subject shall allow, in all: may the same hand, that gave this opportunity, adde also a successe to this businesse: *For, first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I hear that there are divisions among you. &c.*

The first part.

The first of these particulars, the Crime imputed to these Corinth's charge, to wit, divisions; how gladly could I wish them all from being the too-just occasion of my present discourse; surely my desires are to have them sundred from all our practice, farther than the East is from the West; and that the two ends of a Diameter might as soon meet, or, the two poles be reconciled! But, sith the [c] shornesse of Satan's kingdom hath made him double his malice, and more exasperated the [d] children of disobedience, in whom he rules, unto dissentions; I shall be forced to say something of them; and that, *Non exclamantis studio, sed dolentis affectu*; Not, out of any desire I have, to declaim on the distempers of the Age, but rather to declare my zealous sorrow for them: though, were I as *Jerome*, who is noted

a 1 King. 18. 44.

b Psal. 68. 9.

c Rev. 12. 12.

d Eph. 2. 2.

noted to have been πολυπαθεστατος, most full of passion; or, as S. *Gregory Nazianzene* saith of *Isaiah*, that he was τῳ ογκῳ τῶν μεγαλοφωνιῶν, of a loftie, and a bigge expression; yea, if I should lay *Pelion* upon *Ossa*, and make even mountains of expressions; or, had more than *Methuselah*, even a breath like eternitie; yet were I never able, to set forth this evill, and this crying sin of the times; either full, or lowd, or long enough: however, I have resolved, with that poore widow, to cast in a little, though but a mite, or two.

c S. Gregor. Nazianz. τομ. 1. ᾳ. τομ. p. 9. Eton excus.

And, as that woman in the Gospel, first lighted up her candle, ere she sought her groat; I shall, first, say somewhat of the name; and, after that, of the thing it self; according to that rule of the Stoique *Epictetus*, ἀρξαι παθόντα δεῖ ἀπὸ τῶν ὀνομάτων.

f Mar. 12. 42.

g Luk. 15. 8.

The word, σχισμα, translated, in the Text, divisions, comes of a Greek originall, derived ἀπὸ τοῦ σχίζω, in the generall notion thereof, signifying any rent, or disunion, or separation of things combined, and united together; so, *Matth.* 9. 16. *If a new piece be put into an old garment,* κρεῖττον σχισμα γίνεται, *the schisme, or the rent is made worse.* Its from bodily things translated metaphorically, to denote disunion of minds, and affections; so * *Isidore, Nomen Schismatis à scissurâ* [*animorum*] *est*: and thus, in a latitude of sense, (according to the diversitie of the contrary unions) it hath a various acception. There is consent, there is concord, there is peace, each differ from other: Consent we call unity in judgement; Concord, unity of will, and desire; Peace, quiet, and calme conversation, a life void of janglings, and free from tumults: There may be consent, without concord; there may be concord, without consent; there may be peace, without both; that is to say, men may agree in their opinion, and yet differ in their desires; they may dissent in opinion, and desires, and yet live in peace; S. *Paul*, and *Barnabas*; S. *Austin*, and *Hierome*, were of different judgements; yet brake not out into publique, or any notorious violations of charity: This premised, schisme sometimes denotes, at large,

The nature of Schisme explained.

* *Isidor. l. 8. c. 3. Etymol.*

large, [any] disunion in judgement, or opinion, in will, or affections; but, more strictly, it signifieth separation from the [unity] of the Church of God, as [h] *Aquinas* exactly; whether the disunion be inward, in minde, or affection; or outward, in externall society, and communion: When the kingdom of Israel (which, under *David*, was one Politique, and civill Body) was, afterwards, parted, and divided, twixt *Rehoboam*, and *Jeroboam*; that was a civill Schisme, a rent made in the Politique Body; when Jews, and Samaritanes were so far divorced in affections, that they endured no commerce each with other; that was a schisme grown, upon point of Religion: Again, there is, saith [i] *Peter Martyr*, a double schisme, *Bonum, & malum*, a warrantable, and lawfull; a criminall, and a sinfull separation: of the first sort was that of faithfull *Abraham*, when he separated from the Idolatrous Astrologers of Chaldea; It is, when the unity, that is broken, is evill, then the division is good: on the other side, when the unity is good, the separation is evil: Its evil unity, that is in evill, and that criminall unity is forbidden; *Simeon*, and *Levi*, were brethren in iniquity, into their secret, let not my soul enter, saith good *Jacob*, *Gen.* 49.6. To the same purpose, King *Solomon*, *Prov.* 1.10. *My sonne, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not*; for, even briars and thorns will be twisting one in the other, and shall, at last be bound up together, in bundles, for the fire.

And indeed, saith a reverend [k] Father of our Church, amongst men there are many unjust unities: there is *Unio Leonina*, an union of compulsion, and terror; there is *unio vulpina*, a combination of craft, and cunning; there is *unio Asinina*, an union of simplicity, or silliness, when poore *Ignaro's* hang together, but onely as creatures that follow in the drove, not knowing whither they are hurried: our Romanists boast much of their Unity, or consent in Doctrine; yeeld it to be as great as may be; but whilest it is, by [l] consequent, [against] the Gospel, it is no note of the Church; even in hell is a kinde of unity. [l] Satan is not divided against himself:

True

h *Thom. 2. 2. q. 39. Art. 1. in Corp. confer Dr. Feild, li. 3. c. 5.* of the Church.

i *Pet. Martyr, loc. com. class. 4. c. 6 Sect. 3.*

k Bish *Morton, Grand impost. c. 15. 1 Sect. 4. Sect. 26.*

[a] See Bishop *Hall, Dec. 6, Epist. 4.*
[b] *Dr. Sclat. on 2 Thes. p. 101.*
[l] Matth. 12. 25

True union we call onely that, which is onely in Gods truth, and for Truth's sake; otherwise, as S. [m] *Hilary* saith, *Per speciosum pacis nomen, in unitatem perfidiæ subrepimus*; it is not union of faith, but of perfidiousnesse, nor Christian communion, but Antichristian conspiracie, and conjuration: There was an union among the body of the ten Tribes, in the worship of *Ieroboam's* idolatrous Calves; They, who under *Hezekiah*, and *Iosiah*, separated from that society, and joyned with Gods people, in the pure worship at Jerusalem; their separation was good, for the unity was evill: There was in the Church of Rome, (after that [n] Bethel, by a filthie degenerating, became a Bethaven) an unity, or conspiracie rather, in damnable errour: *Luther*, (whom yet *Albertus Crantzius* adviséd rather unto a praying [for] than to the hopes [of] a reformation) he, with his adherents, was by them condemned for schisme, because they separated; howbeit their separation was holy, for the unity was evill: Now, on the other side, criminall schisme is, when the unity is good, and in things good, commanded, or permitted; yea, though it be with evill men, warily understood: so our Saviour himself, and his disciples, communicated with Scribes, and Pharisees, in the sacrifices, and other services of the Temple, the [things] themselves were good, and commanded, though some of the [persons] evill, that used them: hence that Maxime, in Theology, *Bonitas Ministri non est de essentiâ Sacramenti, sed de conveniente:* as [o] *Raynerius* hath it; the goodnesse, in these holy things, dependeth on the vertue of Gods own immediate institution, and his divine ordination; not, on the dignitie of the person, whosoever administers them; though indeed, the pietie, and devotion of the Minister be a great [convenience] to the ordinance it self; for, we read how, (through the misprision of the vulgar) for the lewd conversation of *Eli's* sons, the verie [p] sacrifice it self began to be abhorred: and yet, the spot of an impure hand cannot discolour the beautie of Gods mysteries; no more, saith S. *Gregory* [q] *Nazianzene*, than

[m] *Hilar. Pictav. Lib. Contra Auxent.* [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

than the image of an Emperor, cut with art, in a signet, whether of gold, or iron, can, by its impression, alter the matter, or the nature of the wax, upon which it is stamped.

There is, in the Church of Rome, retained * truth, in sundrie Articles of faith, as, of the Trinitie, of the Incarnation, &c. Its no heresie, to conform in judgement, no not with those very Antichristians, where they consent in truth: In the Church of *England*, we have (God be blessed) purity of sound doctrine, and of the worship of God; what, if some unsound for their particular persons, communicate with us herein? shall we, as Brownists, * separate? we may be present with them, after that rule of S. *Prosper*, *Spe correctionis, non confusa malignitatis*; in hope to amend them, out of the love of compassion; not to allow their malignity, by an erroneous approbation: Hold faith with the worst heretique, where his faith is found; not indeed, I confesse, for the sake of the heretique, but meerly for the love of the faith: hold worship with the worst Idolater, where (for that Act) the worship is pure; Communion in word, in Sacraments, in Prayers, with worst men for, herein the unity is good, the things themselves being allowed, and commanded by God; therefore the schisme, or the separation were evill. Even *Rome*, is a * Church still, saith *Calvin*, but a beastly Harlot, intoxicated, and grown mad with fornications; we † forsake her not, in what constitutes a Church, (namely, the Word, and Sacraments) but in her filthy errors, and corruptions: Let her leave her whoring with strange flesh, and with strange gods; (for, whilest she followeth such ‡ lying vanities, she forsaketh her own mercy) and then ‖ [so far] as she keeps close to Christ, and to that first, ancient, and pure faith, (so famous, in

* See Dr. *Prideaux*, now Bishop of Worcester, Serm. stiled [*Ephesus backsliding*] p. 12. on Revel. 2. 4. † *Neq; propter* [*pallam*] *relinquam* [*aream*] *Dominj, nec propter pisces malos rumpimus retia Domini, non enim propter malos boni deserendi, sed propter bonos mali tolerandi sunt*——*sicut toleraverunt Prophetæ, &c. S. August. epist.* 48.——*confer* Bp: Hall, *Apology* against *Brownists*, Sect. 4. & 7. 23. 33. 57. ib. * *Calvin. li* 4 *ca.* 2. *Sect.* 12. ‡ See Bishop *Morton*, c. 15. *Grand impost. Sect.* 24. of the true causes of our separation from *Rome*. ‖ *Ion.* 2. 8. u [*Fugati*] *potius quam* [*fugientes*]. *Il Rome corrupti secessimus; itaque, si quando ecclesiæ, regressuri ad eam, ut ad foveam unde D. Prideaux Lectur. 5. Sect. 17. de Visibil. Eccles.*——*confer Thom. Mason. l.* 2. *c.* 2. *&c.* 13. *quæ sequi*——*Item, Petr. Martyr. loc. com. class* 4. *c.* 6. *Sect.* 48.——*& cap.* 20. *ib.*——*Item, Zanchius, ca.* 8. *de Ecclesia, inter Miscellan. & alios, &c.*

S.

S. Paul's daies, that it was mounted on the wings of honour, and carried throughout the [w] world) so farre, we shall not refuse to give her an hand of fellowship: But, till then, the danger of familiarity may be lesse, in a Post-house: For, ever since the fountains of pure waters failed upon the seven hils; [x] as the Poet hath it, this grape is grown to a dry raisin; yea, she hath pitched her Tents, *in Campo Martio*, and turned Religion into quarrell; and, much like to those *Galli ferones*, of old, whom [y] *Florus* writes of, to be so full of crueltie, *Vt plures suis adhominem interirent, & urbium stragem viderentur*; that they seem to have been born for destruction, not of Cities onely, but of soules. Wherefore, [z] come out of this whorish Babylon, my people, saith the Lord, separate, lest, by partaking in her sins, ye share also in her plagues; for, it is become the very sink of filthinesse.

To sum up this point; we must remember, that what is thus spoken, for matter of faith, and doctrine, holds also (rightly understood) for outward Rites, and Ceremonies of order, and decency, in the Church of God: In those rites, that are not simply unlawfull, there is a lawfull unity; there may be, yea, there is, oft times an unlawfull separation; so the Schoolmen define. Schisme to be, [a *illicitum*] *discessum*, an [unlawfull] departure from the unity of the Church: If any abuse a Rite, (indifferent in it self, and innocent) with a superstitious, or perhaps idolatrous intention, [that] is their foule sin: May not another use the [same] indifferent things, for decencie, and order-sake onely, if that he do not use them [so], as those sinners did? We may do [b *eadem*], but not [*ita*]; *Turpiter enim omnis pars, quæ universo non congruit suo*, as S. *Austin* expressly.

And indeed, the very proper, adequate, and full object, about which Schisme is conversant, is, critically, matter of rite, & circumstance; as both Fathers, Schoolmen, and the most judicious Moderns, (with whom I have consulted herein) joyntly account schisme, in this verse, differing from heresie, in the next, in this [c]

w Rom. 1. 8.

x Thebaris.

y Lucius Florus, l. 2. c. 13. Mist.

z Apoc. 18. 4.

a Nicolaus de Orbellis, Dist. 13. qu. 6. in quart. Sent.

b

c Dr. Sclater, p. 276. & p. 190. on 1 Thessalon. & Didymus Doctus, in Prolegom. ad S. Augustin. lib. de Haresib. p. 10. &c.

c Schismaticus est, sacrilegâ discessione; Hæreticus, sacrilego dogmate: S. August. l. 2. c. 9. cont. Gaudent. & l. 9. Evang. sec. und. Matth. —confer Pet. Martyr, quæ supra, Sect. 1. p. 789. —& Fr. Mason. l. 2. c. 10. p. 161. 163. —Item, Alex. Hales. part. 2. qu. 164. & Thom. 22. 2a. qu. 36. —& Kellison, a Papist, l. 2. c. 3. Sect. 5. Survey of the new Relig. & alios.

f Pet. Martyr. class. 4. c. 1. Sect. 1. p. 741.

The second part.

g Beza, ad locum.

h Vide Gualtherium, qui notat, ad S. Cyprian. l. de Eleemosyn. num. 12.

i 1 Pet. 2. 5.

k Eph. 2. 20.

schisme, is a breach of unity, in point of discipline, and of the external worship of God; heresie, is a corruption, through new, and false opinions, (as may appear hereafter) of the sincerity of faith, and of sound doctrine.

Lastly, for the close of this part, and the clear explication of the Text; we must distinguish Schisme, thus explained, into its kinds, or degrees: The one is inchoate onely, or partiary, the other, pertinacious and consummate: The first is, when the division staies in judgement, or affection alone, proceeding not so farre, as actuall separation; or, if so, its from private, and friendly familiarity onely; not compleate, or obstinate disunion from the publique communion in the worship of God: And of this partiary nature was the schisme, now charged by S. *Paul*, upon these Corinthians, in the Text; and this too, to be meant, not of the whole Body of the Church of Corinth, at large; (for [that] he commended highly, for conforming into his ordinances delivered unto them, *vers.* 2.) but, as *Calvin*, *Cornelius à lapide*, and other judicious affirm,) of some particular straglers, justly to be reproved.

And thus farre, of the explication of the nature of Schisme, the crime imputed by the Apostle, on this Church of Corinth: *First of all, when ye come together in the Church, I hear that there are* [*divisions*] *among you.*

The next particular is the place, where, or, if you will, the company, among whom, these schismes, and divisions arose; and that was, *In the Church*; συνερχομένων ὑμῶν ἐν ἐκκλησίᾳ, *When ye come together in the Church.*

Divines, of severall judgements, give us a severall interpetation of this passage: [g] *Beza*, and those of his way, will have it meant, *de sacro conventu*; or, as some [h] others, to the same effect, expresse it, *De Cœtu fidelium*, onely of the company of the faithfull, who make up the mysticall Church of Christ; understanding the words, not of the [place], but of the [persons], who, as those ἀδελφοὶ ἅγιοι, as S. *Peter* cals them, as [i] living stones build up the spirituall house of God; Christ himself being the chief stone of the [k] corner: And, in this sence alone,

alone, the now renowned Pastor, and Reader of Divinitie, in *Geneva*, [1] *Fredericus Spanhemius*, (he, who though onely as a looker on, and as it were aloofe, blesseth God for those eminent graces, that have, in all ages, since the Gospel, shined in the eximious Bishops of this Church) he, I say, if we may take it upon trust, will have the word [* Church], to be no otherwise meant, in the new Testament.

But yet, *Theophylact*, and all Greek Writers, generally expound it, in this Text, of the materiall place of meeting; where the Saints of Corinth usually assembled together, for receiving of the Sacrament, and other sacred, and religious performances.

If we take it, in this latter * sense; as indeed *S. Paul*, by *ver.* 20. seemeth to interpret it; saying, (with the very same relations) *When ye come together, ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτό*, which both, in *Act.* 2. 1. and here, is, by the *Genevians* themselves, rendred, in their own Bible, by [into one, and the same [* place]: and *ver.* 22. taking the abuse of the [Church], by their *ἐκκλησίαις*, or banquets, (though of love); he seemeth to contra-distinguish it unto their own * houses of habitation; which were much more meet for feasting, and entertainment, than the Church, a place consecrate, and set apart for onely sacred, and divine refreshments; whereof that of eating the Lords Supper was a principall: Thus if we interpret it, of the place, we may note; That, in the very infancy of the Christian Church, Gods people had places of solemne meeting, for the joynt-discharge of their devotions: in *Hebr.* 10. 25. this same Apostle excites them, to a frequentation of their *ἐπισυναγωγὴν*, or assembling of themselves together, by which * *Estius* himself confesseth, the Greek Expositors to have relation to some places of Gods worship, where these Saints should meet, and come together.

I know its quæred among the learned, whether, till the daies of *Constantine* the great, namely, about 300. yeers from Christ, the Christians had any Churches built up, or not? That which gave hint to the dubita-

1 *Frider. Spanhemius epist. Dedic. 3. part. Dub. Evang. Ann. 1638.* — But since the preaching of this Sermon, I perceive, that some would make him, in this true [Assertion], to speak onely a [complement] as if an irrefragable truth had stood in need of so poore an excuse.

* See the contrary, Act. 19. 39, 40.

† *Vbi prætul-dubio, Ecclesiæ nomen [locum] quo Ecclesia congregatur, significat. Durantus, de Ritibus Eccles. Catholi.* 1. 1. 2.

* See 1 Cor. 14 23.

* So verse 34. *If any man hunger, let him eat at [home.] Obs.*

m *Estius, ad Heb.* 10. 25.

tion, is that known objection of Heathens, against those Christians, who laboured to convert them, extant in *Minutius Felix*, and other Ancients; *Non habent Templa, non Altaria*; They had no temples, wherein to worship that God invisible, whom they said they served? For answer, its most certain; that, in the Apostles dayes, besides the Temple of Jerusalem; (which stood, till *Titus*, and *Vespasian*, the Romane Emperors, surprized, and wasted it, nigh 40. yeers from Christ, as [n] *Josephus* calculates); [o] open, garnished Churches they had none; because the very name of Christianity was so odious to the Emperours of those dayes, and (to use the language of that time,) that [Sect] so everie where spoken against, *Act.* 28. 22. that, in stead of being (as they should have been) [p] nursing Fathers unto the Church, they proved rather, as Wolves, to fright, yea, to dilaniate, and teare in pieces the flock of Christ: *Nero*, he began the fray, and was, as *Tertullian* stiles him, [q] *Dedicator damnationis*; unto him succeeded *Domitian*, and so the rest of those scarlet Tyrants, onwards, untill the times of *Diocletian*, and *Maximian*, who rid the Empire with more loose reignes, than some others of the former did; and with rowels of [longer] cruelty, as *Eusebius*, and *Eutropius* inform us, so spurred the sides, yea, gored the very bowels of it; that, except they meant to found a Church in blood, they could not build: But, when there were (as God was pleased to dart some gleames of ease through the blackest cloud of persecution) some *Lucida intervalla* opened; they re-attempted the same work: so [r] *Hospinian* assures us, that, under *Severus*, *Gordianus*, *Philippus*, and *Gallienus*, Churches began to be erected by Christians; (for what Ethniques called *Templa*, saith [s] *Pamelius*, Christians stiled [t]) but they were soon again demolished by *Diocletian*: At length, that famous Christian Emperour, (with whose birth our [u] Britaine was enobled), *Constantine* the great, as an Orient starre arose; and he, not onely as a Physitian, to heale the wounds of the Saints themselves; but also, as a Repairer of

n *Josephus, li. 7. belli Judaici, confer Cent. 1. li. 2. c. 14.*

o *Euseb. l. 9. c. 10. & Polydo. Virg. li. de Invent. rerum, c. 6.*

p Isa. 49. 23.

q *Tertul. ca. 5. Apologet.*

r *Rodolph. Hospin. de Origin. Templor. part. 1. c. 6.*

s *Pamelius, in Annot. ad S. Cyprian. li. de Eleemosyn.* num. 32.

t See *Hooker l. 5. p. 205. Ecclesiast. Polity*, and Sir *Hen. Spelman*

u *Baronius, An. 306. nu. 16.*

of the breaches, made by foregoing Tyrants, in the places of their solemne meeting. Not but that they had [before], *Conventicula*, as [w] *Arnobius* calls them, *in quibus summus oratur Deus*; they had [illegible], as [x] *Eusebius* stiles them; that is, places of coming together, Oratories, and houses of worship, to perform the rites of their Religion in; But, all this time, those houses were more humble, than magnificent: Beauty being the badge of opulency, and ornament, of prosperity.

All which I have observed, on this occasion, to expresse, how welcome joynt-devotion hath ever been unto the God we serve; *The effectuall, fervent prayer of a righteous man*, though but one alone, *availeth* [much], Jam. 5. 16. but, when two, or three, a [number] meet together, in one place of worship, and those also [*unanimiter*] *orantes*, as S. [y] *Cyprian* glosseth on it; praying in unity, and unanimity; variety of hearts, and voices making up one sweet consort, and harmony of devotion; lo! saith [z] *Aquinas*, *orationes ibi fiunt magis* [*exaudibiles*], *ex devotione orantium*; The prayers become [more audible] in the eares of God, yea, it bringeth down the Lord from heaven, after a sort, into the very midst among them, *Matth.* 18. 20.

We then, my brethren, enjoying more open freedome, and ampler beauty, (though indeed, as S. [a] *Bernard* truly, [b] inward holinesse becometh best the house of [that] God, *Qui non vitam polliti marmoribus, quam ornatis moribus delectatur*, who is more delighted with the ornaments of morallitie, than with the best [c] polished corners of an outward Temple) we, I say, obteining more libertie of accesse unto the places of Gods publike worship, which our primitive forefathers [d] wanted: though their zeal to build up Churches, and to endow them too, our [e] *Saints*, as *Abimaaz* did [*Christ*], for they went by the way of the [f] plain]; they being, like *Jacob*, under the old Testament, [g] [plain] men; unacquainted with the dark Meanders of cunning, and deceivablenesse; oh let not us neglect the meanes of our so great

w *Arnobius*, l. 4. *contra Gent. versus finem.*
x *Euseb.* l. 7. c. 1. & 3.
y See my Lo. Primate of *Armagh*, l. 9. *Sect.* 17. *de Communione Eccles. Christ.*
z S. *Cyprian.* l. *de Vnit. Eccle. Sect.* 11.
z *Thom.* 22. qu. 103. *Art.* 4.
a S. *Bern. de Templo, fol.* 310. *G. Deus magis* [*Philigit pur as mentes, quàm superaratos parietes.*
c Psal. 93. 5.
d Psa. 144. 12.
e See Heb. 11. 38.
f 2 Sam. 18. 23.
g Gen. 25. 27.

great salvation; nor forsake the assembling of our selves together, in the places of Gods holy worship, as the manner of some was, even in S. *Paul's* time, *Hebr.* 10. 25.

And, when we do * approach that place, where the Lord professeth, that, in a speciall manner, his [b] honour dwelleth; let us say, as old *Jacob* did of Bethel, *Quàm reverenda sunt hæc loca!* Gen. 28. 17. surely, the Lord is in this place, and how dreadfull is it? this is none other but the house of God, and this is the gate of heaven. Such holy meditations would make us all abhor that swinish heresie of the Fratricellians, who, as [i] *Turrecremata* saith, asserted, *Ecclesiam non plus valere ad orandum, quàm Porcorum stabulum*; that a Church was of no more esteeme, or value for devotion, than was a swine-stie; an opinion best suting to the devotion of the brutish Author: This meditation also would make our stomackes rise against that sacrilegious thought of all those cruell Edomites, that cry out nothing, but, [k] *Down with them, down with them, even to the ground*: yea rather, we should, with that man, [l] after Gods own heart, be [m] glad, and rejoyce, when we go up to the house of the Lord; And, when we are there, to pray for grace, to the [n] hearer of prayer, in that [o] House of prayer, to serve God acceptably, with [p] reverence, and godly fear: which service of so [great] a God, we shall then, indeed, make most acceptable; when, as [q] *Ignatius*, in much zeal exhorted his Magnesians, κάτιτε ἓν τὸ σύνεδριον, κάτιτε εἷς ἕκαστος ἡμῶν ἐν ἐκκλησίᾳ θεοῦ συντρέχετε. we do all joyntly together, as one man; or, as *Peter*, and *John* to the Sepulchre, run [r] [together] in unity, to the house of the Lord: our coming together, otherwise, into one place, may prove, like to that of these Corinthians, in the 17. verse of this Chapter, *not for the better, but for the worse*; namely, because there were [divisions] among them, even in the very [Church] it self; for so is the Text, *First of all, when ye come together in the* [*Church*]. *I hear that there are* [*divisions*] *among you.*

And thus much hath been spoken of this [Church,]

in

* See Eccles. 5. 1. 1.
b Psal. 26. 8.
i Turrecremata li. 4. c. 11. & 37. de Eccles.
k Psal. 137. 7.
l 1. Sam. 13. 14.
m Psal. 122. 1.
n Psal. 65. 2.
o Matt. 21. 13.
p Heb. 12. 28.
q *Ignatius*, Epist. ad Magnes.
r Ioh. 20. 4.

in the Text as the Greek Expositors understand it, of the [place] of Gods worship.

Now, if we interpret it, with other learned Divines, not of the place, but of the [persons] even of the company of the faithfull, called into the unity of one faith, by one Gospel, and one Spirit, and that among his company, in this Church of God, (called, and sanctified, as these Corinth's were) there were Schismes, and Divisions forbad, we have more, That particular Schismes, and Divisions may consist with a true and solid Church of God, as we read verse the first of this Chapter, that the whole body of these Corinthians were applauded, for their conformity, to the ordinances delivered unto them, by the Apostle, though some few, (it seems) had, by some private jangling, raised up a faction among them: wherefore we cannot conceive him, after his Christian charity, to single out the offenders by themselves, and not to involve the whole, promiscuously, in the deserving drag-net of a merciless censure: The more part (from which most usually ariseth the denomination) were still Saints, still his beloved sons, 1 Cor. 4. 14. still Brethren, 2 Cor. 13. 11. the Apostle had respect unto Gods testimony, Act. 18. 10. who had assured him, that he had much people, in Corinth.

Know moreover, that [illegible] Peter Martyr, [illegible] Non absque ratione [illegible] Christi Ecclesiam [illegible] dicere, ut Eli [illegible] appellarunt. Every little blemish in the face of a Church, cannot make a Church (from being Gods) no more, than a wen, manifested by an ulcer, or a sore, doth cease, for [that] alone, to be a man: in S. Gregory Nazianzen's days, there were 300 errors, in the Church: these, in any wayes, derogate from the truth, and worth of Christian Religion: The Church Cant. 6. 10. is resembled to the Moon, which, we know, when it is most radiant, and full of lustre, shines but in a borrowed light: and still, some blots remain indelible therein, even incapable of any illumination: the coolest, lieft vesture may take a rent, which rent may be repaired,

to wish on the other objection of their argument, even as some one tile, or more, misplaced, or shaken, or grown loose, in the house-top, must not forthwith occasion the taking down of the whole roofe, or congregation; *Negamus enim sine discrimine omnes Dei gratiam habere, qui ecclesiæ communioni copulati sunt, quamvis non pollutæ nec interdictæ cœtui ingeniorum vel vitiis*, saith the learned of his time, (a Prelate of immortall memory) saith divinely, why are the Apostles, and their successours, stiled Shepherds, and Watchmen, and Physitians, if there are no sheep apt to straggle, and need recalling? if no wolves, no worrie the flocke; no lambes that taketh ought, or needs an healing? Believers, my beloved Christians, the Church militant here, before, on earth, shall never be without some wrinkles of imperfection, and spots of infirmity, till she become gloriously, *Ecclesia gloriosa*, Church triumphant above in heaven, Eph. 5. 27. *Christus ipsum nubo ferentem rem coelum purgat, ut non alicujus imbecillæ speculo relucentem*, as Tertullian elegantly; in the clearest firmament some speckling cloud may be discovered; as that mole was (in the very face of Venus) or a foil ragh set to some precious Diamond.

Those *Beguardi*, and *Beguinæ*, in *Alemania*, are justly, therefore, by *Alphonsus à Castro* condemned as idle dreamers, and Heretiques, who asserted a possibility of an absolute perfection of Beatitude, attainable, even in this life; whereas, indeed, saith the devout S. *Austin*, the best Christians perfection consists alone in this to see, and to acknowledge his imperfections; or in S. *Bernards* stronger phrase, *Indefessum profectûs studium, & in virtutibus semper ad perfectionem, perfectis tamen apud suos*, An unwearied desire of, and constant endeavour after perfection is, *inter præsentia*, in Gods esteeme, perfection

---

v *Augustin. Epist.* p. 95. vol. 6.
* Joh. 10. 12.
* Cant. 3. 3.
* Matth. 9. 12.
* 1 Pet. 2. 24.
w *Tertul. l. 1. c. 5. contr. Nationes.*
x *Alphonsus à Castro, adver. Hæres. li 3. fol. 217. E.*
y *Multum in hâc vitâ ille profecit, qui, quam longè sit à perfectione justitiæ, proficiendo cognovit, S. Augus. de spir. & lit. c. 36.* — *confer. Fulgent. l. 1. ad Monimum, p. 10. &c.*
z *Vide Zeb. Pasitum, thes. Tweddy. De vanit. scientiæ, p. 60. col. 2. & c. 11. ib. p. 564. 565. thes. 7. & p. 579. 580 thes. 12. de virtut. Gentil.* — *See Art. 19. of the Church of England. Master Br. Usher, c. 2. p. 20. & c. 4. p. 68. of the Universality of the Church, & Dr. Field, l. 3. c. 16. Hart, p. 650. Dr. Morton, Grand Impost. c. 23. Sect. 2. p. 423. 424. Dr. Downam, quæst. 1. p. 5. 6. & qu. 2. p. 42. & qu. 3. p. 132. edit. Cantab. An. 1614. & Mr. Reynolds, Medit. on the Lords Supper, c. 3. p. 5. 12. 13. 14. and infinite others.* a *S. Bern. Epist. 113. fol. 362.* b *Heb. 11. 12.* c *Phil. 3. 14.*

on it self: And indeed, what saint is he, who shall not be forced, often, to acknowledge; that, when he labours most to fasten his cogitations upon God, he findeth not how unable, unstable, and to be, (even as when we look upon a starre, as bigge as the place is) through an opaque glasse, with a pulley: shaking hands, its long, ere we can bring our minds, to have ken of him, & to place our eyes upon him; and when we have come to that point, do our hands shake, and from hence the sight again: or, if we will, a fancie with the minde, in this, as it doth with one, that wanders up an instrument; that, as often the pegs slip between our fingers, whilest we are in winding of them up; so do our veriest thoughts, whilest they are in raising up themselves unto a contemplation of heaven. [d] Qui non gustat male concupiscentia [Penitentiæ] sic homini sibi ostenditur, vana ego nullam bonã esse in eum unquam fruitionem sentiet. Bp. Downham of Salisbury, Serm. 10. p. 82. quæ supra. (Dr. Reynolds against Hart, Lect. divis. 2. p. 9.

Surely, men even the holiest, whilest they live [in] the flesh, have some contagion, [of] the flesh: sin, that [e] body of death, as a Jebusite in Canaan, will not out, universally, of the coasts of our members, till the death of the body: wherefore, that same [f] sinfulness and that same [g] impassibilitie, and, as S. Hierome renders it, impercantie; were the Dotages of that damned Heretique Pelagius, long since, justly exploded from all Christian, and modest ears: as it is with the primest Saint upon earth, in respect of grace and corruption, as with an instrument strung with two strings, the one made of the gut of a lambe; the other, of a woolf, fidibus lupi mala obstrepunt agnino, saith witty Cardan; the one makes an harsh jarring against the other. Even those very Cedars of the Church received, once, a shocke; Paul, and Barnabas, Levites (whom yet the Lystrians, for the admirable graces so resplendent in them, thought to have been Gods come down from heaven, in the similitude of men) even those great Apostles jarred; and had, sometime, most sharp [contentions] among themselves, Act. 15. 39. yea, even S. Peter himself, that rock for his faith, was yet withstood, as worthy of blame, to the very face, by the same Apostle, Gal. 2. 11.

[e] Rom. 7. 24.

[f] Vide Bishop Usher, Primat. Armachan. p. 215 216. &c. de Britan. Eccles. Primord.

[g] Act. 14. 11.

Truly made king Solomon the comparison of the Church, *Cant.* 2. 2. to a lilly among [thorns]: if she be a lilly, lovely to look upon, by the eyes of her mystical Husband Christ; yet living, or seated among [thorns], she may be torn, and rent into a Schisme. It was no wonder then, that here, among the very [Saints] in Corinth, (chiefly, when as yet, but [weak] in faith, and [babes] in Christ, not totally uncarnalized, 1 *Cor.* 3. 1, 2, 3.) there arose divisions.

And yet, those private Schismes, in a [few], could not dischurch the Citie of [all] the Saints; for howbeit, there were divisions among [some] of them; yet were they still [for the main body of them] a deare, and solid Church of God. And thus much of the explication of my second particular, namely, the place, wherein, or if ye will, the company, among whom, divisions did arise, even in, and among the [Church] of Corinth. For, so is the Text: *For first of all, when ye come together, in the [Church], I hear, that there are divisions among you.*

Follows next the meanes, whereby the Apostle came to know there were divisions among them; it was by Heresie, *saith* he. I hear so: And withall, the measure of his credulitie, upon that heresie; *I partly* [partly] believe it: both of these I shall fold up, in a compendious discourse together; that I may hasten unto that, which is the life of a Sermon, the Application of this first Generall.

And first of the meane of his information. Heare (say they) [hear], *there are divisions among you.* We see here, how the Pilote, that now steered the Apostle unto this charge of Schisme, upon Corinth, was an holy prudence, and discretion; he made not his own braine the mine, wherein to coine so high a taxation; nor his heart the shop, in which to forge it; but, he took it upon [report], and, as *Ribera* well observes; lest they might surmise, he was some zealous Cauchion, to feed his credulity, onely on the ame of rumor, or of uncertain bruits, at large; he names the houshold of *Chloe*, 1 *Cor.* 1. 11. a Christian, and a godly Matron, in the Citie, not more eximious for devotion, than fidelity, as to what S. *John* advised of spirits, S. *Paul* observed in rumors, he would not beleeve every report; but try them, if by whether they were of truth, or not.

PER. in 1. Cor. 1. 12.

1 Ioh. 4. 1.

The 4. part.

And when he had done this; he would not neather be a ſponge, to ſuck in all without a difference; and ſo to ſponge with vinegar, and gall, or, to ſhoot out the arrows of bitter words, and of a virulent invective againſt them all; but lo! he carried a Chancery within his own breaſt, to mitigate the rigour of common hearſay, with equall candor, and favourable interpretations; [illegible] he did but partly believe it.

Rules to direct charity, in the point of Reports.

Which practiſe of the Apoſtle ſhould be the mould for all moderate, and wiſe Chriſtians, to caſt the order of their own credulity [for matter of criminall imputation] in; ſo as that charity be not impeached.

The Rules are theſe.

First, Charitable credulity is not grounded on ſurmiſes cauſeleſſe, nor is it ſuſpitious in vain. 1 Cor. 13. 5. Charity thinks not evill; [λογίζεται κακὸν] it deviſeth not evill, is not the firſt projector, or contriver of it: unlike to thoſe vindictive Engineers, Jer. 20. 10. who, by an ungodly imitation, [deviſed] how to batter the reputation of the holy Prophet, and to lay the honour of his good name, in duſt and ruine; Report, ſay they, & we will report it; peradventure, he will be enſnared, and we (though by our very lies) may yet prevail againſt him; yea, take our full revenge upon him. Lord, what infernall murtherers were theſe, thus to ſtab the holy Prophet abſent; allowing him no life, without the death of his good name; in the mean time, never anatomizing, or opening their own ulcerous inſides; or, aſking with thoſe ſouldiers, Luk. 3. 14. And what ſhall [we] do? but, as thoſe Grecians, in * Suidas, who were wont to write, whether with ink, or blood, on a glaſſe, and ſo to ſet it againſt the Moon, when 't was at full and brighteſt; and ſo thoſe ſpots, that were in the glaſſe, they would make to be in the Moon; In like ſort, do ſome envious perſons, (ſuch, as, in the expreſſion of † Theophraſtus, labour of a [illegible] which the learned Caſaubon renders by, Fingers-lovers, or, as † Plautus, are [illegible]) they make thoſe blurs, which paſſion, or diſcontent, (both of which, often, either utterly break the bars, or lift the doore of reaſon off the hinges) occaſion, to be in him, who is maligned; ſuch are not much unlike that Phebus Crater, an Ethiopian, who

* Suidas.

† Theophr. in Charact. in Plautus in Trinumo.

was nicknamed θυρεπίστης a doore-opener, because he used to rush into every other mans house, and there to find out faults; but like those hags, or fairies, (called *Lamiæ*) whom they saw well abroad, and can ask, as S. *Peter* once did curiously about S. *John*, 21. 21. And, what shall this man do? yet they put up their eyes in boxes, when they come at home; becoming like *Calisto*, in the Poet, who being metamorphosed, by *Juno*, into a Beare; yet could she never perceive, or see her own deformities. This makes so many prodigall, and lavish of their neighbours reputation, and to hang up their good names, as it were, in chains at their own doores: whereas, indeed, good name is, and ought to be as dear to all good men, as is the precious life it self; *Qui fidem Conscientiæ suæ negligit famam suam, crudelis est*, as S. *Austin* sweetly; He is, after a sort, an *ἀυτοφονεὺς*, as I may stile him, a *self-Timon*, a self-man-hater, who so far leaneth on the staffe of his good conscience [within] him, that he neglects the bulwark of his good name [without] him. *Propter vos, conscientia nostra sufficit nobis, propter vos, fama nostra non pulsi, sed pulsare debet in vobis*, saith the same Father; A clean conscience, indeed, may, as that costly spikenard of *Mary Magdalene*, Joh. 12. 3. fill with its fragrant odour, the whole house of the soul [within] doores; but, believe it brethren, the good name is that, which, as *Salomon* oint-ment, *Cant.* 1. 3. (far more precious, than the gold of Ophir,) is poured forth abroad, perfuming with its good savour, all such as are [without] us, or that wish us well: wherefore, our Apostle here, as he endeavoured to have συνείδησιν ἀπρόσκοπον, an inoffensive conscience toward [God] *Act.* 24. 16. so withall he studied to provide things honest, and of good report, before all [men] too, *Rom.* 12. 17. and *Phil.* 4. 8. And, for this cause, he would not [create] a scandall on the Church of Corinth; but entertained the noise of a schisme in it, on a fair report; so is the Text, *I hear* [*that there are divisions among you*].

A second Rule is this; that, as our credulity must be grounded on a creditable report, or fame; so, because relation often, takes a bush of some particular interest, or affection from him, who makes it, the probabilitie of the [thing] it self must next be heeded, to hear its [decision].

n 8. *Aust. de diverf. Ser.* 49.

o See Dr. *Sclater*, on 1 Thes. *p.* 156. 157. —& *p.* 305. —— 552. 552. *confer Mr. Edw. Reinolds*, on Psal. 110. *p.* 476. 476.

that there should be schisms, for there [must] be heresies: Its a most satanicall evil, maliciously to devise [impossible] things, that thou might'st accuse thy brother.

To this there should be added [evidence], to evince what 3.
is reported, as here, or so, a rent, their schisme [appeared] openly, through too great hiding, and contempt of weaker brethren.

Fourthly, because, in never so manifest facts, there may be, notwithstanding, some circumstances of extenuation, its a safe way, still to hope the best, and rather to chuse, to beleeve too little, than too much, for, where too much charity hath, as Saul, slain its thousands, too little hath, as David, slain ten thousands.

An exhortation, in this age of ours, (I had almost said also, in this Metropolis of ours) most opportune, and seasonable: For were it to be wished, that we could more tenderly, and with this Apostolicall prudence, handle the reputation of our brethren, chiefly of [Ministers]; for, of all the horrible offences, that boded ruine, and desolation to that City of God, Jerusalem; this one alone is mentioned, as the modell, and the sum of all, (after which, destruction was inevitable) namely, the abusing, and the killing, and the stoning of Gods Messengers, and of his Prophets, that were sent unto them, for to save their souls; when once those holy instruments of their conversion became contemptible, and an injurious by-word, behold, then, there was no more Remedie, Jerusalems house is left unto her desolate, Matth. 23. 37. compare 2 Chron. 36. 16. but yet, with greater specialty, beware we, how we slander [whole] Churches, and the governours thereof, without distinction, S. Paul's aspersion was but onely of some [few] particulars, in Corinth; the main [body] for them was still unblemished.

And yet, who sees not, how too many, (but the best is, store of those many are but like to loose teeth, in a mans head, though troublesome, yet useless) how do they, by the purulent excretions of their corrupt lungs, (found upon their libellous, abusive, and irreligious pamphlets; by which, as that Fly, in the fable, upon the axle-tree; they pronounce that they have raised up a mighty dust, and made a smother) odiously besmear the beautious face of our deare Mother, the Church of England; whose two breasts (the two blessed Testaments) she being farre more uberous, and free of her duggs, (then was that Jus primogenitorum of the Egyptians) offer themselves, so freely, to be

joyntly sucked by us all.

What one point is there of her Doctrine, or of her Discipline, which she maintaineth; I say not, what this, or that particular man [inventeth] him, what she, her self, [maintaineth]; that hath not been confirmed, and sprinkled, & even enamelled with the very precious pearls of the bloud of the blessed Saints, (our own dear Countreymen and Forefathers) as ever held up innocent hands to God?

Let not, oh let not that pearl of prejudice be [ever], in the eye of any your judgements, or mis-conceits, so that, rather for defect of will, then otherwise, yee cannot view the decency, and order, which, as sweet, & goodly flowers, hang in the Chaplet of Reformation) do so much grace, and beautifie a Church. S. *Austin*, I acknowledge, once complained, that the Church, in his daies, was burthened by too many ceremonies; and therefore he, as an Evangelicall *Aholiab*, or *Bezaleel*, thought meet, to lay [by] somewhat of that *nimium*, or * [too much] of what was offered by the sons, to adde unto the glory of the mother: and in his sense, a Statute of Mortmain might have been useful. But sure he had no sacrilegious thought, at that time, then not I presume, any true son of the Church of God, as this day, now; under a pretense to cure a Tympany of superfluities, to cut off the flesh of the Churches maintenance: we have better, I trust, learned to know, and to fear too, that heavy, prefaged doom of *Solomon*, *Prov.* 20. 25. It is a [snare] to any man, to devoure that which is holy. Condemne not then a [whole] Church, for the errors of perhaps, the superstitions of a [few]. But surely, it is too true, we are still too credulous, on the worser part; and, whether of spight, or pride, or self-love, or all of worse, (I cannot tell), by a sinfull Chymistry, we labour to extract our own, out of the ruin of anothers fame: And hence come those uncharitable, and, most times, fond censures, which make men gash deep wounds, on the [intentions], when to the outward [actions], as good, at last indifferent, their censures shall be forced to stoop, as the sheaves of *Josephs* brethren bowed to the sheaves of *Joseph*.

p S. *Aug.* Epist. 89. confer Ep. Fuch. contra Harding, p. 291. 292.

* Exod. 36. 5.

q See Bp *Andrewes*, his Concio ad Clerū, pro gradu Doctoris, inter opera sua post humā, in fronte, on Prov. 20. 25.

To

To end this point, let us all therefore consider, how precious a thing good name is; farre more, than gold, or rubies, yea, or the costliest ointment, *Eccles.* 7. 1. And if that bee true (as 'tis most certaine,) that Trespasses against [men,] receive their greatnesse, accoording to the [dammage,] brought thereby unto them; sure it is, wee sin more heinously, in abusing [fame,] than wee can doe possibly, by impeaching any other of their outward [goods;] for, after that old Rule, *non dimittitur peccatum, nisi restituatur ablatum*; its much more possible and facile, to [restore] letriments in [goods,] than blemishes brought to the [fame] of our brethren; yea or of a Church; 'Twas *Machivills* plot, *audaciter calumniare, & aliquid hæretit*; and usually, they find (chiefely in great crimes) a wound, and dishonour, such as is never done away.

Wherefore, in all ill reports, offered to our eares, let us still place, neare by our overhasty, and preproperous credulity, a temper of equall Candor and Charity: the braine is the coldest part in man, and is so placed, say Physitians, to allay the heat of the liver; which being the fountaine of bloud and spirits, would else set the whole body in a combustion; so should our moderation herein, by a Christian *temesis*, allay our temerity; and like the water, observed by Anatomists, in the pericardium, coole the ebullitions about the heart; or even as the Chrystalline Sphære (by which some thinke, meant those waters [above] the firmament, *Gen.* 1. 7.) is placed next to the *primum mobile*, to allay the extremity of heat, raised by so violent a motion, as would without a temper, fire the Universe, and in a moment, waft the World into ashes: Casting (as I said but now) our practise in this, in the mould of the Divine Apostle; who, when tidings were brought him in of some Divisions in *Corinth*, would not suffer his beliefe to over-reach; he did but [partly] credite the report; ἐπιστεύομεν τι

σχίσμα so is the Text, I [heare,] that there are Divisions among you, and I [partly] believe it.

Vse. And thus have I gone over all the foure parts of this verse, which were as the severall pictures hung about the first roome; the doore into which the key of my Division unlocked.

Now if I were as happy, as *Solomon* was, that I might have whatsoever I would aske; I would at this time begge this favour of God, *viz.* that every particular hearer, within this audience, this day, might throughly resolve in constancy, what the *Israelites* once did in a fit, upon an earnest admonition from *Joshua*, 1. 16. All that is now by God commanded them they would doe, and become as so many severall, and Divine *Proteus*, to *Metamorphose* their instructions into a zealous, and conscientious practise. And indeed, the very mention of my doubts herein, had need crave pardon of presumption from all [good] hearts; for [such,] (as Saint [r] *Austin* courted some on another occasion) I have but shewen them a mirrour of what they are, and should but waste my breath, to instruct them further unto what they should bee: All the oile, that I shall further powre into such blazing Lamps of piety, is onely, in the expression of Saint *Paul*, to his *Thessalonians*, a petition; that they would [s] encrease more and more.

[r] *S. August. Epist.* 252.

[s] 1 *Thessal.* 4 10.

But, as there is no Pomegranate, wherein some graines are not rotten; so few assemblies where some are not, either, as the Apostles auditours at *Hierusalem*, *Act.* 2. 13. Mockers; or as Saint *Pauls* hearers at *Athens*, *Act.* 17. 18. that in a Stoicall or an Epicurean flout, esteeme the Preacher but a Babler; or as those that listened to our Saviours Sermons, to [catch] him in his discourse, *Matth.* 22. 23. or at best, unfruitfull in all holy practise, so it may bee, some such may have borrowed a vizar, and like those in the Prophet, *Come hither and sit before the Lord as his people;*

[t] *Ezek.* 33. 31.

ple; whereas yet, their hearts are lodged (and it grieves mee to say it,) as those *Philistines* smitten before *David*, 1 *Chron.* 14. 11. in *Baal-perazim*, even in the valley of Divisions.

What else meaneth this [a] bleating of the sheepe, and this lowing of the oxen in our eares? such a noise of dissensions in the Church, for which as of old, for the [w] divisions of *Reuben*, there are great thoughts of heart: A theame better suting with our teares, that wee cannot reforme them, than with our lips, to declaime against them: And woe is mee for my mother, my [x] bowels, my bowels! that what those did once in *Babylon*, in a [y] strange Land; the quiet and peaceable sons of the Church, should now bee occasioned to doe at home in their owne Land; even to hang up their harpes upon the willowes, when they remember thee ô *Syon!* For, whereas wee are exhorted to keepe the [z] Vnity of the Spirit, in the bond of peace, loe! as if with those *Antichaldæ* of old, wee meant to contradict the Gospell; what is there almost but strife, and contention in the Church? witnesse the miserable distraction of the Christian World, in point of Religion; which for the sinnes of the multitude, (whose [a] fiercenesse, notwithstanding, the Lord shall at length turne unto his owne praise and glory.) Seemes to have received so wide wounds in the sides thereof, that none but Heavens Chirurgery can cure: And indeed, it often so falls out, as the Cardinall [b] *Perone* advised the Pope of *Rome* in the case of the *Venetian* stirre, about the *Iesuites*; (it was at that time, when hee told his holinesse plainely, that the State stood so; and every day more and more may it be so still!) that hee must now be forced to court the favour of Christian Princes; and not, as formerly Christian Princes sue to him; Hee told his holinesse then, that *Sæpè providentiâ divinâ permittitur, ut etiam* [*justa*] *causa vim patiantur, propter peccata*

[a] 1 *Sam.* 15. 14.

[w] *Judg.* 5. 15.

[x] *Lam.* 1. 20.

[y] *Psalm.* 137. 4.

[z] *Eph.* 4. 3.

[a] *Psalm.* 76. 10.

[b] *Cardinalis Perona. in Epist. ad Regem Francie. p.* 142. 145.

cata populorum; By Divine providence, it was often permitted, that even [just] causes suffer much for the sinnes of the people.

O Religion, Religion! It is a word derived, saith [c] *Lactantius*, *à religando*, from uniting, and knitting Christians together, in one indissoluble, and firme bond: but, behold! how distractions in religions are like to bee, (without a seasonable prevention) the destruction of Religion; and Religion it selfe to bee, in a manner, lost in the quarrels, and questions of Religion.

If, after substance, yee recount Religions, there have beene in the World, from the first foundation thereof, (saith that incomparable [d] Writer of the Ecclesiasticall Polity) but onely three.

First, *Paganisme*, which lived in the blindnesse of corrupt, and depraved nature.

Secondly, *Iudaisme* embracing the Law, which reformed Heathenish impiety, and taught salvation to bee expected through a *Messiah*, that should in due time, come into the World.

Thirdly, *Christian* beliefe, which yeildeth obedience to the Gospell of Iesus Christ, and acknowledgeth him alone, to bee the Saviour, whom God did promise.

But, if yee number Religions, after opinion; then wee have [e] five at least: 1. *Iewish*. 2. *Turkish*. 3. *Greekish*. 4. *Popish*. 5. *Reformed*. And [f] *Poland* is the *Pantheon* of all Religions; and *Amsterdam*, the patterne of all Sects; and woe is mee! that even [it] should now seeme to bee let loose on [us:] In attempting to speake of these; shall I smile with *Democritus*? or weepe with *Heraclitus*? they are so ridiculous, and absurd on the one side; so lamentable, and tragicall, on the other: But, what is to be thought, when about the perswasions in one, and the same Religion; wee shall heare the meere language of *Babel*, when

c *Lactant. l. 4. c. 28. 29. De vera Sap.* confer *Calvin. l. 1. c. 12. Sect. 1. instit. & Episc. Daven. quest. 12. quâ suprâ, ex S. August. l. 10 de Civ. c. 1.* And Bp. *King* explaining it, *lect. 16.* on *Jonah*, p 204. 205. *&c.*

d *Hooker, l. 5. p. 367.* Confer *D. Field, l. 2. c. 2.* Of the Church.

e Bp. *Hall, Dec. 3. Epist. 3.*—Conf. *Burton, Melanch. part. 3. Sect. 4. p. 313 &c.*

f *Fuller, l. 1. c. 3. p. 4. Hist.* of the Holy Warre.

when the tongues were divided and * confounded: I am of *Luther*, saith one; I of *Calvin* saith a second; I of *Arminius* a third; I of *Francis*, I of *Dauid*, I of *Iesus*; and in this iangling, none almost so far to blame it faring with Religion, saith a Reuerend Prelate, as it did with her, in *Plutarch*, who had many Suitours; when every one could not haue her to himselfe, they pulled her all in peeces, that no one might haue her; for so many in Religion, *Malunt quidam habere, quam non suam*: They had rather (some) bold bee none at all, than that their owne should not take place; yea, in such bitternesse of Spirit, are the sons of the same Church clensed, that one in a manner, is become a curse, and execration to another; blowing the Trumpet of * *Shebna*, in a mutuall defiance, and saying: *They haue no part in God, nor in the inheritance of his Son* CHRIST IESUS; *every one to his Tents, O Israel.*

Lord! my deare brethren, what can Religion, so [b] diuided against it selfe, portend, or bode, but ouerthrow, and ruine? *Twas a rule in Mathematicks, Diuide & impera*: The mind of man is like the stone *Tyrrhenus*; that stone, so long as it is whole, like to the miraculous yron of *Elisha*, [swimmeth;] but, being once broken, loe! as that head of *Moses*, *Exod.* 15. 10. it [sinketh] in the mighty waters: what so neare one, as two? and yet wee must not goe so farre from one, as two: The whole World said *Alexander*, could not hold two Sunnes at once; nor surely, (with any happinesse) one Church, [d diuided] Religions; no nor a [e medly,] or a [mixture] of them at once.

To draw to a conclusion of this part, Saint [f] *Cyprian* saith, that our Saviour, *Sacramento vestis, & signo, declaravit Ecclesiæ unitatem*; By his Coat, that was without [g] seame throughout, as by a signe declared, how his Church should bee woven together in unity;

* *Gen.* 11. 7.

[a] D *Carle*, now Bp. of *Winchester*, *Ser.* on *Hebr.* 12, 14. *Edit. An.* 1612.

* 2 *Sam.* 20. 1

[b] *Mat.* 3. 24.

[c] 2 *Kin.* 6. 6.

[d] Dr. *Plaif.*

[e] See Bp. *King. Lect.* 7. on *Jon.* p. 98. 99. &c.

[f] See Dr. *Slater*, my father, on 1. *Thess.* c. 5. v. 6. and p. 416.

[f] *S. Cyp. de unit. Eccl. Sect.* 6.

[g] *Joh.* 19. 23.

not pleased to pray that, which might bee rent into the ragges of Schisme or Divisions: Yet see and consider, if this unseamed Coat of his, bee not worse dealt withall, than the Prophet *Ahijah*, the Shilonite, did with that new garment, wherewith *Jeroboam* had clad himselfe, 1 *King.* xi. 30. Even rent into more than twelve pieces; as if the Body of the Lord CHRIST were no better, than the Body of that Harlot, which was chopt in pieces, flesh, and bones, and all, and cast into all the quarters of *Israel*, *Iudg.* xix. 29.

Least I grow tedious, all that I shall adde upon this point farther, shall bee epitomized under these two heads.

First, An Apotreptique, or Dissuasive from Divisions.

Secondly, A Protreptique, or Perswasive unto Vnity and Love.

For the first of these, though I might not [say,] but [thunder] with Saint *Paul*, who affirmeth us, that such as cause Divisions in the Church, they serve not the Lord IESVS, *Rom.* 16. 17. 18. And againe, If any man love not the Lord IESVS CHRIST, let him be *Anathema Maranatha*, 1 *Cor.* 16. 22. which shall hold likewise true of all such, as doe not testifie their love to CHRIST, by their unfeigned love of their ‖ brethren, his lively members; or as the same Apostle said of some contentious *Galatians*, I would they were even ¶ cut off that trouble us: though thus I might doe; yet as Saint *Paul* to *Philemon Verse* 9. For loves sake, I rather beseech them; and withall, I shall bee bold to tell them, that, where discords, and divisions have gone before as *Esau*, there ruines, and desolations have beene wont to take them by the heele as *Iacob*: It hath beene found true in experience, that these have laid more Countries to the dition of the *Turke*, than ever his bow, and his shield could have pur-

‖ 1 *Joh.* 3. 14.

¶ *Gal.* 5. 12.

purchased: It was prudently observed by *Curtogli* one of the *Turkish* Princes, in his oration perswasive to his Lord, to besiege *Rhodes*; *Christianos accusat discordia intestinis corroborantes*. The fall of Christendome is set forward, by civill disagreements: In the dayes of *Mahomet* the second, those pollished Countreys, (to speake in the expression of a late worthy of our Church) had gleaned out of Christendome, like scattered eares of corne, neglected by the owners, 1200. Cities, 22 Kingdomes, and two Empires; what an earnest they have reaped since that time, (or rather, wee reaped for them) who knoweth not? and yet, the Canker runneth on, fretting still, and eating further, because the whole neglects the parts, and seeketh not to preserve them: Besides, who is not moved, all his very bowels are kindled together within him, to heare what musique our *Romish* Adversaries have, too-long, made themselves merry with in our discords? How long, Lord, holy and true? how long shall those superstitious Masse-and Merit-mongers, (who dare oppugne these meritorious merits to thy dreadfull justice; and prophane the purity and simplicity of thy sacred worship, by their grosse vanities and idolatry;) How long shall they triumph in our variance? O yee, that make a most unjust separation on the other side, bee entreated, doe not thus give advantage to the Adversary, by your causeles withdrawing of your selves from the Society of your Christian brethren; who long for your uniformity, and joynt-adoration of the one onely true God; by the one, and onely Mediatour Christ Jesus; in one, and the same faith, once for all given to the Saints; in the use of one, and the same meanes of salvation; in the same Word, the same Sacraments, the same Ministery; in the unity of the same Spirit; that wee might all grow up together in the same love, and charity; and meete together at last in one, and the same

70

[1] Bp. King.

[2] *Vide Jovium*, and Dr. *Heyl.* *Geograph.* in description of *Rhodes*.

[3] *Hos.* 11. 8.

same Heaven? O cease to esteeme us (your fellow-brethren in the same CHURCH,) who are of the same household of faith with you; as * *Achab* did *Elijah*, or as did wavering *Galatians* did Saint *Paul*, because he told them the truth, your [* Enemies] nor, as *Tacitus* said of *Segestes* and *Arminius*, the one, the father, the other, the Sonne in law: This which bound them together in love, whilest they were at concord, put them farther at variance, being once quarrelled. Let a streame sever it self from the Common fountaine, that it may be counted a fountaine in itself, without dependance upon any other, what is this, but the next way, to make an end of it self, and to bee utterly drie'd up?

Yet I beseech you, consider, when Neutrals, Atheists, and Prophane Persons, and Papists, doe heare of so many discordant, and contrary opinions in religion; doth it not harden them in their infidelity, avert them from the Church, and make them to sit downe in the Chaire of Scorners? for it is certaine (as a great dispenser of learning observed) that Heresies and Schismes, are of all others the greatest scandals, yea more, than corruption of manners; for, as in the Naturall body, a wound, or solution of continuity, is worse than a corrupt humour; so in the spirituall; so that nothing doth so much scandalize men out of the Church, and drive men out of the Church as breach of Vnity: When Atheists looking on, shall view two Christians [striving] together, as *Moses* saw those *Israelites*, *Exod.* 2. 13. yea, so to bandy ignominious reproaches, each against the other, as if they were indeed but as a shepheard, and an *Egyptian*, whereof the one saith *Iosephs* was an * abomination to the other; or like to that brood of *Cadmus*, of which the Poet

Horta quum subito, per mutua vulnera fratrum

or

* 1 King. 21. 20.

* Gal. 4. 16.

* Quæ apud concordes, vincula: dissidentibus, incitamenta irarum, apud insontes, sunt. Tacitus.

* My Lord Bacon, Essay. 3.

* Gen. 46. 34.

or as it is obſerved of thoſe frighted *Midianites*, *Iudg.* 7. 21. whoſe mutuall bowels became the ſheath of each others ſword: whereas indeed, each Chriſtian profeſſing one faith in one, and the ſame CHRIST, ſhould rather bee as thoſe *Iſraelites*, going up to *Gibeah*, *Iudg.* 20. 11. knit together as one man: can a Pagan otherwiſe imagine, that the CHRIST, wee all pretend to ſerve, is other, than what in truth the Lord abhorres to bee, even the Authour of confuſion? Loe! even briars, and thornes, the very Sonnes of *Belial* themſelves, are twiſted one within the other, in a kind of indiſſoluble combination, or bond of Vnity: O my brethren, are there not ſtormes, and tempeſts enow abroad; raiſed up by *Gebal*, and *Ammon*, and *Amalek*, even by the boiſterous wild bores, and cruell adverſaries, to make the ſhip of the Church to reele, and ſtagger, and to bee driven upon the rocks; but the ſecret leakes of our owne home-variances muſt thus, inſenſibly, ſinke her, e're wee are aware? as if this ſhip were ſayling in a [w] Loumond-lake (ſuch an one, as *Maginus* tels us, there is, in a part of *Britaine*,) in which, they ſay, the danger is then moſt formidable, when the winds are ſtill: To bee ſhort, Let us conſider, how bitter a word it was, that King *David* uttered of *Ioab*, that, whereas the end of warre was peace, hee choſe to ſhed the bloud of [x] warre in peace; but, it coſt him deare at laſt: Now there is a ſaying in the *Pſalmes*, that the Saints ſhall waſh their [y] feete, in the bloud of the ungodly; to imply thus much, ſaith *Lyra*, that the righteous ſeeing the vengance, executed upon the ungodly for thoſe ungodly deeds, they have committed, ſhall dread the like offences; leaſt they tread alſo in the like ſteps of judgement: are *Halcyon* dayes eſteemed happy? and peace, felicity? then, woe is mee, to thinke, that any man, or people ſhould waxe weary of their happineſſe! is it not a very ſtrange infatuation? Its

[w] *Locus interdum, nullo flante vento, ita immenſè concitatur, ut vel audaciſſimos nautas, quò minùs ſolvant, deterreat; undè, vento ceſſante, naves medio curſu correptæ cum maximo diſcrimine jactantur*, Maginus Geograph. pag. 46.

[x] 1 Kin. 2. 5.

[y] Pſalm 58. 10.

an old word, *Quos Deus perdere vult, prius dementat.*

But, I haſten to the other part, which is a protreptique, or perſwaſive unto love, and unity: and, what ſtronger argument can there bee deviſed, to incline hereto; than this? that wee, hereby, come moſt neare unto the God, wee ſerve, and are even in this regard, partakers of the [a] Divine nature; though not, by communication of eſſence, yet by reſemblance, and analogicall aſſimilation, in that gracious quality: Hence was that Eulogy of *Ephraim* [b] *Syrus*, μακάριος ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἐκεῖνος, ὁ ἔχων [ἀγάπην] θεόν, ὅτι τὸν [θεὸν] ἐν ἑαυτῷ περιφέρει. Happy is that man, who hath poſſeſſion of love, for ſuch an one carrieth God always with him, in his heart; for, ever ſo Saint *Iohn* aſſures us, 1 *Ioh.* 4. 16. *God is love, and hee that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him*: On the other ſide, ſaith [c] *Ignatius*, ἔνθα διάσεις γάμους, καὶ ὀργὴ; καὶ μῖσος, ἐκεῖ θεὸς οὐ κατοικεῖ. Where there is diviſion of mind, and anger, and hatred, there God dwels not: Beſides, onely in love it is, that wee [reciprocate] with God, of all other affections; if wee feare God, hee feares not us; if wee obey God, hee obeyes not us; but, if wee love God, hee loveth us againe; 1 *Ioh.* 4. 19. *Love*, ſaith the Apoſtle, it's the very [d] bond of perfection; καὶ τὸ μεγαλεῖον τῆς καλλονῆς ἐν τῇ, τίς ἐρεῖ, ὡς δεῖ, λέγειν; and who is able ſufficiently to amplifie the great things of the beauty of it? ſaith S. [e] *Clement*, in his Epiſtle to theſe very *Corinth's*; Sith it alone conglutinates us to God, and makes us alſo, to wiſh well to men: Vnity therefore is as another *ordalium*, to try the chaſtity of the Queene-Mother, the Church; and like a Gileaditiſh paſſage, at which the [f] liſping *Ephraimites* are diſcovered in their *Sibboleth*; at which the faultring Chriſtian will bee detected: For this cauſe, when the boſome favorites of CHRIST reſted in expectation of the holy Ghoſt promiſed, in a mira-

a 2 *Pet.* 1, 4.

b *Ephraim. Syrus, tract.* περὶ ἀρετῶν, καὶ κακιῶν.

c *S. Ignatius, Epiſt.* 6.

d *Col.* 3. 14.

e *S. Clemens, Epiſt. ad Corinth. p.* 63, 64.

f *Iudg.* 12. 6.

miraculous manifestation, to bee sent downe upon them, from heaven; they were ὁμαθυμαδὸν, *Act.* 2. 1. all together, in one place; and the same Spirit descended before that, upon our Saviour himselfe, in the similitude of a* dove; because it is the usuall embleme of* love, and therefore, they who separate, and breake this bond of love, are styled sensuall, by Saint *Jude*, *verse* 19. and without the § Spirit.

Even the sacred Trinity it selfe is delighted with the same Vnity, or One-nesse, 1 *Joh.* 5. 7. these three are one; there is but, εἷς θεὸς, one God, and Father of all, *Ephes.* 4. 6. but, εἷς μεσίτης, one Mediatour, betweene God, and Man, the Man CHRIST IESUS, 1 *Tim.* 2. 5. There is but ἓν πνεῦμα, one Spirit, 1 *Cor.* 12. 11. All true-beleeving Christians are but ἓν σῶμα, one body, 1. *Cor.* 10. 17. yea, but as one man, in CHRIST IESUS, πάντες γὰρ ὑμεῖς [εἷς] ἐστε, *Gal.* 3. 28.

Even [h] *Plato* himselfe would have children, by no means, to be told those fictions of the Poets, touching the varience of the Heathen gods: In short, there is no stable assurance of any other grace, in soundnesse, severed from love: Faith indeed, is necessary, *Ut operis fundamentum*, as the foundation of charity, saith [i] *Granada*; but charity, as the perfect consummation of that gracious Habite: hence was that maxime, in the Schoolemen, that charity was the [forme] of all vertues Theologicall; because, however it gave them not their owne essence, in themselves, abstractively considered; yet did it forme them unto [acceptability,] before the Lord: therefore, all other excellencies though they advance nature; yet they are, saith one, subject to [excesse,] onely this of charity admitteth no excesse; for, wee see, for aspiring, to bee like God in [power,] the Angels transgressed, and fell; by aspiring, to bee like God, in [knowledge,] man transgressed, and fell; but, by aspiring to bee like God, in a similitude of goodnesse,

* *Matth* 3. 16.

* περιστερὰ παρὰ τὸ περισσῶς ἐρᾶν, *Etymol.*

§ *Tales itaque faciles sunt ad divisionem, quia Spiritum non habent, in quo uno membra Christi charam servent spiritaliter unitatem*, Fulgent. *l.* 2. *ad Monimum*, *p.* 67.

[h] *Plato, lib.* 2. *de Republ. versus finem.*

[i] *Granatens. tom.* 3. *conc. de temp. conc.* 1. *in Die Pentecost.*

goodnesse, or [love;] neither man, nor Angell, ever transgressed, or shall transgresse; for, unto that imitation wee are called: And, as its endles, in excesse; so also, in continuance, 1 *Cor.* 13. 13.

Now, according to the severall motives, or grounds of love, so also is the [degree] severall: There is φιλανθρωπία, when the motive, or ground is one, and the same nature; so saith the Philosopher; if wee see a very Varlet in distresse; wee may, wee must relieve him; and give, though not ἐλεήσω, yet ἐλεημοσύνην, if not to the man, yet to the [k] nature; thus *David*, and his followers are said to have relieved even a very *Egyptian*, when they found him languishing in the field, 1 *Sam.* 30. 11. 12. and this love of nature, (except directly to [l] reprobates) is common unto all men; and very nature moved even *Barbarians* to relieve the distressed, *Act.* 28. 2.

[k] *Quantum ad sustentationem* [*Naturæ,*] *non ad fomentum* [*culpæ,*] Tho. 2°. 2ᵉ. qu. 31. *Art.* 2. *ad* 1ᵐ.

[l] *Rom.* 1. 31.

Secondly, There is φιλοκωμία, a nearer bond; when vicinity, or cohabitation may induce to kindnesse; and thus farre a meere Civillist may goe.

Thirdly, φιλαδελφία; and this is onely the cognizance of true love Christian; when wee love the brethren, *Eo nomine*, because brethren, 1 *Joh.* 3. 14. and to this is that earnest exhortation of Saint *Peter*, 1 *Pet.* 1. 22. *See that yee love one another with a pure heart fervently.*

And I beseech you brethren, in the bowels of our Common Saviour; let this intimation bee unto your hearts, as the Arteries running along the veines, which, beating upon them; stirre up the bloud, and keepe it warme, least, otherwise, it should congeale, and become as corall, and though wee cannot fly up, yet as the *Cherubims*, let us still bee clapping of our wings, in our devotions, this way: And sith, wee well accord, (I trust) in the Principall [m] fundamentall points of faith, for substance; let this seasonable advise unto Vnity, bee, as the Angels snatching of the

[m] See Bp. *Davenant* his last booke.

the sword of *Abraham*, to stay the farther, and the future rending of our selves, into Schism's, and Divisions; in point of circumstance, and of lesser moment: Memorable is that story of Saint *Gregory Nazianzene*, as [a] *Russinus*, and others report it to us; who, in the tumults of the people cried out, *Mitte nos in mare, & nonerit tempestas*; That is, hee offered both his dignity, and himselfe too: to bee cast into the Sea, rather than the Vnity, and Peace of the Church should suffer, or bee disturbed: and indeed, what one true Sonne of the Church, who heartily longs for the [b] building up, and delights not in the pulling downe of the walles of *Hierusalem*; but would gladly bee content with *Ionah*, to bee cast into the Sea, rather than the storme should continue, unto the endangering of the whole ship?

But, oh the deadnesse of the heart, and the stoppage of the eares unto the voyce of the spirituall [c] charmes, charme hee never so wisely; for, though the bels of our Aarons have sounded shrill; and every Pulpit, almost, (that hath any clapper,) tolled men long in, into the Temple of Peace; yet, if you aske them, as *Ieberim's* messenger did *Iehu*, is it peace *Iehu*, they retort, [d] what hast thou to doe with peace? turne thee behind mee; alas! peace is not the matter, but following, and party: So true is that of [e] *Salvian*; *Pane omnis sermo Divinus habet amulos suos*; almost every Precept of God meets with its adversary; If God command liberality, Man will practise covetousnesse; if parsimony, prodigality; if hee speake of [f] peace, they make them ready for warre, as the Psalmist hath it; impetuous *Salamanders*, who live not, but in the flames of contention; not unlike unto *Tarquinius Priscus*, in the *Romane* story, who was [g] *Bello promptior quàm pace*; more apt in Warre, than peace; or, as *Tacitus* tels us of the olden *Spaniards*, that they were *Genus hominum ita infusum concordiæ, & pacis*

[a] *Russinus lib. 2. cap. 9. Hist. Eccles.* —Confer the story of Bp. *Calmer*, in Bp. *Vsher*, c. 10. of the *Irish* Relig. See Bp. *Bilson*, c. 169, 395 &c. Of the perpet. Government of the Church.

[b] *Psal.* 51. 18.

[c] *Psalm.* 58. 5.

[d] 2 *Kin.* 9. 18.

[e] *Salvian. l. 4. ad Eccles. Catbol. in fin.*

[f] *Psalm.* 120. 7.

[g] *Luc. Florus, Hist.*

illius odio, inimicitias suscipiat: or, if men, that way affected, doe happily lend us their attentions; as the Iewes to *Ieremy's* passionate expressions; or, to *Ezekiels* pleasant voyce*; or, as *Herod* gave *Iohn Baptist* the †hearing, in some things; Yet, it cannot better bee resembled, than by what is given us, in that fained relation of *Orpheus Theatre*; where all birds, and beasts assembled, and forgetting their severall appetites; some of prey, some of game, some of quarrell, stood all sociably together, listening unto the aires, and accords of the harpe; the sound whereof no sooner ceased, or was drowned by some Lowder noise; but every beast returned to his owne Nature; so is the Nature, and Condition of men, (saith that eminent ‡Patron of learning) who are full of savadge, and unreclaimable desires, of profit, of lust, of revenge; which, as long as they give care to Precepts, to lawes, to religion, sweetly touched with eloquence, and perswasion of Sermons; so long is society, and peace maintained; but, if these instruments bee silent, or that sedition, and tumult make them not audible; all things dissolve into anarchy, and confusion.

* Ezek. 33. 32.

† Mar. 6. 20.

‡ Lo. Verul. l. 1. Advancem. of learning.

To conclude this whole application: Wee wish, that our words might fall upon your hearts, as that Doctrine of *Moses*, *Deut.* 32. 2. dropped downe as the showres of raine upon the grasse, and our speech might distill, as the dew, upon the tender herbe: or else, that your hearts might bee as the [water,] on which the Spirit of the Lord is said to move, *Gen.* 1. 2. I say, on the [water,] not upon the [earth,] for hee will no muckish, earthy heart; nor moves hee on the [aire;] and heart swollen up with the wind of pride, and ambition; nor moves hee upon the [fire;] an heart enflamed with the ardor of choller, and concupiscence; but, on the face of the [waters,] hearts, that are soft, and pliable to receive the Divine

vine impreſſions of Gods grace: And, if not, as the graſſe, or the water, tender, and pliable; yet, at leaſt, as that rocke, in *Ieremy*, 23. 29. which, though hard in it ſelfe, yet was it by the hammer of Gods word broken in pieces: but, oh the deadly perverſeneſſe of unſanctified ſoules! who, not onely as the ſame *Ieremy*, 5. 3. ſaith, of the obſtinate Iewes, have made their [faces] harder, than a rock; but, as it is ſaid of *Nabal*, 1 *Sam.* 25. 37. Their very [hearts] are [dead] within them, and become as a ſtone; yea rather, as *Bonaventure*, on like conſideration, inverted that prayer, in *Ezekiel*. 36. 26. where God promiſed, to take away from them the heart of ſtone, and to give them an heart of fleſh; Nay rather, ſaith hee, take from us the heart of fleſh, and give us the heart of ſtone; for the ſtones, and the rockes were divided, and clave in ſunder, when our Saviour ſuffered, on the Croſſe; whereupon Saint *Ambroſe*, *O ſaxis duriora Iudæorum pectora!* on ſuch ſtupid, † ſeared conſciences, as theſe, I will not declaime; but convert a deſerved ſatyre into a mourneſull elegy: my heart ſhall bleed, in ſecret, and mine eyes * guſh out with teares, (thoſe ſpeechles Oratours of an unexpreſſable griefe) for that they will needs, like the waters of *Iordan*, ſundred by the mantle of *Elijah*, both bee, and remaine [*divided:] Δέεσθαι πανηγύρεως φιλοψεύστας ἰσχυρίσατο, ſaith *Sinſius*: The ſincere, and entire Preacher, hath (in the * fruſtration of his hopes from his Hearers) no [other] at leaſt, no [ſuch] refuge to fly unto, at the laſt; but, as the Pigeons to their windowes, *Iſa.* 60. 8. So hee, to his eyes; which are glazed with teares, (pearles farre more precious, than the waters, in thoſe wels of *Elim*, (to which the weeping Apoſtles are reſembled,) *Num.* 33. 9.) when they are powred out for the ſinnes of the unreclaimable people: And ſuch as theſe, who ſo much hate to bee reformed, I leave to that heavy doome of our Saviour, upon the Iewes

† 1 *Tim.* 4. 2.

* *Pſalm.* 119. 136.

* 2 *Kin.* 2. 8.

* *Iſa.* 49. 4.

Iewes on another occaſion, *Ioh.* 12. 48. *The word that I have now ſpoken, the ſame ſhall judge them, at the laſt Day.*

And ſo taking my leave of theſe, with whom a pious diſcord is to bee choſen, and preferred, before an impious concord; (for, a juſt diſſenſion is much better, than an unjuſt peace; and ſuch an unjuſt peace is all peace, which is not, either joyned with, or elſe, (as ſome read that text) κατὰ τὸν ἁγιασμὸν, [according] to [holineſſe,] *Hebr.* 12. 14.) leaving theſe; I convert my ſelfe unto you,

Quibus arte benigna,
Et meliore luto finxit præcordia Titan;

Whoſe hearts the Lord hath moulded to an yeilding, and obedient conſtitution; fitted to receive the [a] ſeale, and the marke of Gods Spirit: O bee you entreated, as our Saviour adviſed his owne deare Diſciples, Saint *Marke* 9. 50. to have ſalt in your ſelves, and peace one with another; Now ſalt, as Saint [a] *Hilary* ſaith, containeth in its ſelfe the element both of fire, and water, and is indeed ſaith hee, a third thing, compacted out of both; it is water; leaſt wee ſhould too-much bee incenſed unto heat, and paſſion; it is fire; leaſt wee ſhould grow too remiſſe, and chill, with neglect, and careleſneſſe: Firſt of all, have ſalt in your ſelves, that is, as Saint *Paul* interprets, *Col* 4. 6. Let your ſpeech bee alwayes with grace, ſeaſoned with ſalt; take heed, let it not bee rancid, or unſavoury, larded with bitter, and unchriſtian invectives; but temperd alwayes with ſobriety, meekeneſſe, and diſcretion: And then, when the ſalt is firſt ſet on upon the Table; peace, as the beſt, and choyceſt diſh, will follow after.

Hence thoſe zealous exhortations of [b] *Ignatius*, and other Saints, ἑνώσεως ἀγωνᾶτε ἐν [διμερεῖ καρδίᾳ], love one another with an [undivided] heart; and Saint

[a] *Epheſ.* 4. 30.

[a] *S. Hilar in S. Matth. can.* 4. *Sal in ſe unc continet iguis, & aquæ elementum, & eſt reverâ unum ex duobus, h. e. Quid tertiũ ex utroq; coalitur, &c. eſt aquæ, ne plus ſatis incalescamus; eſt ignis, ne tanquam frigore obtorpeamus.*

[b] *S. Ignatius, Epiſt. ad Trallian.*

S. Paul also Rom. 12. 18. *If it be possible, as much as lyeth in you, live peaceably with all men.*

Nor is this enough, but we must follow after the [things] which [c make] for peace; the word translated here, [follow after], is in the originall [διώκωμεν] which signifieth, to pursue, and follow with eagernes of Spirit, even with as fervent an intention, as we have known some fierce and violent persecutor to follow after the blood of an innocent Martyr; and who never resteth satisfied, till hee hath even surfetted on his owne revenge. Now this eagernes fixed on another object, may be imitated by us; even as the Apostle in this Text hath levelled it at the things, which make for peace.

c *Rom.* 14 19.

Now, what those principall things are, that may, indeed, be sayd to make for Peace, the same Apostle hath epitomized into a short compendium in that one Text, 1 *Cor.* 1. 10. *Now, I beseech you, Brethren, by the name of our Lord Iesus Christ,* (saith he,) *that you all speake the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that you be perfectly joyned together, in the same mind, and in the same judgement:* which words d *Peter Martyr* explicating, observeth; that, as S. *Austin* justly maketh hatred against our neighbour, to be the maine cause of Schisme; so, of that hatred, foure other principall causes may be given: 1. First of all, that men accord not among themselves, in regard of the first principles of faith; and therefore S. *Paul*, in this Text, desires the Corinthians to be joyned together in the same [mind]; that is, as I apprehend it; Whereas the mind is the principall faculty of the soule, and (as e *Estius* criticizeth it) *mens in cognitione versatur*, it is principally conversant in matter of Science, and Knowledge; therefore, the mind, and understanding should be determined *ad idem*, and the object thereof, for the prevention of divisions, should be one and the same thing, for matter of the chiefe founda-

What are the maine things that make for Peace.

d *Pet. Mart. Loc. com. class. 4. c. 6. sect. 3.*

e *Estius, ad 1 Cor. 1. 10.*

tion of faith. Secondly, because, though men may be supposed to agree, in principles, and fundamentals; yet notwithstanding, may dissent in those things, that are deduced, and concluded out of those Principles; therefore, he desires them to be joyned also together in the same judgement; which may direct them into one, and the same practise. Thirdly, though men may be conceived to agree, in the same mind, and in the same judgement; yet, because some are, often, so in love with their own formes of speaking, and so fond of their owne invented expressions, that rather, than they will bee divorced from that new phrase, to which they have wedded themselves, they will chooose to separate, and be divided from the society of the faithfull brethren; as the case stood with [f] *Nestorius* the Heretique, who, in the beginning, did not erre, touching the [U]nity of Christs person, in the diversity of the natures of God, and man: but only disliked, that *Mary* should be called the Mother of God; which form of speaking, when some demonstrated to be very fitting, and unavoydable, if Christ were God and Man in the vnity of the same person; he chose rather to deny the [U]nity of Christs person, than to acknowledge his temerity, and rashnes, in reproving that forme of speech, which the vse of the Church had anciently received, and allowed; For this consideration, it was, that the Apostle exhorteth also, that they all [speake] the same thing; which in other expression, is to hold fast [h] the forme of sound words; and called sound, or wholsome speech, *Tit.* 2. 8. Fourthly, and lastly, because, though all this be agreed on; yet if there be respect of [i] [persons] in receiving, and entertaining the gospell; one man pinning his faith upon the sleeve of *Paul*; another ravished with the [k] eloquence of *Apollo*; a third crying up *Cephas* above them all; so that the doctrine is not entertained, after [l] a *Thessalonian* integrity, as the word of [God],

[f] *Evagr. l. 1. c. 32.*

[g] Dr. *Feild, l. 3. c. 3. in fine*, of the Church.

[h] *2 Tim. 1. 13.*

[i] *Jam. 2. 1.*

[k] *Act. 18. 24.*

[l] *1 Thes. 2. 13.*

(whose

(whose * power alone it is unto salvation, in them that beleeve) but as the word of [man]; because, from this consideration, Saint *Paul* observed [contentions] to arise among them, as we read, *ver.* 11. 12. therfore, he perswades them, by the name of the Lord Iesus Christ, unto Unity, and unto Unanimity: for *ver.* 3. is Christ [divided?] that is, by a resolution of the interrogative into an affirmative, Christ himselfe is not divided: and therefore they that would be counted Christians indeed, and truly in him, must not neither be divided; either, from the whole body of the Church Catholique, at large, or else from love, and Vnity among themselves: For, if they be [divided], or doe but cause, or foment [divisions], in the Church; the same Apostle is peremptory, elsewhere, *Rom.* 16. 18. that they that are such, serve not our Lord Iesus Christ.

To end all: Thus therfor all the loyall sonnes of Peace doe; As, labour to speake, and to teach onely [truth]; so also to doe the same in [1][love]; and let me, (in this needfull time,) be bold to exhort you all, in the words of the Schisme-hating Apostle, to his *Philippians*, *cap.* 2. 1. 2. 3. If there be, therefore, any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the spirit, if any bowels of mercies, fulfill ye my joy, that ye be like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind, let nothing be done through strife, or vain-glory: Thus let us do; and it shall be well with us, at the last; and know though the sinner, and lover of discords, sin [a] an hundred times, yet God shall, one day, pay him home, in his own coine; For, when the Peace-lover, and the Peace-maker shall be surely blessed; God shall deale with them, as *Iacob*, on his death-bed, doomed *Simeon*, and *Levi*, (those Brethren in iniquity) *Gen.* 49. 7. Even divide them in *Iacob*, and scatter them in *Israel*; and those, that study groundlesse, and scandalous [Separations:] Loe! When all

* *Rom.* 1. 16.

[1] *Eph.* 4. 15.

[a] *Eccles.* 8. 12.

Mat. 5. 9.

all the Nations of the World shall bee gathered before him; (to make their shame more publique, and yet their confusion most just;) the just Lord, and the [o] righteous Iudge of the whole earth, shall, (out of the just, and equall Law of Retaliation) hee shall [separate] the peaceable from them, as a shepheard [divideth] the sheepe from the goates, *Matth.* 25 32.

[o] 2 *Tim.* 4. 8.

Motive.

If any Church, in the whole World, were ever engaged to obedience, this way; ours ought to be, above all: In all the booke of God, wee read of no one Nation [p so neare] unto the Lord, in his speciall grace, and favour, as was the *Iewish*; Loe! saith the *Psalmist*, *Psalm* 135. 4. *The Lord hath chosen Iacob unto himselfe, and Israel for his peculiar Treasure*; The *Iewish* Church, was as that [q] Figtree in the Vineyard, that is, not, as [r] *Ribera* interprets it, some eminent Prince, or Magistrate, in the Church; but the particular Church of the *Iewes*, planted by the speciall hand of God, in the Vineyard, or the Universall Church, at large; hedged in, and fenced with his owne protection; the least annoyance, or injury offered it, was as tender to him; as the apple of his owne eye, *Zech.* 2. 8. And yet, though God is said to have knowne them onely, of all the families of the earth; hee meanes, with the knowledge of speciall favour, and approbation, *Amos* 3. 2. Nevertheless, when even this choyce, and selected people, afterwards degenerated into Civill rents first, and then into such as divided them from themselves; and, worst of all, from God, by superstition, and idolatry: these sinnes of theirs made a separation betweene them, and their God, *Isa.* 52. 2.

p *Psalm.* 1, 8. 14.

q Luk. 13. 6.

r *Ribera in Ioeh*, 1. 7. 12.

Now, my beloved, wee cannot bee more deare to the Lord, than was this ancient Church of his, unto him: will they have miracles? Loe! see them,

as *Leah* said of *Gad*, *Gen.* 30. 11. comming in a troupe; The Sea shall roule into an heape, and the paths thereof bee dried up before them; *Exod.* 14. *Iordan* also shall bee driven back, and fly, *Psalm.* 114. 5. Is not this enough? then shall the Sunne stand still, in *Gibeon*, and the Moone, in the valley of *Ajalon*, *Ioſh.* 10. 13. Will not this doe? then shall the very Rockes, before them, bee dissolved into Rivers; yea, the Heavens raine-downe the food of Angels upon them, *Psalm.* 78. 5. Loe! their King cloathed them in skarlet, and put on ornaments of gold upon their apparrell, with other delights, 2 *Sam.* 1. 24 Their little hill *Hermon*, and their mountaine of *Zion* were wet with the Dew of Gods bounty; *Psalm* 133. 3. In short, thousands, and tenne thousands shall fly before them, if they have enemies: each page of their story is but the record of their miracles, and of their peculiarized favours.

Mutato nomine de te: change but the name, and wee are the men; for, wherein out-stript they us? They were delivered from the heavy bondage of *Egypt*, so that, though they had layen among the pots, yet became they as the wings of a Dove, whose wings were covered with silver, and whose feathers were like gold, *Psalm.* 68. 13. and; have not wee beene reskued from a worse thraldome? delivered from the vassaladge, and bondage of Popish superstition; farre more dangerous, than the blackest, or the most *Cimmerian* darkenesse: and woe, woe bee unto us, if wee long to returne back, to that rotten garlick again, and to that heavy yoke of bondage! They had *Manna* from Heaven; so have wee the full measures (farre surpassing their *Omers*, or their *Ephah's*) of the spirituall, and the best *Manna* in the Gospell: They had Sea-deliverances; remember the never to bee forgotten yeare of eighty eight, had not wee? They were as firebrands pluckt out of the burning.

Amos, 4. 11. Say, sift of *November*; were not wee? The Starres from Heaven fought for them, in their courses, as in the dayes of *Sisera*, *Judg.* 5. 20. and the elements conspired their victories; How often as great experiments have wee tasted? so that, we may well here resume that Distich, in the * Poet, of our Nation;

* *Claudian, in laude Theodosii.*

O nimium dilecte Deo, cui militat æther,
Et conjurati veniunt ad classica venti.

But now, woe is mee! shall I goe on? see then; they scorned their *Messiah*, and, as bloudy *Atreus*, in the † *Tragedy*, they cry out, *Ruat in me, modo in fratrem*; to ruine him, they cursed themselves; His ‡ bloud, say they, bee upon us, and upon our Children! and to this Day, some say, the bloudy issue runs on their women, about the passion: O heavy curse! O direfull imprecation! how hath their Lambe beene turned, ever since, into a Lion to them? O barren figtree, long since, hast thou had thy *succide*; § cut it downe, saith God, why cumbreth it the ground? O how are thy branches become scattered, in the day of the Lords wrath upon thee, yea, even as very dung upon the face of the earth? *Jer.* 18. 17.

† *Seneca Traged. in Thyeste.*

‡ *Matth.* 27. 25.

§ *Luk.* 13. 7.

O *England*, *England*, what is thy silver also become ‖ drosse? thy Bethel, a Bethaven? O where is all the fruit of Gods long bounty, and favours towards thee? have they bred onely * wantonnes, and not obedience in thee? Loe! I am loath to bee the Messenger of so evill tidings unto thee, and to tell thee so bitter a word; yet must I not sew pillowes under thine arme-holes, or dawbe thee with † untempered mortar, to flatter thy security; Nor have I this bitter word for thee, from the whisper of a *Malcontent's* dove; not is it the dreame of an *Enthusiasticall* braine; No, I have it from the mouth

‖ *Isa.* 1. 22.

* *Jud.* 4.

† *Ezek.* 13. 10. 18.

of

of the Lord God himselfe, who bids mee tell thee, as *Moses* did old *Israel*, *Deut.* 28. 59. *The Lord will make thy plagues wonderfull, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance, and they shall cleave unto thee: and, take heed, thou doe not become, as they,* a Loammi, *and* a Loruamah, *Hos.* 1. 6. 9. *Of not-my people, and not having obtained mercy:* Behold! the owner of the Figtree is now in visitation; hee hath often, and long, sent his Messengers, as *Iosua* did his [a] spies, before him, to see how his Figtree thrives, after so many yeares dressing; His Vine-dressers, the Ministers of the Gospell, have beene long planting with their Doctrine, pulling away the stones of opposition, tearing up the weeds of prophanesse, rooting up the furies of Heresie, and the thornes of Schisme, and faction; they have beene [b] hedging with Discipline; paring, and pruning with their seasonable reproofes: In short, what could the Lord have done more for this Church of ours, than what hee hath done for it? Loe now! because his [b] Messengers have beene sleighted, and so lightly set by of us; Hee now seemes himselfe to come riding in visitation; and surely, when the Lord comes himselfe, especially in a circuite of vengeance, or judgement; as soone may the stubble hope to stand before a consuming fire; as a secure, and an impenitent people beare up under the fierce wrath of so dreadfull, and incensed a Iudge: It is a remarkeable passage, *Exod.* 20. 19. When the Law was given, upon mount *Sinai*, with thunderings, and lightenings, and the noise of the Trumpet, and smoake, and such like ghastly representations, setting out the mightinesse, and the formidable power of that great God, who gave the Law; and considering, how fearefull that Law must needs be to the breakers of it; which was so [c] terrible in the first giving; They said unto *Moses*, speake [thou] with

[a] *Iosh.* 2. 1.

[b] *Isa.* 5. 5.

[b] 2 *Chro.* 36. 16. and, *Matth.* 23. 37.

[c] *Heb.* 12. 29.

[c] *Heb.* 12. 21.

with us, and wee will heare; but let not [God] speake with us, least wee dye: as if they had said, Let *Moses*, a man of our owne mould, speake to us; or, in Saint *Paul's* expression, *Gal.* 3. 19. Let the Law bee ordained, in the hand of a [Mediatour;] Let there bee some to intercede, and to stand in the gappe betweene the Lords power, and our impotence; for otherwise, if wee shall fall [immediately] into the hands of the Lord himselfe, (who, in his wrath, is a consuming fire) wee shall all bee wasted into ashes, and bee utterly, and, hopelessly consumed: Hence is that of the Apostle, It is a [c] fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

[a] *Ezek.* 22. 30.

[c] *Heb.* 10. 31.

For this cause likewise, yee shall notice it, throughout the Prophets; that, when they have found themselves to become a reproach, and the word of the Lord, a derision dayly; so that they had no hopes left them to prevaile for a Reformation; they would then recommend the cause into the Lords owne hand, and desire him to behold the obstinate perverseness of a Rebellious people; which done, there still ensued a speedy, and a dreadfull overthrow; see *Jeremiah*, 20. 8. and *Lam.* 3. 24. compared with, *Jer.* 5. 3. 9.

But here, mee thinkes, I heare some English *Gallio*, as hee, in the *Acts*, 18. 14. 17. interrupting Saint *Paul*; (One, I meane, that careth for none of these things,) stepping in, with, a Why doest thou thus discredit thy Nation? are wee not fenced? are wee not populous? Is not the Temple? Is not the Gospell, among us?

Answ. *Ah sinfull Nation! a people laden with iniquity!* saith the Prophet *Isa.* 1. 4. of *Israel*: *O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, how long shall these thy vaine thoughts of immunity,*

from

from sinne, (once within them) while [illegible] heart is not washed from sin? Jer. 4. 14. I could bid thee as the Prophet Jer. 7. 12. go to Shiloh a place, where the Lord once set his name, yet now it is become (for the iniquity of them that dwell therein) a very denne of dragons and aspes. Jer. 49. 3. Howl, oh Heshbon, for Ai is spoyled: and others time should be our warning, their [illegible], our [illegible], their suffering, our following: look about you, and see what a shamelesse sin all Christendome becomes. What * Golgotha's and what * Aceldema's, or fields of blood are here? and how seem our neighbours Churches long ago to have been whirled about in a continuall tumult, whilest we, as the Centre, stand still and immoveable?

* Matt. 27. 33.
* Act. 1. 19.

Such S. Gregory Nazianzen: Do the towers totter, and can the neighbouring cottage be unshaken? do the mighty Cedars suffer a shock, and can the humble Pine-tree be secure? and populous and warlike Nations depopulated and wasted, and can we look on, and be secure? But, woe is me, when Israel had a divorce, yet her treacherous sister Judah would not fear. Jer. 3. 8. O foolish people, and unwise, do we thus tempt and provoke the Lord unto anger? gain, do we not rather provoke our selves, to the confusion of our own faces? as the Prophet speaks. Jer. 7. 19. 1 Cor. 10. 22. Psal. 81. 36. Be not deceived, God is not mocked.

§ S. Greg. Nazian. in Or. 4.

g Gal. 6. 7.

Wherefore, to hover no longer, look what Eglon in Judg. 3. 20. said unto Ehud, then King of Moab, so another king I have a message from God unto thee, oh king; so have I unto thee, oh England; and it is, in the Prophet Nahum's words, unto vaunting Nineveh. Nah. 3. 8. Art thou better then populous No? (he means Alexandria in Egypt) that was scituate among the rivers, that had the waters round about it, whose rampart was the sea, (right England's Embleme) and her wall was from the sea, Ethiopia, and Egypt were her strength: Put and Lubim were her helpers; yet was she

h Junius ad Nah. 3. 8. conf. Jer. 46. 25.

i *Quod remedium quæritur, ubi [autor] remediũ non conciliatur? Hegesippus, de excid. urb. Hierusalem. p. 672. in Amcephal. in octavo.* See Ier. 3.

she carried away? She, so populous, so fenced? How is she left? and what was the cause? see it, ver. 5. Behold, I am against thee, saith the Lord of hosts; so, what a word is here? I am against thee, saith the Lord: Can there is salvation hoped for in the mountains, if the Lord, who is the God of the mountains, be against us? Oh, woe, woe be unto us, if the Lord of hosts be against us! if the Rock of our salvation, as Christ styles him, shall forsaken us; if God be for us, who can be against us? saith the great Apostle; but if God be once against us, who can be for us?

In a word, let me tell you, and let my words not be mincy but as the Lords, sink deeply into your consciences: the word is this, That sin, that black and ugly monster sin, is of more force to weaken a state, and to ruine a Kingdom, than all the strength of an Army can be, how potent, and numerous, as that of Zerah the Æthiopian, 2 Chron. 14. 9. or all the armies we read of, in the Scriptures, even an host of a thousand thousand.

But, O my soul, why hast thou made me to dwell thus long, in these black confines of Kedar, and why (with Noah's Raven) fly croaking thus, about the dead carkasses of sinful men, floating perhaps, yea drowned in sin, and hell? Surely, my beloved Christians, these are not times for us, (as in vain we flatter) to begin, or end our Sermons, with those of Ezekiel's visions, that promise peace, and deliverance, but, as the Prophets, Nahum, Habakkuk, and Malachi, do their prophecies, with the burthen of the Lord, the burthen of the Lord, that is, sound commination and threat of a judgement, heavie as those burthens under which Issachar stooped down, Gen. 49. 14.

But stay, what, are thou all for judgement? surely, that is the portion of impenitent, unmortified, and unreclaiming sinners, there is no peace, saith my God, unto the wicked: But yet, my breast shall not always be as some thunder-cloud, a hole vapours ready to be working, till they vent themselves with terrour to the world; my speech shall rather strive to be as King

k Cant. 2. 5. & Psal. 120. 5.

l Gen. 8. 7.

m *Junius, ad 2 King. 9. 25.*

David plentifull rain, to refresh the inheritance of the Lord; For what? is there no balme yet in all Gilead? no means to intercede as *Levites*, to stay the slaughter of an enraged God? no *Moses* in the gap? surely, yes: Yes, *Israel*, prepare, prepare to meet thy God, O *Israel*. Such Repentance is (q) welcome a Counter, to solace at the throne of heaven, that it ever spends in its suits: Sweet, then, thy God in righteousness (even now whilst the day of grace) and (salvation saith) and we may rest assured, as *Isaiah* speaks, Chap. 64. 5. that the Lord will be ready to meet us in mercies, if we are into this Ark, before the flood come; gather we our Manna, and prepare for our eternall Sabbath, in the even, before sunne-set. *Qui laborat in vesperam Sabbati, vesperè in Sabbato*, say the Rabbins: he we fore-warned, and so fore-armed too? (r) *Ergo, fratres, præmissa, &c.* said an ancient Prelate.

So then, let every one mend one, and declining that humour of any amongst us, the aforenamed confusion of the times, let every one of us, in particular, think, as S. *Paul* said of himself, in the act of a self-condemning confession, that of all sinners, I am the [chiefest] 1 Tim. 1. 15. and that, for [my sake] it is good *Jacob* acknowledged, *Gen.* 45. 28. the tempest of the Lords wrath is abroad in Schismes, and divisions, and in other grievous, heart-wounding distempers; and let every one of us, in this regard, as the King of Nineveh advised, in a time of danger, and distresse, *Jonas* 3. 8. cry earnestly unto the Lord: surely, if we could fasten, in every of our particular souls, this one meditation, that, I am the [chiefest] of sinners, and that for [my sake] is the Lord displeased, so highly; we could not, but exchange our mutuall invectives, into most zealous, and importune clamours, at the gate of heaven, for pardon; and, not beseech alone, but, as it were, by an army of joynt devotions, even besiege the throne of that Majestie, who will not shut out the prayers of his poore, destitute, Church, and children;

a Psal. 68. 9.
p Jer. 8. 22.
q Gen. 37. 21.
r Psal. 106. 23.
s 2 Cor. 6. 2.
t Bp. Andrews, in Præfat. ad concion. in Synod. Provin. p. 36. inter opera postuma.
v Lam. 3. 8.
x Psal. 102. 13.

children; and let us never leave wrestling with the Lord, till, with good Iacob, we impetrate, and obtain the blessing. I remember a godly Father reflecting this, that I am now closing up my Sermon with, as a company of ship-men in a ship, tied by a cable-rope unto a Rock. These ship-men are poore, penitent suppliants, within the ship of the Church, riding, and tossed in a sea of miserie; this rope is prayer, and the Rock, is Christ. Now, when they draw at the Cable, they seem to pull the Rock to the ship, and not the ship to the Rock; and yet, in truth, the case is otherwise; the Rock stands fixed, and unmoveable, and, in the issue, it is the ship, that is drawn home to the Rock, not the Rock, to the ship: so, the more we draw at the Cable, and are importunate with God in prayer, the nigher still do we approach unto the Rock of our salvation, Christ Jesus; and the more we are still drawn out of the waters of affliction, and tribulation: my deare brethren, we cannot enough believe, how melodious, and ravishing in the eares of the Lord our joynt devotions, and fervent prayers will be: what Solomon, therefore, adviseth, at large, let us be advised to do, in this particular, even do it with all our strength; and doubt not of a gracious successe.

And, as we would pray for peace, and salvation to our own soules; so let us be importunate with others also, to follow after the things that make for peace: and, if it so fall out, that, when thou art perswading for peace, they are still making ready for warre; and all thy endeavours this way, are but like unto the frontDiademe, which, though it have very many excellent soveraignties in it, yet it loseth them all, if it be put in a [dead] mans mouth; so thy godly perswasion unto unity, and peace, (which is the onely pearl, and jewell of a Christian) though it may have a soveraigne vertue in it, among the sons of quietnesse, and peace; yet it loseth all, if it be put into an eare, or an heart, that is dead in sin; or, if it be applied to a man, who affects rather, to be some body in the trouble, than no body;

a Gen. 32. 26.

b 2 Zachim. lib. c. 4. de Natura Dei.

c 1 Cor. 10. 4.

d Deut. 32. 15.

e Eccles. 9. 10.

f Matth. 7. 7, 8.

g Psal. 120. 7.

in the peace of the Church: notwithstanding, do thou thy endeavour; and rest assured, though the issue from them fail of thy zealous expectation; yet, what King *David* said of the prayers, that he made of his enemies, shall hold true of thy endeavours; The comfort, and reward of them shall [f] return into thine own bosome: Neither indeed, can the raigning, and continuance of Schismes, and Divisions, in the Church, (chiefly, in this dotage of the world) much stagger, or afflict thee; for, what *Peter* said of the fiery triall, holds true here, This is no [g] [strange] thing, that hath hapned among us: lo! it hath ever been so, (throughout all ages of the Church) since the original, and first [h] breach made betwixt the two seeds, in Paradise: yea, the probabilitie of the thing it self, is grounded, saith our Apostle here, on the [necessity] of a [greater] evil, that [must] be, in the Church; and that is heresie; schismes, and divisions [may] be, for, heresies [must] be; for, so is the Text, *For, first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I hear that there are divisions among you, and I partly believe it; for there* [*must*] *be also heresies among you, &c.*

I conclude all, with that zealous exhortation of S. *Paul* unto his Corinthians, among whom he had detected variety of Schismes, and Divisions; and unto whom he had shewed the danger, and ill consequence of them; and, willing to raise up their hearts unto a desire of the remedie thereof, which was the contrary amitie, and unity, saith; Finally, brethred, farewell: be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one minde, live in [i] peace, and the God of love, and peace shall be with you: This God grant unto us, and unto his holy Catholique Church, for his dear Son sake, Jesus Christ the righteous; To whom with the Father, and the blessed Spirit be all honour, praise, and glory, from hence forth, and for ever. *Amen.*

[f] Psal. 35. 13.

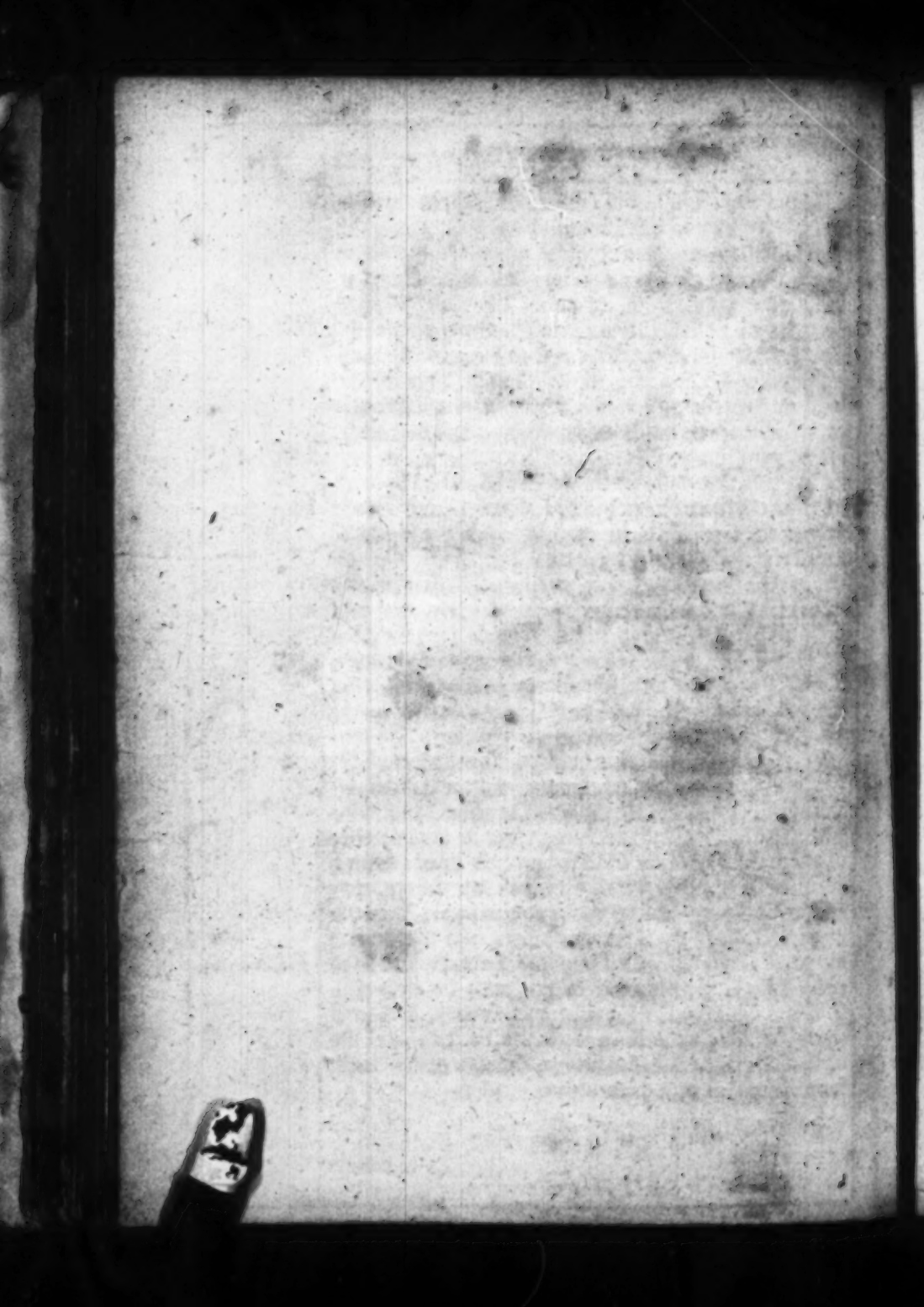
[g] 1 Pet. 4. 12.

[h] Gen. 3. 15.

[i] 2 Cor. 13. 11.

Αἶξα μόνον τοῦτο ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ.

FINIS.



8

Good Newes From IRELAND.

OR

A True Relation of a great Victory obtained by the Protestants in the Province of *Munster* in *Ireland*.

Where 400. Horse and 1600. Foot under the Command of the Lord *Inchequene*, and the Earle of *Corkes* Sonne, overthew the Army of the Rebels consisting of 10000. Horse and Foot.

Also the number of the Rebels that were slaine in the Battell, with the surprising of three Pieces of their Ordnance, one of which was called the *Elizabeth* of *Limericke*, with 7. Barrels of Powder and Match.

Likewise a Confirmation of the Earle of *Corkes* Sonne, slaine in this service.

Sent in a Letter from Lieutenant Colonell *Broket*, Governour of *Kinsale*, to his Brother Mr. *Samuell Broket* Grocer on *Snow*-hill *London*, Septemb. 29. 1642.

With an Order of both Houses of Parliament, for raising 1000. *Dragoneers in* LONDON.

Hen. Elsinge, Cler. Parl. D. C.

London, Printed for *I. Thomas*, Octob. 6. 1642.

Good News from

IRELAND.

OR

A True Relation of a great Victory obtained by the Protestants in the Province or County in Ireland,

Where 4000 Horse and 1600 Foot under the Command of the Earl of Tyrone, consisting of the Army of the Rebels consisting of 15000 Horse and Foot.

BRITISH MUSEUM

Good Newes from IRELAND.

October 3. 1642.

BROTHER,

THis is to acquaint you, how we drew all our forces we had in *Munſter* together, to give the Rebels Battaile, who were comming to lay their ſeige before *Corke*; And being very ſtrong, having with them the beſt Demicannon that was in the Caſtle of *Limericke*, and 2. Sakers, the one of braſſe, and the other of Iron, with the which they have taken the Caſtle of *Aſhketon*, my Lady *Dudleys* Caſtle, and all the Caſtles within 20. myles of us, in the province of *Munſter*, and the Lord *Muskery*, L. *Roch*, Generall *Barry*, *Purcell*, and all the reſt of the Rebels Cavalrye, did ingage all the honour and credit, and the Major of *Limericke* alſo, to the value of many Thouſand pounds, for the ſafe returne of the aforeſaid *Guns* into *Limericke* againe. Upon Wedneſday the laſt of *Auguſt*, Orders came from my L. *Inchequeen* to *Kinſale*, that 100. men might be choſen preſently to march, with the which 100. men, I was

by

by my Lord *Inchequeene* commanded to get withall, vpon Thurſday the 1. day of September I marched from Kinſale by 3. a clock in the morning, and came to *Corke* by 12 of the clock and was commanded to march through the Towne to a place where my Lord *Inchequeen* himſelfe muſtered his forces, to know how ſtrong we were for preſent ſervice, after that we preſently marched away and came to *Mallow* that night, being 12 miles from *Corke*, and vpon Friday the ſecond of September, we marched to *Butſoard*, being 4 miles further where we met together with all the forces we could make in the whole Province of *Munſter*, viz. from *Kinſale*, *Bandonbridge*, *Corke*, and *Youghall*, and we were found ſtrong about ſome 400. horſe and 1600. foote, and our horſe was very ill horſt and armed, yet nevertheleſſe, my Lord, and all of vs did put on our reſolution to fight, the Rebells Campe was then within foure miles of vs, and did lye in ſuch a place, where they had a bogge about them, they being of horſe and foote about ten thouſand ſtrong, all very well armed, they having 3 times as many Musketiers as we had, alſo better horſe, and better armed then our horſe by farre.

The

The enemy likewise had 100. Muskets that they wanted men to carry them, but they made an account to have gotten all *Munster* before Michaelmas day. This day above mentioned, we saw some 600. of the Rebels Horse, on Satterday being the 3. of September, about 4. of the clock in the morning, we marched towards them to *Prisicarel*, where they were strongly encamped, having made a strong fort, with the great Peece called the *Elizabeth* of *Limericke* mounted thereupon, and hard by that they had a Battery, where the 2. other Guns were mounted, and a great high ditch round about this fort, and the Battery, and within a Musket shot from thence, they had a Breastworke, and within halfe a Musket shot from the fort, they had a strong Castle which they tooke but the night before, and between these, a fortification of great strength, there the Rebels stood in Bataile array.

And this Satterday Morning about Eight of the Clocke, our Feild peeces played upon them; And their peeces played upon us.

And thus continuing till about nine of the Clocke

clocke in the morning, our horſe and 500 Muſketiers did charge the body of the Rebels, and I was (my ſelfe) commanded to charge upon a forlorne hope onely with a 100. Muſketiers, our Horſe was once beaten to a retreat, in which time, we all thought to have had the worſt of the day, but we ſtood to it with 500. Muſketiers, and having by the Almighty providence of God, the Sun and the Winde on our backs, blinded them ſo with the ſmoake of our guns, that thereby both their horſe and foote confuſedly made their retreat, upon the which, all our horſe charged moſt bravely the ſecond time upon them, and likewiſe ſo did theſe 500. Muſketiers, and did put them all to flight, into, and over the bogs; and moreover they did forſake their Breſtworke, Battery, Fort, and Caſtle, where we tooke the great gun called the *Baſſe* of *Limericke*, being of 6180 weight, and the other 2. ſakers, with ſome 5. barrells of powder, and 2. barrells of match, all the hands of our ſide that came to fight that day was onely 500. muſketiers at the moſt, and hardly 400. horſe, we hold it, (for which we give God many thanks) the greateſt overthrow that ever the Rebels hath had, they being ſo

mighty

mighty and ſtrong, and we ſo weake; we ſlew above 1200. of them, being all moſt of their cheifeſt Commanders, and we loſt but 12. at the moſt, onely the greateſt loſſe that we had, the which did encourage the Rebels very much before we came to the Baraile, that the Governor of *Bandonbridge*, was kild out of an Ambuſh, and ſtript naked, he was the Lord of *Kinealmekie*, the Earle of *Corkes* Sonne.

Wee took Colonell *Butler* priſoner, *Purſell* is ſhott, and they ſay my Lord *Muſkery*, I ſaw Generall *Barry* run hard for it upon his white horſe, and the Major of *Limericke* with him, all the forces that wee left behinde us in all our Garriſons in Munſter, was not above 2 or 300 men, able to paſſe vpon duty, therefore all the province of Munſter ſtood vpon us then, & now we ſtand in a great deale of extremitye, for want of more forces, for about 5000. horſe and foote would cleare this province and preſerve it, our company here have recruted, and the ſouldiers and Officers in generall do ſtand in great neede of their pay, and wee ſtand in great doubt, that wee ſhall be in great want of Victualls before winter is halfe done, becauſe we are not ſtrong enough

to

to fetch it in, this was the great worke of the Lord who did direct and fight for us, that his power and providence in his owne cause might be the more cleerly discerned by us, for they had all taken the Sacrament to fight it out to the last man, also it was reported the Fryers had given many of them charmes to keepe them shotfree, so in every thing it is plain, the Lord was our deliverer, and we shall I hope in few dayes be able to gather some relieſe for our Towne, ſo I Reſt.

Your Loving Brother,
William Broket,
Governour of Kinſale.

Kinſale, Sept. 19. 1642.

THis Letter Was brought over by Maſter Edmond Broket *September* 29. 1642. *VVho is Enſigne to his Brother Lieutenant Colonell* Broket *Governour of* Kinſale, *and Brother to* Mr. Samuell Broket *Grocer at the* Mayden-head *upon* Show-Hill, *who can atteſt the truth of this Relation, and deſires it may be Printed and publiſhed, That it might communicate to the High Court of Parliament.*

DIE LUNÆ OCTOBER, 4. 1642.

IT is this day Ordered by the Lords and Commons aſſembled in Parliament, That ſuch perſons as will advance Horſes and Armes towards the furniſhing of the Thouſand Dragoneirs, mentioned in an Order of both Houſes of Parliament, made the 29. of September laſt, ſhall have the Publique Faith for their ſecurity for the prices thereof, with ſuch other Recompence as the Subſcribers of the 16000. pounds mentioned in the ſame Order are to have, and that Maſter Maximilian Bard and others already appointed; for buying Horſes for the ſaid Thouſand Dragoneirs, or any three of them ſhall be perſons appointed for the valewing and priſing of the ſaid Horſes and Armes ſo to be advanced. And the Horſes are to be brought to Moore-fields, there to be viewed and prized.

Hen: Eliſtge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

FINIS.

K. PP. London. Special Passages.

Number 12.

A CONTINVATION

Of certain Speciall and Remarkable passages from both Houses of PARLIAMENT, and divers other parts of the *Kingdome*, from *Munday* the 3. of *October* till the fifth of *October*. 1642.

Containing these particulars viz.

1. *A True and Exact Relation of a Letter sent from his Excellency the Earle of Essex to the Parliament, with another Letter from the Earle of Dorset, and the Votes and Resolutions of both Houses of Parliament concerning the said Letters.*
2. *A true relation under the Lord of Essex own hand what number of men were killed on both sides at Worcester.*
3. *Of the executing of one Captaine Busbey in the Army, for revolting from his Excellency.*
4. *A true relation of a great overthrow given to the Lord Strange before Manchester, and the certaine number of them that were killed on both sides.*
5. *Of Letters from the Earle of Warwick to the Parliament, and his taking of Captaine Stradling and Captaine Kettleby.*
6. *A certaine relation of newes from Lincolnshire.*
7. *The like relation of newes from the Earle of Pembrooke.*
8. *A true relation of the Treaty agreed upon in Yorkshire, and the votes and resolutions of the houses concerning the same.*
9. *A certaine relation of the Marquesse of Hartford getting into Cardiffe Castle in South-wales with his Cavaliers.*
10. *Of 50 Commanders lately come to the Parliament from Scotland.*
11. *A true relation of eight Lords sent over into England from the Kingdome of Scotland with a Petition to his Majesty.*
12. *Certaine propositions to the Parliament from the Kingdome of Scotland to aide and assist them in case his Majesty shall not accept of a Petition.*
13. *A true relation of Letters sent to the Parliament from the Earle of Essex on wednesday last, by which is informed the present Condition of his Majesty and the Parliaments forces.*
14. *An Order of Parliament for the speedy sending of Sir Robert Harlow and Serjeant Wilde to Worcester.*
15. *A certaine relation of Captaine Langrez escape out of the Gatehouse on Tuesday night last.*

A CONTINUATION

Of certain Speciall and Remarkable passages

from both Houses of PARLIAMENT, and divers other parts of the Kingdome, from Munday the 3. of October

vnto the 8th of October. 1642.

Containing these particulars viz.

1. A true and Exact Relation of a Letter sent from his Excellency the Earle of Essex to the Parliament, with an order for Entry from the Earle of Peterborough and the Petitions and Resolutions of both Houses of Parliament concerning the Letters.

2. A true relation made the Lord of [illegible] how hard what numbers of men were killed on both parts at Worcester.

3. Of the returning of two Captains [illegible] to the King, for resolving from his Excellency.

4. A true relation of a great overthrow given to the Lord Strange before Manchester, and the certain number of them that were killed in both Townes.

5. Of Letters from the Earle of Warwick to the Parliament, and his raising of Captains Spalding and Captaine Kettleby.

6. A certain relation of news from Lancashire.

7. The like relation of news from the Earle of Pembroke.

8. A true relation of the Treaty agreed upon in Yorkeshire, and the votes and resolutions of the Lords concerning the same.

9. A true relation of the Marquesse of Hartford disputing into Cardiffe Castle in South-wales with his Captaines.

10. Of 60 Commanders lately come to the Parliament from Scotland.

11. A true relation of eight Earls that were sent from England to the King.

12. Of Scotland with a Petition to his Majesty.

13. Certain propositions to the Parliament from the Kingdome of Scotland to send aship there in safety his Majesty shall accept of a Petition.

14. A true relation of Letters sent to the Parliament from the Earle of Essex as touching the 1500. by which is referred the present Condition of his Majesty and the Parliaments forces.

15. The Order of Parliament for the speedy sending of Sir Robert Harlow and Captaine Pryde to Plymouth.

16. A certain relation of Captain Langley Clerke unto one of the Gentlemen Ushers [illegible] his highnesse.

A CONTINVATION OF Certaine Speciall and Remarkable passages from both Houses of Parliament and divers other parts of this Kingdome

From Saterday the first of *October*, till Thursday the fift of *October* 1643.

Munday the 3. of October.

THere came Letters to the Houses from the Earle of *Essex* from *Worcester*, wherein was inclosed another letter which he received from the Earle of *Dorset* with his Majesty at *Shrewsbury*, the substance of both was to this effect. The Earle of *Essex* having received a petition from the Parliament to present to his Majesty, and not knowing which waies to have the same presented by reason his Majesty kept his Court in no certaine place, but from place to place: Sent a letter to the Earle of *Dorset*, that he would advise his Excellency which waies he might present his Petition to his Majestie, and to move his Majesty concerning it, that he would be pleased to accept it, and to grant free access and safe conduct to such as should come along with the said Petition, whereby it might be presented in an humble and peaceable manner: To this letter the Earle of *Dorset* returned his Excellency an Answer that he had acquainted his Majesty, concer

concerning the busineſſe, and that his Majeſty made reply that he would receive any Petition that should bee preſented to him from his Parliament, and give true accompt to thoſe which ſhould bring the ſame, but he would not receive any Petition out of the hands of any Traytor; which busineſſe the Earle of *Eſſex* referred to the Parliament that they would advise him what he ſhould further doe concerning the ſaid Petition.

Whereupon after ſome debate of the busineſſe it was agreed upon the vote in the houſe of Commons, that for his Majeſty to make ſuch a diſtinction of his Parliament, that hee would receive no Petition ſhould be preſented to him from them by the hands of ſuch as he accompts to bee Traitors, he doth in that bridge them of the greateſt priviledge of Parliament that can be, and in effect refuſe to receive any Petition from them at all, for that his Maieſties proclaiming the Earle of *Eſſex* and his adherents to bee Traytors, hee hath in that word comprehended both houſes of Parliament, which is not onely againſt the priviledges of Parliament, but the fundamentall Lawes of the Land. And it was therefore alſo voted, that the Earle of *Eſſex* ſhould goe forward in advancing his forces according to his inſtructions with all ſpeede, and lay by the ſaid petition which was to bee preſented to his Majeſty, and withall that hee ſhould take ſome courſe to ſend theſe votes and reſolutions of the houſes concerning his Maieſties anſwer to his Excellency.

The Earle of *Eſſex* by his letters to the Houſes, made a full relation alſo of the late fight at *Worceſter*, by which relation he did certaine aſſure them that there was but 25. perſons killed on both ſides, how ever former reports were otherwiſe.

It was alſo informed that one Captaine *Aſhby*, Captaine of a Company in his Excellencies Army being taken upon a revolt with his company with an intent to fire to his Majeſtie, was adiudged by Marſhall Law to looſe his life, which was done accordingly.

Here was alſo certaine informations by letters from *Chester*, that the Lord *Strange* now Earle of *Derby*, with about 2000. men having laid ſeige againſt the Towne, was hourly ex-

opposed by the Citizens and doers of the Country that came to their assistance; that they have raised his seidge, killed 150 of his Cavalliers, and tooke an 100. of them prisoners, and all with the losse of 6. men, his Lordships with the reliqué of his forces haveing now left the place, and marched to *Shrewsbury* to his Majestie bemoaning his bad successe.

There came letters to the Houses from the Earle of *Warwick*, informing that Captaine *Rainsby* and Captaine *Stradling*, who formerly revoulted from the Earle of *Warwick*, haveing left the Guard of the Irish Seas, came with their two shipps to *Newcastle* and were designed to go for *Holland*, to fetch the Queene and the provisios she hath made there, to assist his Majestie.

Of which busines the Earle of *Warwick* haveing notice sent out six of his shipps to *Newcastle*, to apprehend the said *Stradling*, and *Rainsby*, who set upon them while they lay at *Tinmouth* takeing in of their provisions to go for *Holland*; the seamen in the said two shipps being glad of such an opportunity to shew their faithfullnesse to the Parliament, not relishing the proceedings of their Captaines, refused to aid them in making warr against the Parliament, but would rather have apprehended them by force if they had refused to submit, whereby the said two shipps were taken with out any opposition, and the Captaines remaine prisoners to the Earle of *Warwick*.

It was also credibly informed the houses by letters from *Lincolnshire* that Sir *Robert Hanson* the great maligner against the Parliament and high sheriffe for the County of Lincolne, was apprehended by the Parliaments forces and carried prisoner to *Boston*, they intending very suddainly to send him up to the Parliament.

It was also informed the houses by letters from Wiltshire that since the Earle of *Pembroke* goeing from thence to the Isle of Wight, the Cavaliers have beene in the Country and done great spoile there, especially in plundering and pillaging the Lord *Dutton's* house in that County, but the Earle of *Pembroke* having notice thereof, is upon returning backe from the said Isle of Wight to Wilt-shire, to preserve the peace of the County.

There

concerning the busineſſe, and that his Majeſty made reply that he would receive any Petition ſhould bee preſented to him from his Parliament, and give free accesse to thole which ſhould bring the ſame, but he would not receive any Petition out of the hands of any Traytor; which busineſſe the Earle of *Eſſex* referred to the Parliament that they would advise him what he ſhould further doe concerning the ſaid Petition.

Whereupon after ſome debate of the busineſſe it was agreed upon the vote in the houſe of Commons, that for his Majeſty to make ſuch diſtinction of his Parliament, that hee would receive no Petition ſhould be preſented to him from them by the hands of ſuch as he accompts to bee Traitors, he doth in that abridge them of the greateſt privilege of Parliament that can be, and in effect refuſe to receive any Petition from them at all, for that his Maieſties proclaiming the Earle of *Eſſex* and his adherents to bee Traytors, hee hath in that word comprehended both houſes of Parliament, which is not onely againſt the priviledges of Parliament, but the fundamentall Lawes of the Land. And it was therefore alſo voted, that the Earle of *Eſſex* ſhould goe forward in advancing his forces according to his inſtructions with all ſpeede, and lay by the ſaid petition which was not preſented to his Majeſty, and withall that hee ſhould take ſome courſe to ſend theſe votes and reſolutions of the houſes concerning his Majeſties anſwer to his Excellency.

The Earle of *Eſſex* by his letters to the Houſes, made a full relation alſo of the late fight at *Worceſter*, by which relation he of a certaine aſſured them that there was but 25. perſons killed on both ſides, how evet former reports were otherwiſe.

It was alſo informed that one Captaine *Burbery*, Captaine of a Company in his Excellencies Army being taken upon a revolt with his company with an intent to flee to his Majeſtie, was adiudged by Marſhall Law to looſe his life, which was done accordingly.

Here was alſo certaine informations by letters from *Manchester*, that the Lord *Strange* now Earle of *Derby*, with about 1000. men having laid ſeidge againſt the Towne, was bravely oppo-

opposed by the Citizens and doers of the Country that came to their assistance; that they have raised his seidge, killed 150 of his Cavaliers, and tooke an 100. of them prisoners, and all with the losse of 6. men, his Lordshipp with the residue of his forces haveing now left the place, and marched to *Sarisbury* to his Majestie bemoaning his bad successe.

There came letters to the Houses from the Earle of *Warwick*, informing that Captaine *Batelby* and Captaine *Stradling*, who formerly revoulted from the Earle of *Warwick*, haveing left the Guard of the Irish Seas, came with their two shipps to *Newcastle* and were designed to go for *Holland*, to fetch the Queene and the provisios she hath made there, to assist his Majestie.

Of which busines the Earle of *Warwick* haveing notice sent out six of his shipps to *Newcastle*, to apprehend the said *Stradling*, and *Batelby*, who set upon them while they lay at *Tinmouth* takeing in of their provisions to go for *Holland*, the seamen in the said two shipps being glad of such an opportunity to shew their faithfullnesse to the Parliament, not refusing the proceedings of their Captaines, refused to aid them in making warr against the Parliament, but would rather have apprehended them by force if they had refused to submitt, whereby the said two shipps were taken with out any opposition, and the Captaines remaine prisoners to the Earle of *Warwick*.

It was also credibly informed the houses by letters from *Lincolnshire* that Sir *Robert Hanon* the great maligant against the Parliament and high sheriffe for the County of Lincolne, was apprehended by the Parliaments forces and carried prisoner to *Boston*, they intending very suddainly to send him up to the Parliament.

It was also informed the houses by letters from Wiltshire that since the Earle of *Pembroke* goeing from thence to the Isle of Wight, the Cavaliers have beene in the Country and done great spoile there, especially in plundering and pillaging the Lord *Duttons* house in that County, but the Earle of *Pembroke* having notice thereof, is upon returning backe from the said Isle of Wight to Wiltshire, to preserve the peace of the County.

There

There was certaine information given to the Houses on Tuesday last by Letters from *Yorkeshire*, that there hath beene great opposition in that County betweene the Lord *Fairfax* and those of his party for the Parliament, and the Earle of *Cumberland*, and the other Gentlemen for the Commission of Array. That the Earle of *Cumberland* Cavallieres tooke themselves to *Pomfret* Castle, whether also the Bishop of *Yorke* fled for sanctuary, and those of the Lord *Fairfax* party continued at *Leeds*, Sir *John Savile* going with 20. horse to the Lord *Fairfax* at *Leeds*, was set upon by Sir *John Gotherick* with two Troopes of horse, and two of his men killed, and himselfe taken prisoner and carried to *Pomfret* Castle: But since that, on *Michaelmas* day last there was a Treaty betweene the Gentlemen on both sides, and they then concluded of certaine Articles for the setling of the peace of the County, the effect whereof in short was, that all forces on either side should be layed downe and a future Amity to bee continued betweene them, and that they should neither execute the Militia or Commission of Array, but stand as neutets betweene the King and Parliament & ioyntly to defend and preserve the peace of the County against all forces that shall come against them &c.

Upon consideration of which businesse there was a long debate in both Houses of Parliament, and the said Articles of Agreement were altogether disapproved of by them, and adiudged to bee of very evill and and dangerous consequence to the whole Kingdome: And thereupon they drew up a Declaration to bee forthwith sent to the Gentry and Commons of *Yorkeshire*, consisting of these heads.

First, that none of the parties to that agreement without consent of Parliament have authority to bynde that County to any such Newtrality as is mentioned in the Articles.

Secondly, that if it should goe on, it would bee very prejudiciall to the whole Kingdome.

Thirdly, that it is Derogatory to the power and authority of Parliament.

Fourthly, That many things in that agreement are very unequall and more advantagious to one side, than to the other.

And

And therefore they doe declare that no such Neutrality may or ought to bee observed by that County: And thereupon the houses agreed upon certaine votes that the Committees of that County formerly appointed shall goe on for the raising of horse and moneys upon the propositions for the Parliament.

Also that they shall goe on with their instructions for the seizing, apprehending, and disarming of all Delinquents in the Countrey.

And lastly, that they should make proclamation of pardon to all those that shall lay downe their Armes within tenne dayes after publication.

There was also certaine information given to the House by Letters that the Marquesse of *Hartford* and his Cavalliers that lately fled from *Sherburne* Castle are come into South-wales, and that thee have possessed them selves of Cardiffe Castle it being the Earle of *Pembrookes* house in Glamorgan-shire, which Castle was very treacherously yealded up to them; with out the least opposition by one Maister *Herbert* the keper thereof, an ungratefull man to the Earle of *Pembrooke* and a member of the house of Commons, but now voted against for ever sitting in the house dureing this Parliament, It was also informed that the Marquesse intends to Pillage the Earle of *Pembrooke* Lands there abouts, and to strengthen his forces and then to march back to his Majestie.

On Tuesday towards evening there came to London two of the cheifest Commanders within the Kingdome of Scotland, one whereof was Leiuetennant Generall to General *Leslie* for the Northen service, and the other speciall good Souldiers who offer them selves to serve for the Parliament in this expedition.

And it was by the said Commanders also informed that the Kingdom of *Scotland* hath appointed eight Comissioners 4. whereof are Earles and the other 4. Lords, and have sent them into *England*, and are every day expected here, with a Declaration to the Parliament, and a Petition and instructions to present to his Majestie, the effect whereof is that his Majestie would be pleased forthwith to leave his evill Councellors, and returne to his Parliament:

ian out whereby a firme peace may be settled betwixt them, and that the Synod for the setling of Religion may goe on, and appointed their meeting by the third of November next, and some other such like propositions tending to peace, which if his Majestie shall refuse to hearken unto, they do declare that they shall be enforced in duty to his Majestie, religion and the Law to keep up Armes to assist their brethren in England in preserving the peace of the two Kingdomes against those wicked and evill Incendiaries betweene his Majestie and Parliament.

Upon Wednesday morning last Maister *Rosworth* came hither to the Parliament with letters from the Earle of *Essex* from *Worcester*, informeing them that his Majestie hath drawne up all his forces into an intire body about *Shrewsbury*, and that it is conceived, he intends to make some end in the businesse, and to provide for a fett battell, for that other wise he will not be able to keepe his forces together, they being brought to that distresse for want of meanes, and are now out of hopes of the great purchase they expected from *Holland*, it being soe long delayed.

That the Earle of *Essex* hath also drawne up his forces to *Worcester* there being 8. Regiments more come unto him that were imployed in severall parts, his excellency intending withall speed to advance with his Army from *Worcester*, and to put in execution his instructions.

The Parliament to prevent the retreating of any of the Kings forces into *Worcester* upon the Earle of *Essex* advancing from thence, have appointed Sir Robert *Harlow*, and Maister Serieant *Wilde* to goe downe thither, to secure the Citie and to take order for the examining of such delinquents as the Earle of *Essex* hath in custody there.

It was also informed the houses that Captaine *Legg* formerly taken by the Parliaments forces neare *Coventry*, hath brooke the prison, and the last night made escape from the Gate house at which businesse the houses being much incensed, ordered that there should be messengers speedily appointed to take post and ride severall wayes and to lay waite in all Townes betwen this and his Majestie to prevent him in his passage that way or for takeing to Sea.

FINIS.

Property of the Library
Wesleyan University

PRINCE ROBERTS MESSAGE to my Lord of ESSEX:

With an Answer to his desires touching the construction of the Lawes, and certaine other Points to the great Satisfaction of all People.

Wherein is Declared his wicked Resolutions, mask'd under the pretention of Loyalty unto his Uncle (our Kings Majesty)

Together with his desire of a Pitch-field in *Dunsmore-Heath*, with the true relation of his wicked and Tyrannicall proceedings there hee goes.

Also the true Relation of a Challenge hee gave unto his *Excellencie*, &c.

Together with the Entertainment hee and his Brother (*Prince* MAVRICE) *found in* Shrewsbury *by the Trained Bands, and other poore people there inhabiting.*

ALSO,

The wonderfull mercy of God shewed towards his EXCELLENCIE, in delivering his Honour from a fatall Conspiracy pretended against his Person at *Worcester*.

London, Printed for THO: BANKES, *Octob.* 6. 1642.

The discovery of a wonderfull Gun-powder-plot pretended against his Excellencie, at St. *Peters* Church at *Worcester*.

CErtaine of Sir *John Byrons* Cavaleers having intelligence of my Lord of *Essex* his coming to *Worcester*, and withall knowing his Key to be such as that he seldome neglect Gods divine Service, thought there to have undermined his Person, making the Church the place and Sanctuary of their wicked Actions, for there was certaine Vault under the Church, where they had conveyed three Barrels of Powder, upon which they laid a great heape of dead mens Bones for to blow that side of the Church where my Lord was to Seate himselfe, (but see the wonderfull mercy of God, who was a watch eye still on his beloved) no sooner was my Lord in his Coach coming to the Church but that the Sexton came running to his Excellency and said that he feared some mischief to be hatching against his Person, alleaging that there were three men that did often frequent the Church Vaule, but he knew not their Intentions, and that the Key of the Vault doore was stole from him, which made the suspition the more, on his words my Lord caused the doores to be broke open, and at their entrance they saw three men stand in Armour, whom they tooke and apprehended. And further search they found 3 barrels of Powder under a heape of Bones with great store of Pike staves hidden, all which my Lord caused to be taken away, sending the three men up to be censured by the Honourable Houses of Parliament.

Paines

PRINCE ROBERTS Message to my Lord of ESSEX.



Here am I faine to speake of a Prince that deserves not the title of a Subject, one who pretends Piety in his tongue, but carries I feare meere Irreligion in his heart, and if his future Actions bee correspondent or any way equivalent to his former exploits, I shall greatly doubt whether I speak of a *Christian* or no, it requires an Age here upon to uncase the whole story of his wicked proceedings acted heere on our *British* shore; therefore I will onely

[illegible] mention of some of his late pulling [illegible]
[illegible] to the resolutions of those that were [illegible]
[illegible] Bill, of his Message to my Lord [illegible]
[illegible] effect, which was to this effect, *That such his [illegible] undertaken to be Generall of the Parliaments Army, without the consent of his Soveraign, but rather to confront and oppose his Majesties Person; that therefore, he might with as just Ground (though being a Forraigne) by the Law of Nature assist his Majesty against any such person, that [illegible] any occasion should arise, by His Royall Command, adding that a King though hee raigne never so Tyrannicall, impose an unjust Tax on the Subjects bee it never so heavie, yet notwithstanding are they by the Law of God not to withdraw their Duty and Obedience from him.* To this Answer, That the sacred Writ binds a Subject to obey a good Soveraigne, (as [illegible] I thinke) to beare with a bad one; rather to procure abatement in rigour Authority, than to suffer a continuall perseverance of a worse [*primittimus abatementum*] 'tis true [*Sed hac Conditione, si legitime Imperet Magistratus non Tyrannice.*] Wee promise obedience to a Magistrate no farther then his actions are done legally, according to the accustomary lawes of the Land and the right meaning thereof, not according to his owne Constructions and Inventions; so suppose there should be a double construction in some particular points of Law, who more fitter to decide them then they that made them, who more fitter to Correct and abate the rigour

gers of the [illegible] from whence they flow, and shall even Parliaments that are the chiefe founders of Lawes be enterpreted from Construing them (heavens forbid) withall concerning the *Taxes* hee mentions, 'tis not a little knowne to the great griefe of many a poore Subject, the strickt *Monopolies* and quotidian taxations this Kingdome of *England* is said for a long time hath beene checkled and fettred in, but if the corruption of *Lawyers* and *Judges* be such as to maintaine illegall proceedings in a common wealth by their vnjust exactions, yet may good Subjects (and that with a cleere Conscience) neglect a willing performance of the same; Tributs may well be denied where unjustly exacted, (according to the common and true proverbe) and though the Cavaleers all edge the Law for all their Actions, tis willingly granted both to His Majesty then, and all his good Subjects, so farre it is executed and grounded upon Justice, but no further; and I could heartily wish it were in full execution upon all such demanders that require Justice from others, when (in all their Actions) who more unjust then themselves why call they not for Justice upon those that pillage poore peoples houses without any right or reason for the same, why not for those that Ravish all they meete with, firing and destroying all in their way, murdering poore Infants that scarce have the discretion to call for succour or aid: no, they expect that their owne Tyrannicall Actions must serve

Scot-free; He pleads likewise for the *Prerogative of the King* (not regarding the priviledge of the Subject) *alleaging that in the behalfe of his Lord he is Resolved to live and dye*: To this, I aske what Prerogative is debarred from His Majesty, sought that remained for the safety, and honour of his person, and the good of this his Kingdome; but I truely suppose that he makes this but a cloake for his proceedings, for tis well known there's no Prerogative for him allotted in this Realme, for the pilaging of Townes, and firing of Houses.

The true COPPIE and forme of his Message was as followeth.

MY LORD,

I Heare you are Generall of an Army, sent by the Agreement of both Houses of Parliament (under the pretence of Subduing some Malignant Persons unto these parts) but we greatly feare you aym at some higher power, namely your owne Soveraigne, if your intents are such, give but the least notice thereof, And I shall be ready in His behalf to give you an encounter in a Plebt feild, at Dunsmore-heath, *the 10. day of* October *next, and if you thinke it too much labour and expences to dram your Forces thither, I shall as willingly for my own part expect private satisfaction at your hands for the same heere, and that performed by a single* Duell; *which proffer if you please to accept,*

you

you shall not finde me backward in performing what I have said or promised, I know my cause to be so Just that I need not, for what I doe is agreeable both to the Lawes of God and man, in the defence of true Religion, a Kings Prerogative, and Peeres right, and a Kingdomes safety; Thinke it therefore not strange that a Forreigne should take a course with your English shore with intention to draw the Sword, when the Law of Armes prompts him on to that Resolution, you cannot have your King of ought, without too much clemencie and gratious shewed towards his people, when that his Person is thus molested by his owne Subjects, suppose that He had swayed his Scepter with a strict hand, raining in the Bridle of Authority with harsh Taxations and Tyrannie (which 'tis too well knowne he did never observe as infallible to his Sacred Person) yet if you were it so, the Subjects are not thereupon to withdraw their Obedience and Duty neither by the Lawes of God nor the Lawes of man, for they are however or at leastwise should be still his Subiects; for these reasons and divers others that I could alledge, I am resolved in the defence of so just a Cause to hazard my life and limbe, and endeavour the destruction of all those that shall anyway oppose my Resolution therein. Now have I said all, and what more you expect of me to be said shall be delivered in a larger field then a small sheet of Paper, and that by my Sword and not my Pen, in the interim I am your friend till I meet you next.

But before this Message was delivered unto his Excellency, newes was brought that Prince Robert had

had received a dangerous wound in the head by Colonell
Lords in a Skirmish within three miles of Worcester
that this answer was return'd for the present unto
Her Commissioners.

This Prince hath done great mischiefe to many
this Kingdome, likewise hee and all his followers wher
ever they goe, leave not a house in their way unrif
they tooke from one Mr. *Hanbury* a Gentleman of W
Cotterstock, seaven hundred pounds in money beside
and other spoyles they tooke from his House. This P
with his Brother Prince *Maurice*, being drove from
cester by Colonell *Fines* his Souldiers, betooke them
with all their forces toward *Shrewsbury*, where they
such hot Entertainment that they were quickly
take a flight thorow *Severne* for their safety, for
bury is so invironed with water, that there is but one
for passage unto the Towne, which the Townesmen
knowing their advantage did guard that with the
Bands, so that the Prince being likewise pursued
Reare by Colonell *Fines*, was faine to take water
his followers.

FINIS.

Kirk Tr. 9

A 11 Number 13.

CONTINVATION

Of certain Speciall and Remarkable passages from both Houses of PARLIAMENT, and divers other parts of the *Kingdome*, from *Wednesday* the 5. of *October* till the Eight of *October*. 1642.

Containing these particulars, *viz.*

1. *A true Relation of the taking of a Shippe at Yarmouth comming from Holland with great store of Ammunition*, 150. *Commanders, and* 400. *barrells of Powder and other provisions.*
2. *The intercepting of certaine Letters in the said Shippe by an accident, and their bringing to the Parliament, by which it was enformed that there is another Shippe comming from the Queene with great store of provisions and Monies, And an Order sent to the Earle of Warwicke to use all possible meanes to intercept the same.*
3. *A true Relation of the Kings sending for the Masters of the Mint from the Tower, with an Order of Parliament against their going.*
4. *A true relation of his Majesties sending of the Lord Faulkland into Ireland. with a Relation of the Parliaments proceedings concerning the Earle of Leicester.*
5. *A vote of the House of Commons for the expelling of one of their members.*
6. *Of the Commitment of one Master Price to the Gatehouse for speaking of words against the Parliament.*
7. *A True Relation of Sir Ralph Hopton and some other of his confederates possessing themselves of Sir Nicholas Slanies Castle in Cornwell.*
8. *Of the Bill agreed upon by the Parliament for the Synod to meete by the fifth of November next.*
9. *Of the Parliaments sending into Ireland for the Earle of Antrim taken prisoner by the Scotts in the North of Ireland.*
10. *A true relation of the Earle of Stamfords securing of Hereford with* 500. *horse and* 2000. *foote.*
11. *A certaine relation of the Kings fortifying of Shrewsbury, and sending of Prince Rober with his maine forces to Bridge North and some further proceedings of that Army.*
12. *Of Captaine Stradlings making escape into Ireland.*
13. *The bringing of the High sheriffe of Lincolne to the Parliament.*
14. *The Examination of the keeper of the Gatehouse, concerning Captaine Leggs escape.*
15. *A relation of certaine Letters to the Parliament from Holland.*

BRITISH MUSEUM

A CONTINVATION OF Certaine Speciall and Remarkable passages from both Houſes of Parliament and divers other parts of this Kingdome,

From Wedneſday the fifth of *October*, till Saterday the Eight of *October* 1642.

Thurſday the 6. *of* October.

THere came Letters to both Houſes of Parliament by one Captaine *Iohnſon* from *Yarmouth*, informing them that they have there taken a ſhippe comming from *Holland* with great ſtore of Amunition about 400. barrells of Pouder, ten peeces of Ordnance and 150. of the Prince of *Orange* chiefe Officers & Souldiers, & ſome Treaſure & other Armes which the Queen had procured to aſſiſt his Majeſty, and they intended to have landed there at *Newcaſtle*, but the ſhip ſprang a leake at Sea, and ſo was forced to come into into *Yarmouth*, upon the firſt taking of the ſhippe they pretending they had brought thoſe proviſions for the Parliament, but upon further examination it appeared otherwiſe, how ever by good providence they are now likely to be imployed for the ſervice of the Parliament: The ſhip being ordered to be ſafely conveyed up to *London* by the Earle of *Warwicke*, and the Prince of Oranges Commanders, alſo to come along

along with her, who as yet are in safe custodie at *Yarmouth*.

Upon the first taking of the shippe it being to be searched the Master thereof and company having certaine Letters which they brought from the Queene; tyed them up in a peece of Sayle cloth, and with a cord tyed a great Cannot bullet to the end thereof to make it sincke, and so threw it into the Sea by the side of the shippe to prevent discovery.

But the Letters being found were also brought to the Parliament and broake open, but the wett had so defaced the writing they could scarsely be read, onely thus much was informed by them, that the Queene hath provided another shippe with great store of Ammunition and moneys to come speedily after this shippe to *Newcastle* to relieve his Maiesties forces.

But the Parliament upon consideration of this businesse have sent to the Earle of *Warwicke* to desire him that withall possible vigilency he would guard the Coasts from *Holland*, whereby that shippe may be also intercepted in her passage to *Newcastle*.

There was a certaine report made to the Parliament, that the King hath sent to his Coyners of the Mint at the Tower to bring their coyning mould and other implements, and come to him to his Army at *Shrewsbury*, but the Parliament have sent an Order to the Masters of the Mint that they shall not goe.

There was also certaine infomation given to the house by letters that his Majestie hath sent the Lord *Faulkland* his chiefe Secretary over into *Ireland*, with some private instructions concerning the Army, but the full end, and intent thereof cannot as yet be learned.

However the Parliamen have ordered that Master *Goodwin*, and Maister *Reynolds* members of their house appointed for that service shall have their speedy dispatches and be sent over to *Ireland*, but the Earle of *Leicester* it is much feared will scarsely be permited to goe over at all, for that he refused to shew to the Parliament his instructions which he had from his Majestie for the ordering of the affaires of *Ireland* whereby the Parliament have a great Iealousie of him.

There

There was information given to the howses from *Wales* that Captaine *Price* a member of the House of Commons hath been very busie there abouts in puting the Comission of Array in Execution, and doeth give out great threats against such as refuse to obey it, where upon it was voted by the Commons that hee should be expelled the house, and a nother to be chosen in his roome.

There was also one Master *Price* a Suffolke man brought before the Commons and comitted to Prison for saying that the Earle of *Pembrooke* was an Ass, A knave, and a foole, and that the Parliament men, were noe better then a company of beggerly fellowes, chosen out of the very scume of the people &c.

The houses received certaine information by letters out of *Cornwall* that Sir Ralpeh *Hopton* and some other of the Marquess of *Hartfords* cheife Confederates, that left the *Marques* to *Myocard* for that they could not gett passage with him over the *Severne*, have been at *Plymouth* and have pillaged, and spoyled divers honest men there abouts, and that he and his company are now marched into *Cornwall* and have possessed themselves of a very strong Castle there belonging to Sir Nicholas *Slany*, who is also one of theire Confederates, but the Marques of *Hertford* is at *Cardife Castle* in *Wales*.

The Parliament have receeived the bill for the assembly of the *Clergy* to consider of the setling of Religion and Ceremonyes and they have added to the List divers Scotch Ministers, that are sent over by the Kingdome of *Scotland*, to joyne with our Assembly for the setling of an uniformitie in Religion in both Kingdomes and it is ordered that the meeting shall begin by the 5. of *November* next.

The houses of Parliament, have tooke Order for the sending to the *Scotch* forces in *Ireland* that they would send up to the Parliament the Earle of *Antrim* an Arch-Rebell whom they touke prisoner in the North of *Ireland*, that he may be heare examined concerning the Rebells proceedings.

It was informed the houses by letters from *Hereford-shire* that County do much repent themselves for theire Malignancie against

gainst the Parliament for that so the carriage of the Kings Cavaliers tends to nothing but distruction, and therefore they have sent 400. Volunteers to the Earle of *Essex*, and his Excellency hath sent the Earle of *Stanford* with 500. horse and 2000. men to *Hereford*, and that they have possessed themselves of that City and fortifie it for the Parliament.

It was also informed the houses that the Earle of *Bath* is taken by the Earle of *Bedfords* Troopes in *Devonshire* and that he and divers others of the Marquis of *Hartfords* Cavalliers are bringing up to the Parliament.

The Marquis of *Hartfords* Steward was upon Thursday last brought up to the parliament, and Commited to the Gatehouse.

There came more Letters to the Houses from *Shrewsbury* informing that his Majestie makes great provisions for the certifieing of *Shrewsbury*, but Prince *Robert* with the maine forces marched to *Bridge North* a place of speciall Eminencie, where they intend to place themselves for a pitcht battell, the King is to stay at *Shrewsbury* and hath reserved a part of his forces for a Garison there, his Majesty hath caused all the houses without the Walls of the Towne to be taken downe that so he may with more Conveniencie plant his Ordnance to secure the Towne, but the Townesmen doe not relish these proceedings and are much troubled at it.

Upon Friday last the Parliament received further information by Letters from *Shrewsbury*, that Prince *Robert* with his Majesties maine forces is marched from *Bridge North*, and gone more neere to the Lord Generalls Army, and that hee is now within 15 miles of *Worcester*, and that some sudden attempt is expected betwixt the two Armies: It is boasted that the Kings Forces is 20000 strong, but it is thought hee wants a quarter of the number.

It was also informed the Houses that upon the Earle of Warwickes taking of the two shippes before Newcastle Captaine Stradling Made escape from his shippe in his long boate, and that hee is now gone into *Ireland*.

As alſo it was informed that the Lord *Paulet* is of certaine gone over into *Ireland* with the Lord *Faulkeland*, and that the intent of their going is to waſt ovrr a Regement or two of the forces, there to aſſiſt his Majeſtie.

This afternooe Sir Robert Hern High Shreiffe for the County of Lincolne who was lately appre hended by the Parliaments Forces in that Crunty for his great delinquency in oppoſing the County in their yealding obedience to the Parliament, and a cheiſe Array man, who upon his firſt apprehending was ſo unruly, that the Country was enforced to tie him in a Cart, and carry him to Boſton priſon, was this day brought with a ſtrong guard to London, and committed priſonor to the Tower, till the further leaſure of the Parliament to examine him.

Alſo the under Keeper of the Gate-houſe that had charge of Captaine Legg, was that after-noune brought before the Commons and examined eencerning Captaine Leggs eſcape, but would not confeſſe any thing concerning the ſame onely that the cheiſe Keeper hath alſo abſented himſelfe, and as it is conjecrured is gone a long with Captaine Legg to his Majeſty.

Where upon it was Ordered that the under keeper ſhould be Comitted to the Serjeant at Armes, and a more ſtrict courſe to be taken for his Examination.

There came alſo Letters to the Houſes from Maſter *Strickland* at the Hague, informing the faire correſpondency which the State deſire to hold with the Parliament, & that with there permiſſion, there ſhalbee no ſupplies ſent from thence to his Maieſtie, But the Queen by underhand dealing, and by the meanes of the Prince of Orange hath procured ſome proviſions which ſhee intends to bring along with her into *England*, there being 14 ſayle of Shipps that lye ready for her Tranſportation.

FINIS.

As also it was informed that the Lord Paulet is of resolution
to stand with the Lord Admiral, and that the in-
habitants of Portsmouth do watch over a Regiment of the
Queen, there to fulfil his Majesties.

The absence Sir Robert Heron High Sheriff for the Coun-
ty of Lincolne who was lately appre hended by the Parliament
here in that County for his great delinquency in opposing the
County in their yeelding obedience to the Parliament, and a
Gentleman, who upon his first apprehending was to trans-
port the Country was enforced to tie him in a Cart, and carry
him to Bolton prison, was this day brought with a strong guard
to London, and committed prisoner to the Tower, till the fur-
ther order of the Parliament to examine him.

Also the under Keeper of the Gate-house that had charge of
Captain Legg, was this after-noone brought before the Com-
mons and examined concerning Captain Legges escape, but
what or how else any thing appeareth the same onely that
the chiefe Keep er hath also blemished himselfe, and as it is com-
prised is gone a long with Captaine Legg to his Majesty.

Where upon it was Ordered that the under Keeper should be
Committed to the Serjeant at Armes, and a more strict course to
be taken for his Examination.

There came also Letters to the Houses from Master Strickland
at Hagus, informing the faire correspondency which the
States doe hold with the Parliament So that with their pre-
sent assistance they hope ere long from thence to hear of
their Queen by Vnderhand dealing, and by the meanes of
the Prince of Orange hath procured some provisions which shee
hath sent a long along with her into England, the being ab-
out 5 Ships that lye ready for her Transportation.

TRUE INTELLIGENCE, AND JOYFULL NEWES FROM LUDLOW:

Declaring a Battell fought by his Excellency the Earle of *Essex*, against Prince *Robert*, Prince *Maurice*, and the rest of the Cavaliers, neere *Ludlow*, October 1. 1642.

Also the manner of the Earle of Essex *his obtaining the victory, and putting the Cavaliers to flight, and how he hath gained the Castle, and strongly fortified the Town of* Ludlow.

Together with the names of those that are taken prisoners, and the number of those that are slain.

LONDON,
Printed for Th. Rider. *October* 6. 1642.

TRUE INTELLIGENCE
AND
JOYFULL NEWES
FROM
LUDLOW:

Declaring a Battell fought by his Excellency the Earle of Essex, against Prince Rupert, Prince Maurice, and divers of the Cavaliers, neere Ludlow, October 1. 1642.

Of the taking of the Earle of Essex his Standing the victory, and putting the Cavaliers to flight, and how he hath gained the Castle, and strongly fortified the Town of Ludlow.

Together with the names of those that are taken prisoners, and the number of those that are slain.

LONDON,

Printed for Th. Rider. October 6. 1642.

TRUE INTELLIGENCE from LUDLOVV:

Declaring a great battell fought by his Excellency the Earle of ESSEX, against Prince *Robert*, Prince *Maurice*, and the reſt of the Kings Army, October 1.

Alſo the manner of the Earle of Eſſex *his obtaining the victory, and putting Prince* Robert *and the Cavaliers to flight, gaining the Caſtle, and ſtrongly fortifying the towne, with the names of thoſe that are taken priſoners on both ſides, and the number of thoſe that are ſlain.*

THe Earle of Eſſex having received ſome loſſe at Worceſter, by reaſon of the great advantage which the enemy had of them both in number and in the field, the paſſage being ſo ſtrait and inconvenient, that our men could not march up to aſſault the enemy: therfore his Excellency, to make good at

Ludlow, what he loſt at Worceſter, advanced from thence with his Army, conſiſting of about twenty thouſand horſe and foot, leaving onely a guard at the ſaid city, to ſecure the ſame from the barbarous and inſolent actions of the bloud-thirſty party, and in his march he left a ſtrong guard in all other places where hee thought the enemy might have any place of Sanctuary, cutting off divers bridges about the river Sevesne, and when he had paſſed over the ſaid river, being the 30. of September, he had information by the Free-holders of the adjoyning counties, that Prince Robert had left five or ſix Troupes of horſe in the way ſome five miles diſtant from Ludlow, and that they were labouring very much about ſome deſigne againſt his Excellency: wherefore the Earle commanded captaine Auſtin, captaine Hide, and captain Fairfax, to draw out ſuch a number as they thought fit to match, which they did, according to the Lord Generals command: but they had

no sooner entred the way, but they spied a great number of horses with war-saddles, and immediatly advanced towards them: but the cavaliers perceiving their coming, betook themselves to their horses, being about 500. who with all expedition came and met our Forces, resolving to encounter with them, but before they had entred into battell, captaine Hide, a deserving souldier, demanded what they were, and whether they stood for the King and cavaliers, or for the King and Parliament? they soon replied, for the King and cavaliers: our souldiers hearing their answer, were much inraged, and desired captain Hide that they might immediately fall on; who according to their desires soone agreed to the same, and with much courage and valour he brought them up, giving the first onset, and then captaine Hales brought up his Troupe with great charge against them, insomuch that there was soone a great slaughter made amongst the Cavaliers, and those that could get time,

or

or procure opportunity, thought themselves secure to run away, by reason of the ill successe which they had at this time. Then his Excellency the Earle of Essex marched with the rest of his Army towards Ludlow, where Prince Robert had intrenched himselfe very strongly, and made great bulwarks and fortifications for the safety and preservation of himselfe and the rest of his associates: whereupon his Excellency placed a strong guard at every place of the towne, which hee thought might be most advantagious for his souldiers, and then marched against the Castle of Ludlow, where he found great opposition; for the Cavaliers had so strongly fortified themselves, and planted many Peeces of Ordnance against our souldiers, that it seemed to be almost an impossible thing to obtaine the same; yet by Gods assistance, and his owne wisdome and policie, he woke the same, putting all the Cavaliers to flight: for after much shot spent on both sides, his Excellen-

gave command that the Ordnance should be mounted up, because he was resolved to make a battery against them, which command was forthwith obeyed and put in execution: and upon Saturday last the Cavaliers began to shew their courage about nine of the clock in the morning, and held till foure in the afternoone, where the enemy all this while played with their Canons from the Castle against us, but at last Prince Robert having lost a great number of his men, left the Castle, and is gone towards Shrewesbury, his Excellency having taken the said Castle, left a strong guard, and is now gone after them towards Shrewesbury.

Two ships coming towards England from Denmark, were lately taken and boarded by the Earle of Warwick, who found them to be laden with good store of ammunition and money, which mounted to the value of an hundred thousand pound, he seized upon them and their treasure, that they might not be

be imployed against the Parliament
and hath sent them guarded with
other of his ships up to London for
service of the King and Parliament
Michaelmas day the ships set out by
Parliament tooke two other ships
the command of captaine Ketleby
captaine Stradling, who deserted the
vice against the Rebels in Ireland
came to serve against the Parliament
made stay of much provision that
sent for Ireland: they were taken at
mouth without any shot or resistance
for the Saylors mutined, and would
be imployed against the Parliament.

FINIS.

RELATION

OF

THE PROCEEDINGS AT *Manchester*, From Sunday the 25. of *September*, to Sonday the second of October, MDCXLIJ.

Wherein is Related six severall Battels fought by the Inhabitants of *Manchester*, with two thousand men against the Lord Strange, now Earle of Derby, and the Lord Rivers with 3000. horse and foot, Describing the number that was slain on both sides, in each battle.

Declared in a Letter sent from Mr. *Thomas Hankins* to Mr. *Erbie* a Member of the House of Commons, and openly read in the said House, October the 4. 1642.

K.

October 6. Printed for H. Blake, 1642.



True and Happy

NEVES

FROM

MANCHESTER.

Read in the House of Commons, October 4. 1642.

Sunday the 25 of September.

THis day in the Evening the Lord *Strange*, Lord *Rivers* Sir *Gilbert Gerrat*, and about 3000 souldiers, under their command came before our town, and placed themselves in battle array against the same, but that night attempted no assault against the Towne, onely preparing themselves in readinesse and ordering their Army against the next morning.

On Monday morning about six of the clocke, they made an assault against the Town, and let fly and bullets fly with great eagernesse, and [illegible] courage, the L. *Strange* animating his soul[illegible] with many plausible speeches, and great shew of courage in himself, upon which we in the Town addressed our selves, to defend our selves and offend our enemies, and sending out of the towne on that side where most of their Army were some of our men to give notice to the Inhabitants of the County, desiring their speedy aid, who with much cheerfulnesse well provided of Arms came in, and by 7. of the clock at night, wee was in number equall to our Adversaries, in the mean time before they came in we discharged our parts as well as we were able against the said Lord and his forces, with such courage as they gained not possession of any part of our Town, nor slew any of our men, neither are we certain of the slaughter of any of them, towards Evening the L. *Strange* divided his Army, but no cessation of shot in the mean time on either side.

Then the Lord *Derby* with about eight hundred men assaulted *SARFORD* on the other side of the Water, and before the morning possessed himself of that Village, being accounted the Suburbs of our Town, and rifled the Houses of all the Inhabitants who were forced to fly from their cruelty.

Wee had the disadvantage of other Towns, having no Vales nor convenient place to plant any Ordnance if we had any, but wee having none did defend our selves only with Muskets, playing each

to other all night without ceasing, and yet thankes be to God without any damnidge on our part.

On Tuesday morning the Lord *Strange* sent a Message to the Towne, desiring a parley, at which he desired *Cessation* of *Arms* for 7. hours, which was granted, pretending he would come to Honourable conditions of Peace.

But most perfidiously in the time of Cessation, suffered his souldiers to plunder and pillage the Countries, and 2. or three Gentlemens Houses of good worth and credit, and very godly men, and seised upon a great house near the Town, upon which he caused to be planted two pieces of Ordnance to shoot to the Towne, and about three of the clock in the afternoon the said Lord sent his Propositions of Peace to the town, *to wit*.

I.

That they in the town should be disarmed, and delivered into the custody of the said Lord *Strange*.

Secondly,

2. That he with his Army might have free passage through the Towne which if they would grant, no prejudice or injury by him nor any of his Souldiers should be offered either to the persons or goods of any of the Townesmen; But wee refusing the same, he would then continue his seige and daiely assault with all the force he could; upon which Answer was returned wee would in no wise grant his demands, nor any other Propositions he should make, for he had violated his promise intimated of their cessation, contrary to the law of Armes upon which he commanded again to renew the fight discharging his Ordnance as fast as might be, in this fight were slain Sir *Gilbert Gerrat* and about 200 his men, and 18. taken prisoners and brought into our town; still the exchange of shot continuing all or most part of the night, not one of our Souldiers slain, only one man unarmed.

On Wednesday morning the fight began afresh, and about twelve of the clock, about fourescore of our men issued out of the Town to the Adversary, with whom we had a sharp battell continuing for the space of 3. hours, but in the end the Enemy gave back, and began to retreat in this skirmish, we slew of the Malignants 30 persons, and took 25. prisoners or thereabouts, then both sides in the main Body of the Armyes ceased fight, most part of the night, of them that were slain in this skirmish was one Captain Stowell, but no other of Note.

On Thursday the fight began again our men keeping the town, and shooting from the same, till about ten of the clock, then were sallyed out about 1500. in compleat order, and gave the enemy full battaile, which with good courage they continued about 4 houres at length, their souldiers began to run away, and grow weary of the fight, then they sounded a retreate for that time till the next day, this day was slain of the malignant Party about 30. persons more, and about 15. taken prisoners.

On Friday the fight again began, and then the Lord Strange commanded their Ordnance to be charged with small Bullets, to the end to scatter amongst us, but praised be God, none of our side were yet slain, we issued not out of the town this day till about two of the clock, and then marched out 2000. of us, with good hopes to have ended the siege, and routed our enemies, but it fell out contrary, after about 2. or 3. houres fight with much courage on our side, the Souldiers of the enemy still running away in great numbers, being almost wearied, we sounded a retreat, for that night which the Lord Strange and his souldiers were right glad of not offering the least assault that night, this day were slain of their side not above 10 persons as we can know for certain, and about 2 more taken prisoners, none yet through the providence and great mercy of God is slain on our part, onely in our retreat, by misfortune 3. of our men were slain by our own souldiers, shooting from the Towne.

On Saterday morning the Lord Strange again sent a Message to the Town for a cessation for two dayes, and in the meane time to have a Treaty for Peace. But we conceive that this was but to delay time, thereby thinking to have new supplyes, and to effect some treachery against our town, we refused this request, and again sallyed out of the Town with about 2000. of our men, which they perceiving began to discharge, still their souldiers declining, but yet there main body standing stoutly to it, and after being weary, and powder being scarce, a retreat was on both sides sounded, and a Cessation agreed upon till Munday morning.

This day were slain of the Malignants about 10. or 12. and 18. taken prisoners, after we were again in the Town, we refreshed our selves as well as might be, and afterwards fell into examination of the prisoners we had taken, being in all about 80. and the number that were slain about 200. some report 200. some more, but I suppose you Sir, desire the Truth, as neere as I can learne upon examination of our prisoners, they said they fought against us with small courage, and did not well understand the cause for which they fought.

Thu

Thus Sir you have heard our ſure yet troubleſome Proceedings of ſeven nights, and ſixe days with the Malignants, I would entreat you when you have read theſe Lines to preſent them to the other Members of the Houſe of Commons, or the whole Houſe ſitting, that you would underſtand the cauſe why our Town and County is ſo much aymed at by the Malignant Party as it is more then all other Counties of the Kingdome are out of their protection, but put to defend themſelves the weakeſt of any.

Yours ever to be commanded

Manchester

October 2. THO: HAWLEY

FINIS.

K. Pp. Lond. Speed. Geo. 93

Speciall and Remarkable Passages of the proceedings of both *Houses* of *Parliament*, and from divers places of this Kingdome, from Saterday the first of October to the sixt, conteyning these particulars following.

A debate in the House of Commons concerning Irish affaires and sending forthwith the Earle of Leicester Lord Deputy with a new Commission; and also reliefe for the poore Protestants with Money and Cloathes.

Information that the Earle of Warwick hath taken divers Ships laden with Money and Ammunition which were for the Kings use.

A motion made in the House of Commons upon a complaint made of divers souldiers against one Captaine *Browne* living in Southwarke.

A motion made in the House of Commons on the behalfe of the Keeper of the Park at Farnham, against such as hath spoiled his Majesties Deare.

Letters of intelligence from York-shire of the proceedings of the Lord *Fairfax*, and sir *John Hotham* against the Malignants in that County.

Letters of intelligence from Lincolne, of the apprehending of sir *William Scrope*, sir *John Dallison* and others.

Information from Mynhead of Marquesse *Hertford*, and the Lord *Paulets* going into Wales, together with the names of all those which went along with him.

Information from Shrewsbury that his Majesty hath gathered together his Army, and there intends to tarry for the comming of his Excellency the Lord Generall with his Petition, and order from both Houses of Parliament.

Information from Glocester that the Malignants have suppressed that Towne, and keepe the same for the use of his Majesty.

Information from Worcester that his Excellency hath fortified that Towne, and spent some time in searching out the Malignants in the same, now intending to march to Shrewsbury to meet his Majesty.

A Committee by both Houses chosen to consider of the Landing of Merchant strangers in this Kingdome.

Octo: 6 Printed at London for T. B. 1642.

CERTAIN

Speciall and Remarkable Passages of the proceedings

of both Houses of Parliament, from

divers places of this Kingdome, after-

day the 11th of October, to the last, concerning

Printed at London for T. B. 1642.

Certaine

Speciall and remarkable Passages of the proceedings of both Houses of *Parliament*, and from divers places of this Kingdome, from Saturday the first of October to the sixt, containing these particulars following, &c.

BOth Houses being met they fell into a great debate concerning the Earle of *Leicester* and his Majesties staying of him from going into *Ireland*, being so much desired in that Kingdome, and endeavoured by the Parliament here, and having received information by Letters from the said Earle that his Majesty hath given him some instructions to be observed by him in *Ireland*, which neither of both Houses have bin acquainted with or consented to the same, not knowing to what purpose they tend; having bin greatly debated in both Houses at a conference betweene them. It was resolved upon the Question, the said Earle should be sent for to answer some Objections that may be made against him, and to deliver his instructions to be debated and considered by both Houses for their consent and approbation thereof, and what shall be by them conceived to be inconvenient or dangerous by them to be altered and amended, which was ordered accordingly; Wednesday following

being the last day appointed for their full debate and determination thereupon.

THen the Committee for the *Irish* affaires made Report to the House of Commons what provision of Money, Ammunition and other things of necessity must be with all speed conveniently sent for the reliefe of the Protestant Army at *Dublin* in *Ireland*; That is to say, ten tun of Match, five hundred barrels of Powder, two great peices of Ordinance, three hundred suites of Cloaths, and tenne thousand pounds in Money; upon which the House of Commons after some debate thereupon had, sent a Message to the Lords desiring a conference, at which the said Report was read, and by both Houses agreed unto, and the said ten thousand pounds, with the Powder and Match aforesaid was ordered to be sent with all speed that might be to *Dublin*, according to the said Report.

LIkewise information was brought to the House, that the Earle of *Warwick* with tenne of his ships hath lately fought with about eighteene sayle of Spanish ships comming from the West Indies, and that he hath sunke two of them and boorded two, laden with Bullion and other rich Marchandize which he hath seised for the use of King and Parliament; and that he hath taken three other ships comming from *Holland* laden with Money and Ammunition, intended for the service of the King in his Warres against the Parliament, which he hath also seised on, and is sending them with the two Spanish ships to London, to be disposed of by the Parliament.

THen was a motion made in the House of Commons on the behalfe of divers Souldiers, upon a complaint by them made against one Captaine *Browne* living in Southwarke, and some their Officers, they having bin in pay under his command about 8 weekes their Company consisting of above 60. but have received none of their pay in all this time, nor once exercised or Trained, being able and lusty men, and fit for service, and willing to hazard their Lives in service of the Parliament and State. That for want of their pay they have beene much necessitated and had

had bin constrained to have departed from their Colours, into their Countrey of Sussex out of which they came, if Lieutenant *Barnes* with his good and courteous incouragement of them and relieving their necessities out of his owne estate had not kept them together, he having spent 60. pound in sustaining of them with meat, drink, and lodging. Therefore they desire the said Lieutenant *Barnes* may be made their Captaine, under whom they will willingly serve, conceaving him to be an able Souldier, fit to be a Commander, and well affected in the Protestant Religion, and to the proceedings of both Houses of Parliament. But if he maynot be their Captain, they shall not so cheerfully serve under any other, upon which the Commons after debate thereof, had voted the said Captaine Browne a Delinquent and ordered he should be sent for to the House to answer the complaints made against him, and as for the chusing of a new Captain it was referd to the consideration of a Committee.

Likewise a motion was made in the House of Commons on the behalfe of the keeper of *Farnham* parke, that such persons as he hath complained on in his Petition for killing his Majesties Deer, might be sent for to answer the same, and proceeded against according to Law and Iustice, which likewise was referred to the consideration of a Committee.

THen was read in the House of Commons letters from Yorkshire, intimating that the Lord *Fairfax*, Sir *William Fairefax*, Mr. *Hotham* and divers other Gentlemen of that County have had a skirmish with the Malignants under the command of Sir *William Savile*, which continued but a little while, for the said Sir *William Savile* with his company ran away, leaving most of their armes behind them, & that they are fled quite out of that Countrey into Northumberland, where they are informed they will againe renew their forces, many of that County favouring the Kings cause, and come againe for Yorkshire, against whose comming, they will provide what force they can to entertain them.

This

THis day was in the House of Commons letters from Lincolne, informing that Sir *Christopher Wray* and some other of the Deputy Lieutenants of that County have had a skirmish on Thursday last neer Lincolne with *Monsieur de Willoughby*, Sir *William Scroop*, Sir *John Dallison*, Sir *Ralph Sadler*, Sir *John Steron* and divers other Malignants in the County, in which skirmish were taken prisoners Sir *William Scroop* and Sir *John Dallison*, and about 8. or 9. of their men slain, and the rest fled, which prisoners they retaine in safe custody till they have further order from the Parliament.

THen was read in the House of Commons letters from Minhead, intimating that Marquesse Hartford & the Lord *Paulet* in a disguised habit in a little boat are escaped into Wales, That the Earle of Bedford having notice thereof, assaulted the Town very fiercely, for preventing the like escape of others his complices that were therein, upon which the Townsmen opened the gates and gave his Lordship entrance with his Souldiers, who hath possest himself thereof, and apprehended about 50. of the Malignants, and is now fortifying the Towne for the use of the King and Parliament.

THere was also letters read in the House of Commons from Shrewsbury, setting forth that his Majesty hath there gathered together his Army and intends there to stay for the comming of his Excellency the Lord Generall to give him a treaty concerning the present affaires of the Kingdome, although he is perswaded there-from by his Councellors about him, That it is hoped that when his Excellency comes thether, a happy union & peace will yet be concluded between the King and his Parliament.

LIkewise there were Letters read from Glocester that the malignant party have suppressed that Towne, and are fortifying the same for his Majesty against the Parliament, desiring Present ayd may be sent into that County to suppress the Malignants before they have made themselves any strong

gar

ger, the House promising to take the same into speedy consideration.

THen was also read in the House of Commons a letter from Worcester, declaring that his Excellency hath fortified that Town, and given order to stop and secure all bridges and passages between that Town and Ludlow for the preventing of Prince *Robert* and his Army to returne againe into that County for to pillage and robbe the Inhabitants thereof as they do in all other places where ever they come, and when the passages shall be so secured, his Excellency is resolved to march with his Army to Shrewsbury, fortifying and placing of Garisons in every considerable Towne as hee marcheth, to secure the same from further attempts of the Malignant Party.

THen the House of Commons fell into debate touching the lading of Merchant Strangers in this Kingdome, and appointed a Committee to sit in the afternoone to consider of the same, and to make enquiry after such Spanish and French Merchants as are lately landed at Southampton, Dover, and other ports, and make report thereof to the House the next morning, the Committee sitting accordingly in the Exchequer Chamber.

The names of the prinicpall of those that went for *Wales* the 22. of *September* with the Marquesse of *Hartford*, viz.

Marquesse Hartford *and his two sons.*
Lord Seymor *and two other of the* Seymors.
Lord Paulet.
Sir John Paulet *and his brother.*
Sir John Stowell.
Mr. John Stowell.
Mr. Edward Stowell.
Sir Ralfe Hopton.

Sir

Sir *Edward Rodney*.
Sir *Ralph Sidnham*.
Sir *Francis Dodington*.
Sir *Henry Bartley* high Sheriffe of *Sommerſet*.
Sir *Charles Bartley*.
The high Sheriffe of Dorcetſhire.
Sir *Richard Lead*.
Sir *Francis Hanly*.
Colonell *Aſhburnham*.
Colonell *Lunsford*.
Colonell *Hooker*.
Colonell *Lawdy*.
Captain *Digby*.
Maſter *Smith* Lord *P*
in Law.
Maſter *Killegrew*.
Mr *Edward Windham*
Maſter *George Windham*
Maſter *Hugh Windham*
Maſter *Anthony Hanly*
with many others.

FINIS.

15

DIGITUS DEI,

OR,

A miraculous Victory

gained by the English, upon the Rebels in Munſter:

Expreſt in two Letters,

Written to Lievtenant Colonell St. *Leger*, Sonne and Heire to the Right Honourable Sir *William* St. *Leger*, Knight, late Lord Preſident of Munſter, by his Lordſhips late Secretary,

RICHARD GETHING.

September 20. 1642.



Orlo: 6K

London, Printed for *Thomas Bates*. 164

DIGITUS DEI,

OR,

A miraculous Victory

gained by the English, upon
the Rebels in Munster:

Express'd in two Letters,

Written to Lieutenant Colonell St. Leger,
Sonne and Heire to the Right Honourable
Sir William St. Leger, Knight, late Lord President
of Munster, by his Lordships late Secretary,

RICHARD GETHING.

September 20. 1642.

London, Printed for Thomas Bates. 1642.

A miraculous victory gained by the English upon the Rebels in Munster.

Most honoured Sir,

SUch an action as I shall now recount unto you, would (in justice) require a farre more skilfull cheerfull pen, then mine is, or can be to relate it: For indeed it is in all the parts of it so full of reflections upon the super-excellency of honour and valour in that noble Lord of Inchiquin, that I can onely grieve I have neither power or parts to set forth the one or the other with right, much lesse with advantage to his Lordships high merit on worth.

The enemy was now growne full of pride, and expectation of a generall Conquest, by the surrender of all the Castles and strong holds in the County of Lymericke into their hands; (upon the noise and reputation meerly of one of the fairest and choisest peeces of battery which they had drawne forth of the Fort of Lymericke) and by the succession of forrain supplies of Armes, Munition, and Commanders, and had advanced as far as Liscarroll into this County, with an undoubted resolution to carry all before them: When my Lord of Inchiquin concluded wisely and resolutely (I will not say against, but besides the opinion of some grave Seniors) that some impediment must be given to this impetuous torrent, which otherwise in all probability would drowne this whole Province in a generall inundation. For in case we for upon our retreat Corke, and let them take in the other (smaller) Townes and Garrisons (which undoubtedly they would doe, having Cavaliers, Munition, and men sufficient) then were we most certaine of being therein besieged. The provisions to hold out such a siege we found were not sufficient for 3 Moneths, and the probability they were in to cut us off the benefit of the River (when they were masters of the field) on both sides,

made us doubtfull of reposing on supplies from England [illegible]
straictions there for [illegible]
the field therefore must we expect to receive a footing and [illegible]
in this Province for his Majesties forces. To which purpose my
L. of Inchiquin designed the drawing forth all such forces as might
be conveniently spared out of Corke, Kin-sale, Bandon, Yoghall, &c.
and appointed Buttevant and Ballis-beg the Rendezvous. [illegible]
Fryday night last were assembled together a body of 1800 foot and
of horse 360; with which and six field peeces we marched the
day (by breake of day) to the Camp which lay before Li[illegible]
and had that very night taken in the Castle; where we found
in a posture which spoke their expectation of us, and resolution
encounter us. About eight of the clocke my Lord drew downe
horse, within some shot of them, and made a stand
view their Army; But their Ambuscadoes would not permit us
safety there, so as we were forced to retire towards our foot (which
was not come up) and in that Retreit the Lord of Kilmalosky was
unhappily shot.

So soon as our foot were advanced, we forced our [illegible]
their Ambuscadoes from off the mountaine downe into the plaine
before Liscarroll, and brought downe our whole Army. The Enemy
stood ready in three great bodies (the least equalling if not much
surpassing ours in bulke) to receive us, and whilst our men were pla-
cing in due order they played us very hard with their Artillery (which
they had planted likewise ready against our comming) having raised
new batteries purposely to salute us with the better advantage. And
indeed great odds they could not desire of us; for the ground they
had made their own choice before hand, and had raised several
works and fortifications, not only for their Ordnance but for their
men. The Castle which should have annoyed them was their own,
and every thing as apt to their purpose as their owne hearts could
contrive them: Yet it seemes they wanted the conduct of their
great Generall the Lord of Hosts, for notwithstanding all the dis-
advantages on our part, yet did we with our small Ordnance doe ef-
[illegible]
fectu[illegible]

...ssion to them, and they with their great odes rode on us; Sheri-
...dan was spoke to imbattaile his men: Well Sir (quoth Powrey)
my Lord gave the command of the foote himselfe with great courage
and resolution then is expedient or necessary (as I may lay it) in a
Generall, charged with his own Troop upon the Enemies Horse, of
which *Oliver Stephenson*'s Troop had the Van, whom my Lord slew
with his owne hand, and tooke his horse with an extreame fight but
he had but a little by a mistake in the wheeling off of the first rancke (as
they were commanded) the rest of my Lords Troop fell into disor-
der, and had left his Lordship engaged amongst the enemies if Cap-
taine *Stafford* and *Bridges* had not speedily rallyed them, and charged
home and through; insomuch as they began to flye the greatest part
their horses were of.

The foote on both sides were in a very great height of contestation,
and performed singularly well on all the Rebells perceiving their
horse about to leave them behinde, and thought running, more be-
fitting the better exercise, in an instant they betooke them to flight, and
were in the chase, which we continued for the space of two miles. But
whilst unfortunately an Alarum was brought that one whole body of
the enemy stood still unmooved (and very probable it was that it
might be) whereupon immediately a Retreat was sounded, and the chase
given over, least the enemy might take our foote in disorder, being
one body of the three was a very equall and competent match for
our whole Army. When we had intelligence of the Enemy, we fell to
a fresh pursuite, but by that time they had recovered Sir *Arthure*
Tyrrells house near Kilbolane, and were out of our reach. The number
of them slaine I doe believe was above 200 (for very many were kil-
led in woods, mountaines and corne, where our Malitemen could come
at them.

Stephenson and one *Pilsworth* that carryed Sonne to *Mac-Carty Moore*
were the only men of quality that we can have an account of, though
it is probable many others of good ranke fell. *Dwyer* a Captaine, and
amongst the rest (as a prisoner of ours which escaped from amongst
them averred) *Purcell* their Lievtenant Generall. At this battell were

the major part of the forces of this Province, except the O Neals and Mac Carty Reagh, it is not possible to tell what there is between five and six thousand fighting men, besides horse and other Rabble that follow an Army. We tooke prisoners, Colonell Rotho (the Lord of Thurles son) Thomas Burgo one who supplyes Sir Philip Percivals place amongst them, Captain Rotlan (who was in Dungarvan Castle when my Lord your father tooke it) and 3 or 4 Ensignes and other Rogues, only worth the hanging. Some 14 of their Colours were taken, all their Artillery; but especially their great peece, which is a very brave one, the meere reputation whereof (I am confident) (as it did in the County of Lymerick) hath wonne in all the strong holds in this County. But Almighty God hath prevented them, few of their Armes could be taken, yet some were found throwne away and hid in bushes. Much of their ammunition, or rather all, we tooke, as Munition, Victuall, and spare Armes (in which you may perceive they are not necessitated that way) is admirable that such a multitude of men having the choice perforce of quality from all parts, being so well appointed, provided and furnished, and having so many severall advantages, should quit such a Towne, such a Castle, such Artillery, to a poore handfull of men in comparison of them: But *Digitus Dei hic*, and therefore, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis sed nomini tuo*, &c.

Thus Sir you have the full draught of a cleare victorie full of honour and valour. The extreame haste of this dispatch will not suffer me to descant further on it, or to enlarge my selfe either in this or in any other particular. Only I beseech you urge one word for my excuse to my Uncle, and impart this relation to him. And so rest Sir, I beseech you, a faithfull profession of my being

Your most respective obliged servant,

Corke 21. Septemb. 1642.

RICHARD GETHIN.

A second Letter from the same hand to the same party, dated at Corke xvi. September 1641.

Most honoured Sr

BY the Packet intrusted to the conveyance of Captaine *Price*, I made bold to give you a rough and rude account of the happy and glorious victory much like vs at the battaile of Liscarroll, wherein lonely fell short (for matter of substance) in the number of the slaine. For that the Rebels confesse (upon leave given them to bury their dead) that they lose eleven hundred of their men, and that they have found about seven eight hundred dead Corpes upon the place of the battaile and chace.

They were so confident of subduing us that all the Newtrals, as *Mac Donnells, Mac Owens*, and many of the Rebels themselves, were with great number of horse, upon severall hills, not farre distant from the fight, where they attended the successe of that dayes action, with designe to have fallen upon us in our flight, if it had pleased God we had beene put to it, which way soever wee had taken; but the Almighty determined so of us, that albeit we were but a handfull in respect of them, and their numerous multitude of men, yet they fled before halfe our Army came to fight; for onely two divisions of our Musketeers (which were led on bravely by your Cozen *Piggot*, and Sir *John Browne*) charged them, when they thought fit to make us runne after them. Their men whom wee tooke prisoners (being no meane unknowne people) say confidently, that if we had not given them this dayes meeting, they had marched the next day to Moyallo, their designe being to cut betwixt us and our retreat to Corke; But man purposes, and God onely determines.

Sir,

Sir, I wish with all my heart I were able to give you so ...
account of your particular affaires, and especially here, as you ...
justly expect, especially in that of your horses: But my ...
Inchequin (who is full of tender regards of all your concerns) ...
hath taken the care of your horses upon himselfe, and doth as ...
as in him lies, serve you that way. Yet three of your best Geld...
are lost in service, Leigh, Walley, and Keyes, the two last ...
my Lord your fathers death, the other at Liscarroll.

I had almost forgot to tell you, that we had kill'd on our side ...
fifteene men, and so many hurt as made the number ... or thirty at the most. My Lord of Inchequin received a ... head (but God be thanked not dangerous) as also ... his hand; Captaine Loftus the like; and Captaine ... in his thigh. Take likewise the weight of the great ... ing 7686 l.

I should enlarge your trouble, if I were not affronted with ... toward disposition my selfe, and a suddaine ... in my poore Sarah, who prefers you her respective ... hearty prayers for your happinesse and safety, as likewise doth ...

Corke 16. September ... 1642.

FINIS.

A true Copy of the Instructions agreed upon by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament,

and sent to his Excellency the Earl of Essex, Lord General of the Army, concerning the advancing of his Forces towards his Majesty, &c.

Also the last Declaration and Votes

Of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, concerning the late Treaty of Peace in Yorke-shire.

Wherein they renounce the sayd agreement as being very prejudiciall and dangerous unto the whole Kingdome, that any one County should stand as Newters, and withdrew themselves from the assistance of the rest.

Together with the instructions, sent to Mr. Edward *Hotham*, and Sir *Edward Rhodes*, with power to them to publish it, and withall to pardon all those that shall submit within ten dayes.

Die Martis, Octob. 4. 1642.

ORdred by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that this Declaration and Votes be forthwith printed and published. *Iohn Brown, Clerr. Parli.*

Printed for Fr. Coles. 1642. *Octob.* 6.

A true Copy of the Inſtru-

ctions agreed upon by the Lords

and Commons aſſembled in Parliament,

and ſent to his Excellency the Earl of

Lord General of the Army

Alſo the late Declaration

Of the Lords and Commons

Yorke-ſhire.

Wherein they renounce the ſaid agreement

being very prejudicial and

ſtand as Neuters, and withdrew them-

ſelves from the aſſiſtance of

the reſt.

Together with the inſtruction

and Sir Edward

ſelfe, and wholly to depend upon the direction

within ſix dayes.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament that

theſe Declarations and Votes be forthwith printed and

published.

Iohn Brown Clerk. Parl.

A true Coppy of the Instructions agreed upon by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, and sent to his Excellency the Earle of *Essex*, &c.

FIRST you shall carefully restraine all Impieties, Prophaneness, and Disorders, Ryot, Insolence, and plundering in your Souldiers, as well by strict and severe punishment of such offences as by all other meanes which you in your wisedomes shall thinke fit.

SEcondly, your Lordship is to march with such forces as you think fit towards the Army, raised in his Majesties Name against the Parliament and Kingdome, and with them, or any part of them, to fight at such time and place as you shall judge to conduce to the peace and safety of the Kingdome. And you shall use your utmost endeavours by Battaile or otherwise to rescue his Majesties person, and the persons of the Prince, and Duke of *Yorke* out of the hands of those desperate persons who are now about them.

THirdly, you shall take an opportunity in some safe and Honourable way to cause the Petition of both houses

of Parliament herewith sent unto you, to be presented unto his Majestie, and if his Majesty shall please thereupon to with- draw himselfe from the forces now about him, and to resort to the Parliament, you shall cause all these forces to dishand, and shall secure and defend his Majestie with a sufficient strength in his returne.

FOurthly, You shall publish and declare, that if any, who have been seduced by the false aspersions cast upon the proceedings of the Parliament, as to assist the King in the acting of those dangerous Counsels, shall willingly within ten dayes after such publication in the Army, returne to their duty, not doing any hostile act within the time limited and joyne themselves with the Parliament, in defence of Religion, his Majesties person, the Liberties and Lawes of the Kingdome, and priledges of parliament, with their persons and Estates, as the Members of both Houses, and the rest of the Kingdome have done: That the Lords and Commons will be ready upon their submission to receive such person in such manner as they shall have cause to acknowledge they have bin used with clemency and favour: Provided, that this shall not extend to admit any man into eyther House of Parliament who stands suspended, without giving satisfaction to the House whereof hee shalbe a Member: and except all persons who stand impeached, or particularly voted in eyther house of Parliament for any delinquency whatsoever; Excepting likewise such Adherents of those who stand impeached in Parliament of Treason, as have been eminent persons & chiefe Actors in those Treasons; And except the Earle of *Bristoll*, the Earle of *Cumberland*, the Earle of *New-Castle*, the Earle *Rivers*, Secretary *Nicholas*, Mr. *Endimion Porter*, Mr. *Edward Hide*, the Duke of *Richmond*, the Earle of *Carnarvan*, the Lord Viscount *New-*

ar-

arke, the Lord Viscount *Falkland* being one of the principall Secretaries of State to his Majesty.

FIfthly, you shall apprehend the persons of all these who stand impeached in Parliament, or have bin declared traytors by both or either house of *Parliament*, or other Delinquents, and you shall send them unto the *Parliament* to receive condigne punishment according to their offences.

SIxthly, you shall receive the Loanes, or Contributions of Money, Plate, or Horse from all his Majesties loving Subjects, which they shall be willing to make for the suport of the charge of the Army, and better discharge of the service of the Common-wealth; And you shall certifie all such summes of Money, and the value of such horses, that the persons thereupon may have the publike faith for payment to be made unto them, as to others of his Majesties subjects upon the subscription of Mony, Plate, and Horse.

SEventhly, you shall carefully protect all his Majesties loving Subjects from Rapine and violence by any of the Cavaliers, or other of his Majesties pretended Army, or by any of the Souldiers of the Army which you command; and you shall cause the Armour and Goods of any person to be restored to them from whom they have beene unjustly taken.

EIghthly you shall observe such further Directions and Instructions as you from time to time receive from both Houses of Parliament.

A Declaration of the Lords and Commons Assembled in parliament.

UPon perusall of certaine Articles dated the 29. of September 1642. betwixt the L. *Fairefax* and divers other well affected to the peace of the Kingdome, and Mr. *Bellasis* and others, who have declared themselves in sundry Actions, opposers of the proceedings of the Parliament, and furtherers of the war raised against them, and of many grievous pressures lately exercised upon the good Subjects, inhabitants of the County of Yorke. And being confident that if the L. *Fairefax* and the rest of the Gentlemen on his part had knowne by what Acts and designes the agreement was plotted on the other side, and how dangerous and mischievous it must needs be both in the effect, and in the consequence to the good intentions to the peace of that County, and of the Kingdome, as such, that they would never have consented to any thing so prejudiciall thereunto, as this seeming Neutrallity would be, by making that County many waies serviceable to those ill Councells, whereby his Majesty is incited against his subjects, and so very useful to the Parliament, in prosecuting of them. Wherefore the Lords and Commons do declare,

First that none of the parties to that agreement had any authority by any Act of theirs to bind that County to any such Neutrallity as is mentioned in that agreement, it being a peculiar and proper power and priviledge of Parliament, where the whole body of the Kingdome is represented, to bind all or any part thereof.

2 That it is very prejudiciall and dangerous to the whole Kingdome, that one County should withdraw themselves from the assistance of the rest, to which they are bound by Law, and by severall Orders and declarations of Parliament.

3 That it is very derogatory to the power and authority of Parliament, that any private men should take upon them to suspend the execution of the Ordinance of the Militia, declared by both Houses to be according to Law, and very necessary at this time for the preservation of of the peace and safety of the Kingdome.

4 That many things in that agreement are very unequall, contrary to the nature of a Neutrallity, (being much more advantagious to one side, then to the other) prejudiciall to the publike defence of the Kingdome, undertaken

undertaken by the Parliament and would be a great impediment to that good agreement betwixt his Majesty and his subjects, which both houses doe so earnestly desire. And to avoyd

For these and other Reasons, we hold our selves bound in conscience, in performance of the severall Protestations that wee have made, to hinder all further proceedings upon that agreement, And therefore it is Ordered by both Houses of Parliament, that no such Neutrallity be observed in that County, which will advantage the Force raised against the Parliament and no way benefit York-shire, but rather most dangerous to them by keeping that County without any defensive force, whereby it will be open to the King to bring back his Army at his pleasure, and to make that his winter quarter, to which the plenty of that County, and neerness of Neucastle for supplies by sea, are like to invite him; whereby it will become the seat of the War, and if this should not fall out, yet in the eeld of the Kingdome he keepes, do what hope can York-shire have but to be involved in the publike misery? And therefore in wisdome for themselves, and justice to the state, they ought not to withdraw themselves from the common cause, but to joyne with the Parliament in the defence of the Religion and liberty of the whole Kingdome, and with them to labour by all good meanes to procure a generall Peace, and protection from the King for all his subjects, which both the Houses of Parliament have by many humble Petitions desired of his Majesty, but cannot yet obtaine: And if they should suffer any particular Counties to divide themselves from the rest of the Kingdome, it will be a meanes of bringing all to ruine and destruction. Wherefore it is further Declared, that neither the L. *Fairefax*, nor the Gentlemen of Yorke-shire, who are parties to those Articles, nor any other inhabitants of that County, are bound by any such agreement, but they are required to passe their former Resolutions, of maintaining and assisting the Parliament in defence of the common cause, according to their generall protestation, wherein they are bound with the rest of the Kingdome, and against the particular Protestation by themselves lately made; And according to such Orders and Commissions as they shall receive from both Houses of Parliament, From the Committee of both and Commons appointed for the safety of the King Joint, or from the Earle of Essex, Lord Generall.

Die

Die Martis, Octob. 4. 1642.

Resolved upon the Question by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament.

THat Master *Hotham*, and Sir *Edward* [illegible] and other the Committees for raysing money, plate, and Horse, for the defence of King and Kingdome in the County of Yorke; And such as they or any two of them shall nominate, be Commissioners for the advancing and raysing Monies, Horse, and Plate upon the propositions, shall have power to appoint Commissaries to value the Horse, and Treasurers to receive the Monies and plate.

Resolved upon the Question.

That Master *Hotham* and Sir *Edward Rodes*, have the like Instructions as other Counties, with this addition that they shall have power to seize and apprehend all Delinquents that are so Voted by the Parliament, and al such others as delinquents, as shall or do shew themselves opposite and disobedient to the orders and proceedings of Parliament.

Resolved upon the Question, &c.

That the 4 Article of the Lord Generalls instructions, shall be extracted and sent to Mr. *Hotham*, &c. with power to them to publish it.

FINIS

THE TRVE COPIE OF A LETTER

WRITTEN

By *Captaine Wingate*, now Prisoner in Ludlow, taken by the Malignant Partie, in the late Battaile fought at *Worcester*; and sent to a *Member* of the Hoble house of *Commons*.

Setting forth

The inhumane, barbarous and savage Cruelties towards him, and how he was compelled to ride through the Army naked: with his Resolution to die in the PARLIAMENTS *Cause*.

Whereunto is added

The Kings Majesties Speech at *Shrewsbury*, on *Michaelmas* Eve last, to the *Gentry* and *Commons* of the County of SALLOP, there assembled.

LONDON,
Printed for WILLIAM LEY, at Pauls-Chaine.
October, the 7th. MDCXLII.

THE TRVE COPIE OF A LETTER

WRITTEN

By Captaine Pygott now Prisoner in Ludlow, taken by the Valiant Paris, in the late Battaile fought at Worcester, and sent to a Member of the Noble House of Commons.

Shewing how

The inhumane, barbarous and Savage Cruelties towards him, and how he was compelled to ride through the Army with his Reflexion to the Tayle.

As the PARLIAMENT Cart.

The King's Majesties Speech at Worcester, on Sunday last, to the Gentry and Commons of the County of Salop, there assembled.

LONDON,
Printed for WILLIAM LEY, at Pauls-Chain.
October, the 7th. MDCXLII.

The true Copy of a Letter, written by Captain WINGATE, now prisoner in Ludlow; taken by the Malignant party, in the late Battell fought at *Worcester*, and sent to a Worthy Member of the Honourable House of Commons: setting forth the Inhumane, Barbarous, and Savage Cruelties towards him and some other Prisoners also taken by the said Malignants, and his resolution to dye *in the Parliaments cause.*

SIR:

MY unfortunate estate and sorrowfull condition, into which I am now plunged, maketh me almost incapable of writing the true sense thereof. But ever having found you a constant and faithfull friend to me in time of prosperity, and opportunity now favouring me by Gods mercy I am encouraged, in what measure I am able, to acquaint you with my sufferings, hoping you will so farre condole with me my misfortunes, as to present them on my behalfe to the Honourable House of Commons.

When I came from *Oxford* with that worthy Commander Colonell *Lundy* (whose unfortunate death I much lament) under Colonell *Brown*, our Commander in Chiefe, to *Worcester*, we had a loose and doubtfull skirmish, which I verily perswade my selfe is already made known both to the High Court of Parliament,

and most part of the Kingdome. Therefore I forbeare to mention any thing further touching the same, but only to informe you of mine own particular suffering since I have been in their barbarous custody.

When I was by them brought into *Worcester*, I was brought before Prince *Robert*, and Lord *Maurice* his Brother, and some other of their Commanders, and was with much scornfull and opprobrious reproch examined the cause of my resistance against the Kings Majestie, my Liege Lord and Soveraigne; To which I answered; I never resisted or attempted to doe any thing against His Majesties Person or lawfull commands joyned with consent of his great Councel, both Houses of Parliament, whose Edicts and Ordinances I conceived (so long as they tended to the preservation of His Majesties Person, Honour and Dignity, and peace of His Majesties Kingdomes, and establishment of Religion) ought to be observed and obeyed. Then was I demanded if the Parliament command one thing, and His Majesty expresly commands the contrary, whether I ought not to obey the King before the Parliament. To which I answered, that I conceived the High Court of Parliament being the representative body of the whole Kingdome, and so the greatest Councell, and elected of the choisest and learnedst persons in the Kingdome, and so the wisest, of the most aged and experienced members, and so the greatest could best judge of the affaires, and of such Lawes and ordinances which might most tend to the safety and tranquility of this State and Commou-wealth. Therefore I conceived I ought in conscience to obey their commands. In which opinion I resolve to live and die, and now I am fallen into your

hands,

hands, I muſt ſubmit my ſelfe to your mercy or cruelty, either of which ſhall bewelcome to me for the manifeſtation of my loyalty to both King and Parliament conjunctly, but not divided.

The Prince was much enraged at my ſo peremptory anſwers, calling me Parliament-dog, Round-head, and the like, and if I had the gift of patience to ſuffer, I ſhould in ſhort time be made a rare Martyr. To which I anſwered, Gods will be done: Then was I commanded out of his preſence, and kept in ſafe cuſtody, til further order from him, giving command for preſent preparation for all his ſouldiers to leave the Town, and advance towards *Ludlow*, where Prince *Charles* keepes his Court, and to leave behind them Colonell *Brown*, Colonell *Sands*, and Captain *Berry*, being ſore wounded that they could not goe along with them without danger of death.

About three of the clock in the morning they went from the Town, having bound my hands behind mee, commanding me to be ſet on horſe-back, and bound to the horſe, and to ride before them, only one Trooper before, and one on each ſide mee for my guard, who rode with their Piſtols in their hands ready charged, turning them often towards mee, ſwearing dam them, and periſh them (if I would not turne on the Kings ſide) they would ſhoot me to the heart, to which I anſwered nothing, but that time ſhould make known my further intention.

Being come about five or ſix miles from *Worceſter*, beginning to be day-light, command was gsven by Prince *Robert*, that unleſſe I would preſently renounce the cauſe that I endevoured to defend on the behalfe of the

Parliament, and declare that I conceived their Proceedings to be against the Lawes of the Land, and dishonourable to the King, I should be presently stripped out of all my garments, and ride bound naked before them to *Ludlow*; which I refusing to doe, was most barbarously and inhumanely according to the Princes command effected. The scornfull reproches of those wicked Miscreants which I in that way sustained did not trouble nor daut my mind so much, as the harme and cold I caught by the weather being sharp, injured my Body.

Then comming to *Ludlow*, after they had exercised themselves with reviling and scorning of me, causing me so to ride through the Towne, command was given I should be taken off my horse and my clothes put on and brought before Prince *Robert*, who in a reviling manner asked mee if I had learned to beare and suffer, and if I would not yet recant and turne to them, they would proceed to judgement against me, with the cruellest torments they could devise to put mee to death, giving mee ten dayes libertie to consider with my self and returne my full Resolution at the time prefixed, commanding me to be againe put into Prison, and to be allowed necessary meat and drinke for preservation of my health, that thereby if I would joyne with them I might be the better able to doe them service.

Some other Prisoners which here they have also put into a close Prison, using them in the extreamest cruelties that may be devised, allowing them only bread and water for their sustentation, and so little, that if they long continue there, they will be starved to death.

Thus (Sir) having rudely given you to understand my

my present estate at this time, having opportunity, and obtained so much favour of the Keeper of the Prison, being somewhat well affected to the proceedings of the Parliament, but constrained to execute that place, who provided me of a trusty friend that I might confide in to deliver you this Letter, which if I shall be so happy before my death (which I expect at the day appointed) as to heare that you have received my Letter, I shall be glad; for no tortures, tormens or savage cruelties with Gods assistance shall alter or change my Loyalty to that grand and grave Senate the High Court of *Parliament*.

Thus hoping you will present my sufferings accordingly, and praying that God of his infinite mercy will be graciously pleased to prosper and protect the Proceedings of the high Court of Parliament, to the preservation of Peace, establishing of Religion, defending of the Liberties and Priviledges of *Parliament*, and of the Subject, and inchronizing his Majestie with honour and dignity, and his Posterity successively, to the joy of all true hearted Subjects.

From Ludlow *Castle*,
October 1. 1642.

Your obsrvant friend, and
a most dolefull Prisoner,

Capt. WINGATE.

FINIS.

HIS MAIESTIES SPEECH

at SHREVVSBVRY on MICHAELMAS Eve last, to the Gentry and Commons of the Countie of SALLOP, there assembled.

GENTLEMEN;

IT is some benefit to me from the Insolencies, and misfor- Which have driven me about, that they have brought me so good a part of my Kingdome, and so faithfull a part my people; I hope neither you nor I shall repent my co hither; I will doe my part that you may not: And of you I was confident before I came: the residence of an Army is not pleasant to any place, and mine may carry more feare with it, since be thought (being Robbed and spoiled of all my owne, and such terr to fright and keep all men from supplying me) I must only live upon and reliefe of my people; but bee not affraid, I would to God my poo iects sufferred no more by the Insolence and violence of that Army against me (though they have made themselves wanton even with then you shall doe by mine, and yet I feare I cannot prevent all I will doe my best; and this Ile promise you, no man shall bee a loos if I can helpe it; I have sent hither for a Mint, and will melt downe owne Plate, and expose my Land to sale or morgage, that if it bee I may bring the least pressure upon you. In the meane time I have moned you hither to invite you to doe that for me and your selves, maintenance of your Religion, the law of the Land (by which you that you have) which other men doe against Vs: Doe not suffer so cause to be lost for want of supplying mee with that, which will from you by those who pursue me with this violence, and whilst th men sacrifice their money Plate and utmost industry to destroy the C Wealth, be you no lesse liberall to preserve it. And assure your selves please God to blesse me with successe I shall remember the particular stance every man heere gives me to his advantage: However, it will after (how furiously the minds of men are now possessed) be honour comfort to you, that with some charge and trouble to your selves, you your part to support your King and preserve the Kingdome.

I desire M. Sheriffe, and the rest of the Gentlemen, to distribute themselves in that Method, that they may best receive the expressions which you shall make of your best affections, the which I will have particularly presented to me.

JOYFULL AND WELCOME NEWES FROM SHREWSBURY:

Declaring the Proceedings of both Armies neer *Shrewsbury*, with an exact Relation of a Battell fought before the Wals of the said Town, *October* 3. 1642.

Also a true Relation of a Battell fought in Wiltshire, *by the Earle of* Pembroke, *with* 500. *men, against the Lord* Coventry, *with* 1000. *Horse and Foot, Octob.* 4. *Wherein* 40. *Cavaliers were slaine,* 20. *taken Prisoners, and all the rest put to flight, with the losse of* 10. *men. Brought by the last Post, Octob.* 6.

Likewise Prince ROBERTS Propositions to His Majesty concerning the knighting of certain Officers under His Command.

Printed for Th. Rider. *October* 7. 1642.

JOYFULL AND WELCOME

NEWES

FROM

SHREWESBURY:

Declaring the Proceedings of both Armies
now there, with an exact Relation of a Battell
fought before the Walls of the said Town,
October 3. 1642.

Also a true Relation of a Battell fought in Wiltshire, by
the Earle of Pembroke, with 600. men, against the Lord
Cornwy, with 1000. Horse and Foot, Octob. 4. Where in
20. Cavaliers were slaine, 20. taken Prisoners, and all
the rest put to flight with the losse of 10. men.
Brought by the last Post, Octob. 6.

Likewise Prince ROBERTS Propositions to
His Majesty concerning the bringing of certain
Officers under His Command.

Printed for Th. Rider. October 7. 1642.

JOYFULL NEWES

FROM

SHREWSBURIE

Declaring the proceedings of both Armies neere the said Towne, with an exact Relation of a Battell fought there, Octob. 3.

Also a true Relation of a battell fought by the Earle of Pembroke *in* Wiltshire *with 500 men, against the Lord* Coventry, *with 1000 horse and Foot, October 4.*

His Excellency having left Ludlow in a good state and condition, commanded Colonell Hales and Captain Brown to draw out a thousand Foot and six hundred horse, and foure Peeces of Ordnance, and forthwith to advance with all expedition towards Shrewsburie, which they accordingly

dingly did: but ſo ſoone as the cavaliers had information of their coming, they marched out of the towne with about ſix thouland horſe and Foot, and with all expedition they could came and met Captaine Browne: but ſoon were their joyes overwhelmed with ſorrow: for before they had many blowes, the Earle of Eſſex came in with his Forces, which ſoon cauſed the Cavaliers to betake themſelves to flight, the Earle of Lindſey their chief Generall being ſorely wounded, and 50. of the cavaliers ſlaine, and not above nine of our men at the moſt. This was upon the fourth of October, and the day following it was expected that there would be a generall meeting in the field of both Armies.

Prince Robert, who hath ſince his coming into England beene very active to levie men, and raiſe Forces againſt his Majeſties great Councel, the high Court of Parliament, having had ſome oppoſition lately at Worceſter by the Parliaments Forces, and gaining ſome honour

by reaſon that it was his happy fortune to win the day, and to take 3. of our Colours, yet need he not boaſt of this: for in this skirmiſh he loſt as many men as we, beſides one of his chief commanders, Wilmot by name.

His Highneſſe having received this oppoſition at Worceſter, immediately marched with all his Army towards Ludlow, and when he came thither, he with all expedition ſent to the Kings moſt excellent Majeſty; and in the meſſage he ſent he propounded theſe particulars, viz.

1. That as he had formerly begun, in obedience to his ſacred Majeſty, to uſe his beſt skill and endeavours to aid and aſſiſt his excellent Majeſty, and to preſerve his royall Perſon in ſafety, ſo doth he hold the ſame reſolution ſtill.

2. That ſeeing thoſe noble and heroick ſpirits which he hath choſen to be Commanders under his Highneſſe have ſo bravely behaved themſelves, and have had ſuch happy and fortunate ſucceſſe,

Therefore

Therefore he doth humbly desire, that His Majesty would be pleased to knight some of them which are now come to His Majesty, because it will be a great incouragement to all the rest of the Army.

There were lately certain Letters sent from Scotland to the Parliament, and read in the House of Commons, directed to the Lords and Commons now assembled in the high Court of Parliament of England, in manner of a Remonstrance, wherein they did declare the sense that they have of the great distractions and distempers of this Kingdome, tending to the subversion of the long established government thereof, and the confusion of the whole State, and in the end would prove the distruction of that their Kingdome of Scotland; and therefore the Lords and Commons of that Kingdome are resolved to present a Petition to His Majesty, with such reasons as they conceive may move him to an accommodation of peace & agreement with both his Houses

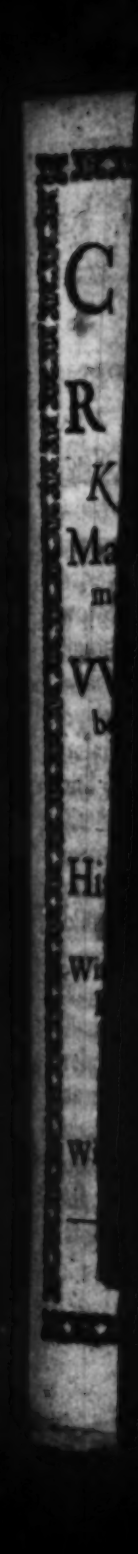
ſes of Parliament; but if the ſame ſhould be rejected, they are reſolved to aſſiſt the Parliament with force of armes, to defend their juſt cauſe, and to bring all delinquents and incendiaries that have diſturbed the peace of the Kingdome, and cauſed theſe troubles, to condigne puniſhment, which the Houſe with great joy and much thankfulneſſe accepted of.

A true Relation of the Battell fought by the Earl of *Pembroke* againſt the Lord *Coventry* in Wiltſhire, October 4.

THe right honourable, the Earle of Pembroke, having (as he ſuppoſed) ſetled the County of Wiltſhire in good order, he returned toward the Iſle of Wight: before he came thither, he received information by Letters from ſome part of the county, that about 1000. Cavaliers were come into that county under the command of the Lord Coventry,

Coventry, whereupon he ſoone returned againe, and brought along with him 300. horſe and foot, and as he paſſed along, divers of the Trained Bands came in to aſsiſt him againſt the ſaid Lord and his followers, and upon the 4. of October they both met in Wiltſhire, and after ſome debate they charged one againſt another, the fight continuing fiercely on both ſides, at laſt the Earle obtained the victory, killing 40. cavaliers, and taking 20. priſoners, the Lord Coventry being forced to eſcape away diſguiſed. The Earl obtained this victory with the loſſe of 10. men, and hath ſetled that county in a very good poſture, and peaceable condition.

FINIS.





A COVENANT FOR RELIGION, KING & COUNTREY.

Made by the Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, Burgesses, Ministers, and Commons of the Kingdome of *SCOTLAND*.

Wherein they declare how they are bound in conscience to defend the true Protestant Religion, and the Kings Person, with the Laws of the Kingdome.

Whereunto is annexed,

His Ma^ties^ entertainment at *Hereford* on *Saterday* last, being the first of *October*.

With a worthy Speech spoken to his Majesty by the Recorder of *Hereford*. Wherein is manifested to His Majesty the lamentable condition that this Kingdome will be in, if War should continue.

Withall declaring the resolution of that City, to stand for the King and Parliament.

LONDON,
Printed for *Henry Hutton*. *Oct.* 7. 1642.

A COVENANT FOR RELIGION AND KING & COUNTREY.

Made by the Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, Burgesses, Ministers, and Commons of the Kingdome of SCOTLAND.

Wherein they declare how they are bound in conscience to defend the true Protestant Religion, and the Kings Person, with the Laws of the Kingdome.

As also

His Ma^ties entertainment at Hertford on Sunday last, being the first of October.

With a worthy Speech spoken to his Majesty by the Recorder of Hertford. Wherein is manifested to His Majesty the fair enable Condition that the Kingdome will be in, if War should continue.

Which declaring the resolution of that City to stand for the King and Parliament.

LONDON,

Printed for Henry Hunt.

A Covenant for RELIGION, KING, and COUNTREY, made by a new Ordinance of Counsail at the desire of the generall assembly of *SCOTLAND*.

WE all, and every one of us underwritten, protest that after long and due examination of our own consciences in matters of true, & false religion, are now throughly resolved of the truth by the word and Spirit of God, and therefore we beleeve with our hearts, confesse with our mouthes, subcribe with our hands, and constantly affirm before God, and the whole world: that this onely is the true Christian Faith, and Religion, pleasing God, and bringing salvation to man, which now is by the mercy of God revealed to the world by the preaching of the blessed Evangel: And received, beleived, and defended by many and sundry notable Kirks and Realms, but chiefely by the Kirk of *Scotland*, the Kings Majesty, and our Estates of this Realme, as Gods eternall truth and onely ground of our salvation; as more particularly is expressed in the Confession of our faith stablished and confirmed by many Acts of Parliaments, and now of a long time hath been openly professed by the Kings Majesty, and whole body of his Realm, both in Burgh and Land. To the which Confession and forme of religion we willinglyagree in our consciences in all points as unto Gods undoubted truth and verity, grounded only upon his written word: and therefore we abhorre and detest all contrary religion and doctrine: but chiefely all kinde of Papistry, in generall and particular heads, even as they are now damned & confuted by the word of God,

and Kirk of *Scotland*: but in especiall, we detest and refuse the usurped authority of that Romane Antichrist upon the Scriptures of God upon the Kirk, the civill Magistrate, and consciences of men, all his tyrannous lawes made upon indifferent things against our Christian liberty, his erroneous doctrine against the sufficiency of the written word, and the perfection of the Law, the office of Christ and his blessed Evangel. His corrupted doctrine concerning originall sin, our naturall inability and rebellion to Gods law, our justification by faith only, our imperfect sanctification and obedience to the Law, the nature, number, and use of the holy Sacraments. His five bastard Sacraments, with all his rites, ceremonies, and false doctrine added to the ministration of the true Sacraments, without the word of God. His cruell judgement against infants departing without the Sacrament, his absolute necessity of Baptisme, his blasphemous opinion of Transubstantiation, or reall presence of Christs body in the elements, and receiving of the same by the wicked or bodies of men, his dispensations with solemne Oathes, periuries, and degrees of marriage forbidden in the word, his cruelty against the innocent divorced, his deviliſh Masse, his blasphemous priesthood, his prophane Sacrifices for the sinnes of the dead and the quick, his Canonization of men calling upon Angels or Saints departed, worshipping of imagerie relicks, and crosses, dedicating of kirkes, Alters, dayes, vowes to creatures, his purgatory, prayers for the dead, praying or speaking in a strange language, with his processions, and blasphemous lettany, and multitude of advocates or mediatours, his manifold orders, auricular confession, his desperate and uncertain repentance, his generall, and doubtfome faith, his satisfaction of men for their sins, his justification by works, *opus operatum*,

Masse, works of supererogation, merits, pardons, peregrinations and stations, his holy water, baptizing of bells, conjuring of saints, crossing, fanning, anointing, conjuring, hallowing of Gods good creatures with the superstitous opinion, joyned there with his wordly Monarchy, and wicked Hierarcy, his three solemne vowes, with all his shavelings of sundry sorts, his erronious and bloody decrees made at Trent, with all the subscribers, & approvers of that cruell and bloody and band conjured against the Kirk of God; and finally we detest all vain allegories, rites, signes, and traditions, brought in the Kirk, without or against the word of God, and doctrine of this true reformed Kirk; to the which we joyne our selves willingly in doctrine, faith, religion, discipline, and use of the Holy Sacraments, as lively members of the same in Christ our Head, promising and swering by the name of God our Lord, That we shall continue in the obedience of the doctrine and discipline of this Kirk, and shall defende the same according to our vocation, all the dayes of our lives, under the paines contained in the law, and danger both of body and soule in the day of Gods fearefull Iudgements. And seeing that many are stirred up by Sathan, and that Roman Antichrist to promise, sweare, subscribe, and for a time use the holy Sacraments in the Kirk, deceitfull against their own consciences, minding thereby first under the Externall cloak of religion, to corrupt and subvert secretly Gods true religion, within the Kirk, and afterward when time may serve to become open enemies and persecutors of the same, under vain hope of the Popes dispensation, devised against the word of God to his greater confusion, and their doubl: condemnation in the day of the Lord Iesus Christ.

We therefore willing to take away all suspition of hipocrisie, and of such doubledealing with God & his Kirk,

protest, and call the searcher of hearts for witnesse, that our minds and hearts do fully agree with this our Confession, Promise, Oath, and Subscription, so that we are not moved for any worldly respects, but are perswaded onely in our consciences through the knowledge & love of Gods true Religion printed in our hearts by the holy Spirit, as we shall answer to him, in the day when the secrets of all hearts shall be disclosed: and because we perceive that the quietnesse and stability of our Religion and Kirk doth depend upon the safety and good behaviour of the Kings Majesty, as upon a comfortable instrument of Gods mercy granted to this Countrey, for the maintaining of his Kirk, and ministration of justice amongst us, wee protest and promise with our hearts under the same oath, hand, writ, and pains, that we shall defend his royall person and authority, with our goods, bodies and lives, in the defence of Christ his Evangel, Liberties of our countrey, ministration of justice, and punishment of iniquity, against all enemies within this Realm or without, as wee desire our God to be be a strong and mercifull defender to us in the day of our death, and comming of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom with the Father and the holy Spirit bee all honour and glory eternally.

A Worthy Speech spoken to the Kings most Excellent Majesty by the Recorder of Hereford.

Most gratious Soveraigne, according to our Allegiance wee are here assembled to entertaine your Majesty, and to give that welcome which shall become us your distressed Subjects, yet loyall liege-people.

We with all joy acknowledge, that the Sunne never appeared more welcome to the halfe starved traveller benumb'd with the cold moysture of a hory morne, where the white dew like to congealed Pearle hanges on his haire, (by which he doth appeare almost a frozen Statue,) then now your gratious presence is to us, almost despayring frozen up with feare, with visible appearances of danger, death, and destruction, rapine, and thousands more calamities, such, as will bring terrour to the meere relation.

O my dread Soveraigne, let but your Servant put into your mind the dire effects of Warre, when flourishing Cities shall be turned to dust, may this yet flourishing King dom shall become it's owne destroyer, buried in the tombe of blood and slaughter, when our young infants shall be rudely torne from the sad mothers breast whose shrieks and cries serve as sad musique to the sacrifice, when our young virgins and our wives shall be subiect to bloudy cruelty, when death shall triumph, and the friends of Rome, (whose only aymes are to destroy the Lawes, religion of the Kingdome, nay the King too, if not prevented) your selfe most gratious Soveraigne must suffer with your Subjects, if their hell-bred designes should ever take effect, therefore great King, now while you may, returne, and joyne in peace with those, who like to teeming mothers long for your wished presence, or like to loving children, who finding the want of an indulgent parent, with an excessive sorrow mournes his absence, even so your Councell with an industrious care and loyall sorrow mourne for your sacred selfe, because your splendant favour hath been kept so long from shining on them,

their

them, their actions like to flowers in a dry Summer, want the dew of your high favour, which should make them flourish with generall sweetnesse, wherefore they are enforced to use some art to bring them to a growth, and make them usefull for the generall good, but would you deigne to cast one splendant beame on their endeavours, and to lend a hand to raise their drooping hopes, then peace should flourish: those that seeke for war, should fall into the pit themselves have digged: O then Dread soveraigne abandon straight those Achans of the Land, let not assistion or domestique strife revell within this Kingdome, but let peace, a blessed religious peace be straight embraced, so shall your Crown and Throne endure for ever, and joy shall circumvent you, your Subjects feare shall cease, and you shall see, let Law have power who is an enemy to Englands peace, and what they are that strive to ruine England could their Plots but thrive. I feare I have displeased (if not your Majestie, yet some of your retinue) which if I have, I must conclude that they are guilty of what I mention, for otherwise what need they seeme offended at that which they are free of? As touching what Your Majesty shall command, we are ready to obey, so far as Law, or Religion will give way; but if any command shall happen contrary, our lives and fortunes shall be exposed to the most eminent danger, in opposition of any such command. Thus trusting in Your Majesties Royall disposition, we rest, (according to our bounden duty) Your Majesties loyall and obedient Subjects, in which we are resolved to live and die.

FINIS.

P

Di

Wr

The f

He th
fr
Let h
Let h

20

A PETITION FOR PEACE,

K. Charles I

Directed both to the KING and the PARLIAMENT,

Written by One, to bee subscribed by All, MEN and CHRISTIANS,

as it shall appear agreeable to

MANS Reason, and CHRISTS Word;

The fittest Sword (without all controversie) to decide all the Controversies of these times.

He that loveth life, and would faine see good dayes (againe) let him refrain his tongue from evill, and his lips that they speak no guile.
Let him eschew evill and doe good.
Let him seeke Peace and ensue it.

London, Printed for *Francis Coles*. 1642.

A PETITION FOR PEACE,

Directed both to the KING

Written by One, to be published by All.

MAY Reason, and Common Sense (Voice of God) in favour

The firſt Rudiments of a Petition for Peace, moſt humbly beſeeching his Maieſty and his Parliament,

Article 1.

FIrſt, that the more undiſputed ſins of man againſt God may be more ſharply puniſhed by their joint authority; eſpecially the more ſpreading and allowed ſins, particularly, thoſe of Swearing, Drunkenneſſe, and Whoring.

Reaſon.

Becauſe if this ſharp axe be laid to the root of bitterneſſe, the calamity that ſprings from ſuch ſins may fade in the bloſſome, before it grow to the bitterneſſe in the latter end, eſpecially the more common and connived at ſins: Becauſe as private faults bring perſonall miſeries, ſo in proportion of juſtice common crimes bring common calamities: namely, thoſe of ſwearing, drinking, and whoring; becauſe it was confidently foretold that the Empire of *Germany*, then as flouriſhing as ſecure, ſhould ſurely come to ruine, becauſe theſe ſins were publikely winkt at by the Magiſtrate, and committed by the People. *Muſcul. tract. de iuramento poſt Pſal.*

Scripture.

For three tranſgreſſions of Damaſcus, and for foure, I will not turn away the puniſhment thereof, But &c. the like ſins eight times repeated, as the cauſe of ſo many Nations ruine, *Amos* chap. 1, & 2. eſpecially tranſgreſſions known and allowed, 1 *Sam.* 3. 13. by name thoſe of ſwearing, drinking, and whoredome, of which God complaineth, and for which the Land mourneth, *Hoſea* 4. 2, 11.

2. That the more diſputed ſins of man againſt man may be more favourably interpreted, and mutually pardoned.

Reaſon.

Becauſe in ſuch diſputable caſes there can be no hoped for end of Recrimination, and becauſe parties exaſperated are apt to miſ-judge, and aggravate injuries done towards themſelves: and becauſe when there is deniall of pardon, where there is ſome equality of Abetters, the blood of the innocent which may be ſpilt, is more worth then the blood of the ſuppoſed nocent, which they think muſt be ſpilt. And many times the Magiſtrates ſuppoſe that their quarrell is good, and that of right they ought to make war on others, and puniſh Delinquents, when as notwithſtanding the righteous God by that occaſion drawes them on into perill, that their ſins may be puniſhed by the men, in whom they did purpoſe to have puniſhed ſome grievous crime. *Bulling. Decad. 2. ſerm. 9.*

Scripture.

They know not what manner of Spirit they are of, that think the Spirit of Chriſt any other then the Spirit of meekneſſe, not a Spirit of fire, *Matth.* 11. 29. Therefore Brethren (the Apoſtle directly ſpeaks to you that are the Brethren, you that have the Spirit) if any be overtaken in a fault, ye which are ſpirituall deſtroy not, but reſtore ſuch in the Spirit of meekneſſe, conſidering thy ſelfe, leſt thou alſo be tempted, *Gal.* 6. 1. By this mitigating way the people ſaved *Ionathan*, when the King judged him worthy of death: and thus the King pardoned *Shimei*, whom ſome juſtly thought not worthy to live, 1 *Sam.* 14. 44, 45. 2 *Sam.* 19. 21. on both hands the interceding of one party abates the rigour of the other. In like caſes let your moderation be known unto all men, *Phil.* 4. 5.

Article 3.

3. That the City of London, with all the Suburbs, may take the Oaths of Allegeance and Supremacie, concluding with a clauſe to behave themſelves with that quietneſſe, innocence, and reverence, which is due to his ſacred Majeſty. *Reaſon.*

Becauſe the unbridledneſſe of ſome of theſe is averred to be the unhappy cauſe of his Majeſties retiring, and therefore the gentle receiving this curbe may well be hoped the happy cauſe of his returning.

Scripture.

Such innocent and reverent behaviour is due, for the heart of *David* ſmote him, not for threatning violence, but for touching the Lords annointed; and *Shimei* is ſlain in the end for but railing againſt the flying King: And if we vilifie the King but in thought onely, we ſhall be ſure to anſwer for it, *Eccleſ.* 10. 20.

Article 4.

4. That on the Parliaments part the King be again entreated, and on his Majeſties part he would be perſwaded upon the premiſes, (and what with like reaſon may be required) to joine again with his Parliament.

Reaſon.

Becauſe his abſence and diſtance from it hath been the cauſe of much evill, and griefe, and delay, and therefore his preſence and anneering may be cauſe of much good, and joy, and diſpatch.

Scripture.

When the King was driven from his royall City upon a commotion, after a while his ſubjects deſired him to returne; and he readily conſented, when he knew by the expreſſions of their loyalty, that he was indeed King over them, 2 *Sam.* 19. 11, 12, 23.

Article 5.

That all poſſible ſpeed may be uſed for the disbanding or leſſening the Forces of each ſide, or at leaſt that they be kept at good diſtance, and in the meane time with due diſcipline regulated.

Reaſon.

Becauſe, if not leſſened, or ſoone disbanded, their maintaining will grow to a too exceſſive charge to the people whom it muſt light upon. And if not kept at diſtance, and regulated, their licentiouſneſſe may doe more harme then their force can remedy.

Scripture.

When *Iudah* and *Iſrael* kept two Armies on foot for ſeaven years together, they met but once to try it by the ſword, and then with ſuch moderate purſuance, that but three hundred ſeaventy two were ſlaine by *Ioabs* men, and but thirty two by *Abners*, yet even that called a very ſore Battell, 2 *Sam.* 2. 16, 17. 30, 31.

Article 6.

That the charges of maintaining both Armies may not be laid on the ſhoulder of onely one Party, but that it may fall, in ſome merciſull proportion, upon all the Abler ſort of the Land.

Reaſon.

Though all will never be granted equally deep in the cauſe of raiſing this diviſion, yet all will equally ſhare in the benefit of ceaſing it; and becauſe, if either ſide feare too much oppreſſion, the taming them to take the burden may coſt more then will be recovered of them. And in the meane time, the meaner of the Kingdome will ſoone be pincht for want of employment in their manufacturall crafts, who wanting work, as ſoone as the abler want trading, muſt needs want food as ſoone as they want work.

Scripture

Scripture.

Beare yee one anothers burden: and ſo (you that ſtand upon law) fulfill the law of Chriſt, *Gal.* 6. 2. (And in a caſe of a collection) I will not that ſome bee eaſed, and others burdened, but that there be an equallity, 2 *Cor.* 8. 13.

Article 7.

That in matters (Doctrinall or Diſciplinall) touching the ſervice of God, (the maine ſource of all our diſtractions) wee expect a deciſion from the more learned, and more unblemiſhed Worthies of the Clergy, the daily ſtudiers of the Goſpel of Chriſt, and not from Lay-men.

Reaſon.

Becauſe they being verſed moſt in the word of God, have probably moſt knowledge; And wee goe not to a Judge for the end of our ſuit, by vertue of his knowledge onely, whereof others may have a like meaſure, but by vertue of his office and calling: and to their office and calling it belongs to determine ſuch doubts; For,

Scripture.

The Prieſts lips ſhould preſerve knowledge, and they ſhould ſeek the law at his mouth, *Mala.* 2. 7. And after much diſputing, in a caſe of Ceremonies, the Church of God expected a determining ſentence, from the Apoſtles and Elders, *Acts* 15. 3. 6. The Elders were not Lay-men, but Miniſters of the word, Feeders of the Church of God, *Acts* 20. 28. Feeders of the flock of God, 1 *Pet.* 5. 1, 2. and, The firſt fault of King *Saul* was but once ſtepping into the office of the Prieſt, for which hee was caſt out of the Kingdome, and (which more is) out of Gods favour, 1 *Sam.* 8. 12, 13. as *Vzziah* for the ſame treſpaſſe ſmote with leproſie, 2 *Chron.* 26. 19.

Article 8.

That the chuſing of theſe able and godly Divines may be

be (according as heretofore) by the ſuffrage of all the Miniſters of the Land, they being left liable to exception (both of the Chooſers and Choſen) who ſhall be thought unmeet, for any notorious evill (of faith or life) not ſlanderouſly imputed, but ſolidly proved againſt them.

Reaſon.

Becauſe the Profeſſors onely of any (unvulgar) Art or Science, are fitteſt men to judge who are moſt eminent in that Art or Science: and becauſe the Burden of ſuch Injunctions (as ſhall be agreed on by the Elected, and authoriſed by the High Court of Parliament) being to fall chiefly upon the Clergy, will be borne by them leſs grudgingly, when they have their priviledge to chooſe who ſhall lay it upon their ſhoulders.

Scripture

In this point is more rare; becauſe not ſo much quarrelling there about Ceremonies, and the manner of Gods Service: And when they who God appointed were cast for uſurping too much upon the Holy People, God ſtaied not till an Aſſembly were choſen by others, but appointed them to meet next morning, and decided the queſtion Himſelfe, by making the earth to ſwallow them that invaded Prieſthood, *Numb.* 16. And *David* is carefull before hand to prevent this doubt, that none ought to meddle with the Holy utenſils, but the Levites, 1 *Chron.* 15. 2. *&c.*

Article 9.

That there be not given to the Petitioners for peace too juſt

Reaſon

For them to uſe and apply this too oppoſite

Scripture;

My ſoule hath long dwelt among them that are enemies to peace. I laboured for peace, but when I ſpake to them thereof, they made them more then ready to battell.

FINIS.





A True and Perfect

RELATION

OF

THE TAKING OF A GREAT SHIP

at Yarmouth, October 4. Sent from the Queen of *Holland* to the Kings Majesty, wherein was ten pieces of Ordnance, 50. Barrels of powder, and 100. and 50. Commanders, as it was informed to the House of Commons, *October.* 6.

Also Her Majesties Letter to the King, Read before the Committee, *October* the sixth, which letter was taken in the said ship at *Yarmouth*,

Likewise the manner of Master Hothams taking of Keywood Castle in *Yorkshire*, since the agreement of the laying down of Arms in that County. With the Instructions from the House to the *Lord Willoughbie* of *Parham*, to aid and assist the said *Mr. Hotham* against the Earle of *Cumberland*.



October 7. Printed for H. Blake, 1642.

A True and Perfect

RELATION

OF

THE TAKING OF A GREAT SHIP

at Yarmouth, October 4. Sent from the Queen
of Holland to the King's Majesty, wherein was
ten pieces of Ordnance, 50. Barrels of pow-
der, and 500. and 50. Commanders,
it was informed to the House
of Commons, October 6.

Also Her Majesties Letter to the King, Read before
the Committee of the Parliament there was re-
ceived in the said Ship.

Likewise the manner of Master Hortons taking of
Heywood Callen in Twickenham the precincts of the
Kings Crown of Arms in that County, with the In-
structions from the House to the Lord Mayor
of London, to aid and assist the said M.
Horton against the Rebels
Committed.

Octob. 7. Printed for H. I. &c. 1642.

A TRUE RELATION OF

The taking of a ship sent from the Queen out of Holland to his Majesty, October 4.

ON Thursday the sixth of October, a packet of Letters was brought to the House of Commons, from thence referred to the close Committee for the dose affairs of the Kingdome, which came from Yarmouth and came out of Holland from the Queen which were intercepted in this manner, viz. The Queen of England having bought a ship with her own money sent the same over into England with ten pieces of Ordnance, and fortie barrels of powder, and a hundred and fifty Cavaleers

which were to land at New Castle, and from thence to be conveyed to his Majesty, the King of Great Britain.

But when the said ship came neere to New castle she was driven in at YARMOUTH by a contrary wind, and when the Cavaleers that were in the said ship perceived that there was no remedy, but that they must come into Yarmouth, where they knew they should be searched, and all their intentions made frustrate, they began to bethink with themselves, that it was better to throw all their Letters, then to put it to the hazzard of having all their Secrets come to light,

And thereupon they agreed, that they would sink their Packet of Letters in the Sea, before they came to Land,

And for the better effecting of this, they put into the packet two or three bullets, and so threw them into the Sea, which being perceived by a Fisherman that was in a small boat neere to the ship, the said Fisherman dived after it into the Water, being well acquainted with the depth of the Waters in that place) and took up the said Packet of Letters, and presented them to the Governours of Yarmouth.

Whereupon the said Governours immediately resolved to send them to the Honourable Court of PARLIAMENT the great Councell of this Kingdome, which was this present day being the sixth of this instant month of October presented to the house of Commons, the worthy Members of the said House gave order and Command, that they

should

should be referred to the close Committee, which was accordingly performed, and at the opening of the same, there was one Letter sent from the Queen in HOLLAND to the Kings most excellent Majesty, as follows.

That her Maiesty intends to be in England very speedily, having fourteen of the Hollanders ships ready provided for her conduct into ENGLAND, *together with divers other Letters, the particulars whereof are not as yet known.*

It was also informed to the House, that the said ships and the Cavaleers, and other provision of Warre that were in the said ship were seized upon at Yarmouth, and there detained custody, untill they receive further Directions from the Parliament.

This is the true and perfect Relation that came to both Houses upon Thursday, being the 14th of October.

A true

A true Relation of Master Hotthams taking of Keywood Castle.

THis day Newes came to the House out of *Yorkeshire*, that *Master Hotham* disclaimed any consent or agreement to the Articles of a peace between the Earle of *Cumberland* and the Lord *Fairefax* and the rest of the Gentry of the Country of *Yorke*: And that for said agreement Master *Hotham* with his Forces tooke the Town of *Selby*, and hath stopped the passage of all boats to *Yorke*, and taken a strong Castle called *Keywood*, belonging to the Bishop of that Diece, and resolves to maintaine his Majesties Pretogative, the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, the Lawes of the Kingdom and the Liberty and propriety of the subject

to procure a generall peace and protection from the King, for all his subjects with both the Houses of Parliament, have by many humble Petitions desired by His Majestie but cannot yet obteyne.

And accordiug to the Parliaments Declaration, if they should suffer any particular Counties to divide themselves from the rest of the Kingdome, it will be a meanes to bring all to ruine and destruction, and therfore the said Mr. Hotham is ready with those forces that he brought with him from *Hull* to assist the Parliament in this cause which newes was very

acceptable

acceptable to the Houſe, in regard that they had voted the laid agreement to be void, becauſe it was deſtructive to the peace of the Kingdome, and agreed that the L. *Willoughby* of *Parham* in *Lincolnſhire*, ſhould make all the ſpeed he could poſsible to aid and aſsiſt Mr. *Hotham* and the reſt of the County of *York* that are well affected to the proceedings of Parliament againſt the Earl of *Comberland* for the ſetling of the peace of that County.

[redacted]

[redacted]

22

A LETTER

Sent from

The Lord *FALKLAND*,
Principal Secretarie to His Majestie.

Cary
K

Vnto the Right Honourable, HENRY Earle of Cumberland, at York. *Sept.* 30. 1642.

Concerning the late Conflict before Worcester, with the state of His Majesties Armie now at Shrewsbury.

Together with His Majesties Speech to the Gentry and Freeholders of the County of *Salop*, *Septemb.* 28. 1642.

Printed at York, *Octob.* 1. and now re-printed at London for *J. T. Octob.* 7. 1642.

BRITISH
MUSEUM

A Letter ſent from the Lo: *Falkland*,

To the Right Honourable the E. of Cumberland.

My Lord,

I Know ere this time you have divers and ſeverall relations of Prince *Roberts* encounter with the Earle of *Eſſex* Forces before *Worceſter* the 23. of *September*. I could have written ſooner, but ſtayed till I could have an exact Relation, which I now doe from men of honour, and preſent in the action. The King being informed of the Earle of Eſſex marching to Worceſter, and knowing that towne not tenible againſt any conſiderable Forces, and deſirous to put the beſt part of his Armie into one entire Body, ſent to Sir *John Biron* to quit the place, and joyne with Prince *Robert*, then at *Bridgenorth*. Prince *Robert* deſirous to fetch off ſo gallant a man as Sir *John Biron*, marched through Worceſter with his Troops, conſiſting of 700. accompanied onely with Sir *John Biron* his Troops remaining behind in Worceſter. When they were out of the Towne, Prince *Robert* being informed that the E. of Eſſex Troops of Horſe and

Dragoonerswere at hand, marched towards them, ſaying, We are now ingaged for the honour of God and your Countrey, fight valiantly: and immediately gave them a furious charge, which was ſtoutly anſwered by the Parliament Forces. This courage of theirs endured not long, for at the ſecond charge they as fiercely ran away, in purſuit were taken priſoners, ſlain, and drowned, above 400. divers of which betook themſelves to the mercy of a River, wherein periſhed foure ſcore, whereof the Lord *Sayes* ſon is ſaid to be one, but that is yet uncertain, but for certain both of them accompanied with Captain *Browne* a Scotchman, at the firſt encounter ran away, leaving thoſe men to be ſlaughtered, ſome Gentlemen (more ſenſible of honour then the reſt) fought valiantly, as Setgeant Major *Douglas*, Col: *Sands*, Cap: *Austin*, Cap: *Burrill*, Cap: *Berrey*, Coronett *Hamon*, Cornett *Weſt* were ſlaine in the field; Cap: *Sands* and *Douglas* lived ſome few houres after: Prince *Robert* ſent a Divine to Captain *Sands*, who told him the Prince was troubled ſo gallant a man ſhould periſh in ſo unworthy an action, he gave the Prince thanks and ſaid, death did not ſo much trouble him as that he had endeavoured to defend ſo bad a cauſe, which he was drawne into as well by his own ambition, as by perſwaſion of other men, he was not able to deny (he further ſaid) the flower of their Army was in this conflict, and wiſhed all their actions hereafter might have the like ſucceſſe, deſiring that they would all pray for him, and eſpecially that God would forgive him this great ſinne of

of rebellion, which troubled him the more, having dilucively perſwaded others thereunto by telling them that they fought againſt thoſe that advanced the rebellion in *Ireland*, and were now in the action, Col: *Sands* was encountered by Comiſary *Wilmot*, but received his deaths wound by a Frenchman, he asked how Comiſary *Wilmot* did, ſeeing him wounded, being told his hurt was not dangerous, ſaid, he was glad he had not his blood to anſwer for: *Douglas* likewiſe died not ſuddainly, he was likewiſe ſenſible of his offence. I ſpake with a Gentleman that brought him out of the field, to whom he confeſſed this was the third rebellion he had been in againſt the King, all which from his heart he hated, but was drawn unto them for gain and ſiniſter ends, and being taken priſoner in the North he was diſcharged, & twenty pounds given him by the King: he was deſirous to live, that he might diſcover to the King ſomething that might in part expiate his former offences, which was prevented by his death. I have been the longer in the relation of theſe two Gentlemens Confeſſions before their deaths, to make you ſenſible that the hearts of theſe men goe not along with their actions, (their blouds will lie heavy upon thoſe *boutefeux* that have engaged them & others, and ſo many men to their ruine and deſtruction.)

There were taken in the Skirmiſh 50. or 60. priſoners, but none of note, and quality, but Captaine *Wingate*, (a Parliament man) who is brought to *Shrewsbery*; The King was preſented with 6. or 7. Colours, the bearers of them either ſlaine or taken

Priſoners; Prince *Maurice* hath received two or three ſcarrs of Honour in his Head, but is abroad and merry; divers of our part hath received ſlight wounds, as Commiſsary *Wilmot*, Sir *Lewis Dives*, Captaine *Byron*, Sir *Charles Lucas*, and ſome others: I dare not tell you they loſt more Hundreds, then we ſingle men, leaſt the former part of my Letter may gaine the leſſe beleife: But I aſſure you, it is confidently reported that there were ſlaine on our part not aboue three or foure; thoſe Priſoners that were taken except Captaine *Wingat* are diſcharged, taking an *Oath* not to beare Armes againſt the King,; moſt of them were men of meane quality, and ſo raw Souldiers that they underſtood not the word Quarter, but cryed for mercy; being demanded of what condition they were: ſome ſaid, they were *Taylors*, ſome *Embroyderers*, and the like. By the latter end of this weeke, I aſſure you our number will exceed thoſe of the Earl of *Eſſex*, of which we are now rightly informed by the ſeverall Priſoners we have taken, And if God for great Sinnes, together with the ſlight eſteeme we have of Parliament Forces, have not Vengance inſtore for us, and the whole Nation: The King having no other Ambition, but the advancement of the Proteſtant Religion, and eſtabliſhment of the Fundamental Lawes of this Kingdome. We have publique thanks for this Victory enjoyned by the King; I have all this while heard of, and ſeene the many lyes permitted and contrived by them; but I could never imagine men ſo irreligious, ſo impudent before God, as to

give

give publicke thanks for the great Victory over the Cavaleers; which is as false as God is true: I know I can expresse my Duty in nothing more then intreating your Lordship not to beleeve those false reports, which do asmuch make *London* dishabitable, as the Plague wont to do.

Your Lordshipps Infinitely Obedient and Humble Servant.

Shrewsbury, *Sept.* 27. 1642.

FALKLAND.

HIS MAJESTIES SPEECH at *Shrewsburie*, on *Michaelmas* Eve last, to the Gentry and Commons of the Countie of *Salop*, there Assembled.

Gentlemen,

IT is some benefit to me from the Insolencies, and misfortunes which have driven me about, that they have brought me to so good a part of my Kingdome, and to so faithfull a part of my people; I hope neither you nor I shall repent my comming hither, I will doe my part that you may not: And of you, I was confident before I came; the residence of an Armie is not usually pleasant to any place, and mine may carry more scare with it, since it may bethought (being robbed and spoiled of all my own, and such terror used to fright and keep all men from supplying me) I must onely live upon the aid and reliefe of my people; but be not afraid, I would to God my poore Subjects

sul-

suffered no more by the insolence and violence of that Enemie raised against me (though they have made themselves wanton even with plenty) then you shall doe by mine, and yet I feare I cannot prevent all disorders; I will doe my best; and this I le promise you, no man shall be a loser by me if I can help it; I have sent hither for a Pint, and will melt down all my own Plate, and expose my Land to Sale or morgage, that if it be possible I may bring the least pressure upon you. In the meane time I have Summoned you hither to invite you to doe that for me and your selves, for the maintenance of your Religion, the law of the Land (by which you enjoy all that you have) which other men doe against Us: Doe not suffer so good a cause to be lost for want of supplying Me with that, which will be taken from you, by those who pursue Me with this violence, And whilst these ill men sacrifice their Power, Plate, and utmost industry to Destroy the Common-Wealth, be you no lesse Liberall to preserve it. I am assure your selves, if it please God to blesse Me with success, I shall remember the particular Assistance every man here gives Me, to his advantage: however, it will hereafter (how furiously the minds of men are now possessed) be Honour and comfort to you, that with some Charge and Trouble to your selves, You did your part to support your King, and preserve the Kingdome.

I desire M. Sheriffe, and the rest of the Gentlemen, to distribute themselves in that Method, that they may best receive the expressions which you shall make of your best Affections, the which I will have particularly presented to Me.

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

A DECLARATION

Of the Lords and Commons of the Parliament of

ENGLAND,

TO

The High and Mighty

Lords, the States of the *United Provinces.*

LONDON,
Printed by *A. N.* for *Richard Best*, October 8.

High and mighty Lords,



We are Commanded by the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England* to signifie to your Lordships, that they have chosen and appointed the bearer hereof *Walter Strickland* Esquire, to repaire to your Lordships, and to present to you in their names, and in the name of the whole Kingdom a Declaration, and some propositions and desires very much importing the maintenance of the Protestant Religion, which is the surest foundation of the safetie and prosperitie of this Kingdome and your States, and the antient amitie between us to the advantage of both, desiring your Lordships to give care to what shall be delivered or propounded to you by the same Master *Strickland*. And to expedite your answer thereunto, in such manner as shall stand with your wisedomes, and the due respects of the common good of this State and of your selves, which is the earnest desire of

Your affectionate friends and servants.

Mandeville Speaker *pro tempore* for the Lords house.

William Lenthall Speaker of the House of Commons.

To the high and mighty Lords,

the States of the United Provinces.

The

The Declaration of the Lords and Commons of the Parliament of England, to the high and mighty Lords, the States of the United Provinces.

WE the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, taking into serious consideration the means of composing the great distempers and combustions begun in this Kingdome, which threaten the destruction & ruine of it, & of all other protestant Princes and States, have thought good to make this Declaration to the high and mighty Lords, the States of the *United provinces*, That wee understand by a Letter of the Lord *Digby*, a person fled out of this Kingdome for high Treason: That as he often endeavoured by his wicked and malicious Counsels to make division between his Majesty and the Parliament, and hath been in great part the cause of that miserable and unnaturall warre which is made against us by his Majestie, so he hath laboured by all means in the *United Provinces* to provide Armes, powder, and Amunition for the fomenting of that war, and making it more dangerous to this Kingdome; And for this purpose did addresse himselfe to the Prince of *Orange* by whose countenance and help (as we are informed by the Lord *Digbyes* own Letters) he hath made provision of great quantities of Ordnance, powder, Armes, and divers other sorts of warlike provision.

And we are further informed by credible advertisemen, that the Prince of *Orange* in favour of the Lord *Digby*, and those other wicked Counsellours & incendiaries, who being joyned together in these mischievous practises against the peace of this Kingdome, hath not only licenced, but the better to en-

courage divers Commanders, experienced Officers, and Souldiers to resort into this Kingdome in aid of them against the Parliament, hath promised to reserve their places for them in their absence, and doth cause other provision of the same kind to be made and prepared to bee sent over for their supply, to the great hurt of this Kingdome, and the danger of interrupting the most necessary, profitable, and long continued amity between the two States.

We further desire to let them know that we cannot believe that this is done by any authority or direction from their Lordships, considering the great help that they have received from this Kingdome, when heretofore they lay under the heavy oppression of their Princes, and how conducible the friendship of this Nation (concurring with the wisdom, valour and industry of their owne people) hath bin to the greatnesse and power which they now enjoy.

Neither can we think that they will be forward to help to make us slaves who have bin usefull and assistant in making them freemen.

Or that they will forget that our troubles and dangers issue from the same fountaine with their own, and that those who are set a worke to undermine Religion and Liberty in the Kingdome are the same, which by open force did seek to bereave them of both.

It cannot be unknown to that wise State, that it is the Jesuiticall faction here, that hath corrupted the Counsels of our King, the consciences of a great

great part of our Clergy, which hath plotted so many mischievous Designes, to destroy the Parliament, and still endeavoureth to divide Ireland from this Kingdome, by a most wicked and cruell Rebellion there, and to divide the King from his Parliament and People here, and by false slanders, and imputations of things never done nor intended by us, hath incensed his Majesty so as that after many bitter invectives published against us without any just cause given, he hath now at last resolved to set up his Royall Standard, and draw his sword for the destruction and ruine of his most faithfull and obedient people, whom by the Lawes and Constitutions of this Kingdom hee is bound to preserve and protect.

The Cases and the Fortunes of both Estates being so involved and united, wee cannot expect to be hindred by them in our just defence, or that they will doe any thing, to aggravate the miseries and troubles of this Kingdome, in the peace and happinesse whereof they have found much advantage, and by such unfriendly and unseasonable supplyes of our common Enemies, make a way to their own aswell as our ruine.

Wee therefore desire they may betimes looke into this mischief, and having searched it into the bottom, to stop the farther progresse of it, That they will not suffer more Ordnance, Armour, or any other like warlike provision to be brought over to strengthen those, who assoone as they shall prevail against the Parliament (according to their principles and interests by which they are guided) will

will use that strength to the ruine of those from whom they have had it.

We desire they would not send over any Countrymen to further our destruction, who were sent to them for their preservation. That they will not anticipate the spilling of English blood in an unnaturall Civill War, which hath been so cheerfully and plentifully hazarded and spent in that just and honorable War by which they have been so long preserved, and to which the blood of those persons, and many other Subjects of this Kingdome is still in a manner dedicated, but rather that they will cashiere and discard from their employment those that will presume to come over for that purpose.

And in satisfying these our reasonable and necessary desires, they shall thereby not only secure us but themselves, yea, they shall most of all advantage his Majesty, for whose service those things are pretended to be done.

The question betweene his Majesty and Parliament is not, whether hee shall enjoy the same prerogative and power which hath belonged to our former Kings, his Majesties Royall Predecessours, but whether that prerogative and power should be employed to our defence, or to our ruine.

We expect nothing from him but security and protection from those mischievous designes which have bin so often multiplyed and renewed against us, though hitherto (through Gods providence) as often frustrated.

It cannot be denyed by those who look indifferently

rently on our proceedings and affairs, but that it will be more honour and wealth, safety and greatnesse to his Majesty in concurring with his Parliament, then in the course in which hee now is: But so unhappy hath his Majesty and the Kingdome been in those, who have the greatest influence upon his Counsels, that they look more upon the prevayling of their owne party, then upon any those great advantages both to his Crowne and Royall person which he might obtain by joyning with his people. And so cunning are those Factors for popery, in prosecution of their own aymes, that they can put on a counterfeit visage of honour, peace, & greatnesse upon those courses and counsels, which have no truth and reality, but of weaknesse, dishonour, and miseries to his Majesty and whole Kingdome.

VVe have lately expressed our earnest inclinations to that Nationall love and amity with the United Provinces which is nourished and confirmed by so many civill respects and mutuall interests, as makes it so naturall to us, that we have this Parliament in our humble Petition to his Majesty, desired, wee might be joyned with that State in a more neere and strait league and union, And wee cannot but expect some returnes from them of the like expressions; And that they will be so far from blowing the fire which begins to kindle amongst us, that they will rather endeavour to quench it by strengthening and encouraging us, who have no other designe but not to be destroyed, and preserve our Religion, save our selves and the other reformed

med Churches of Christendome from the [illegible] acres and extirpations with which the prin[illegible] of the popish Religion do threaten us &c. [illegible] which are begun to be acted in Ireland, and in the hopes, endeavours and intentions of that party had long since been executed upon us, if the mercy, favour, and blessing of Almighty God had not superabounded, and prevented the subtilty and malignity of cruell wicked and bloodthirsty men.

FINIS.



CONTINVATION

OF CERTAINE SPECIALL AND Remarkable paſſages from both Houſes of Parliament, and divers other places of the Kingdome, from *Munday* the 3. of *Octob.* to the 8th. of *Octob.*

Containing theſe particulars, viz

1. A true Relation of a Letter ſent from Manchester, declaring the manner of the overthrow given to the Lord Strange by the Towne of Manchester with the number of them that were ſlaine on both ſides, and what proviſion the Townesmen are making ſince, and their caſting of Ordnance there.
2. Of the Parliaments ſending 000. Dragoniers to Manchester.
3. A Letter from the E. of Eſſex, ſhewing his reaſon to the Parliament why hee could not ſend ayd to Manchester.
4. A Letter from the Earle of Warwick, of his taking of 2. Ships comming from Denmarke to his Majeſtie, with what ſtore of Money, &c. was in them.
5. Of the Earle of Warwicks taking of Captaine Kettleby.
6. A Letter from the Earle of Eſſex, and a Letter therein from the Earle of Bedford to the Parliament concerning his Majeſties refuſall to accept of the Parliaments Petition ſent by the Earle of Eſſex.
7. The Voters and Reſolution of both Houſes of Parliament concerning his Majeſties denying to accept of the Petition by the hands of thoſe whom he hath proclaymed Traytors.
8. A Letter to the Parliament out of Yorkſhire, concerning the Treaty betweene the E. of Cumberland and the Lord Fairfaxe. 9. A Letter out of Lincolnſhire from the L. Willoughby. 10. Of a meeting of the whole County of Yorkſhire on Thurſday next. 11. That 350. men are come out of Herefordſhire to his Excellencie.
12. That Sir Ralph Hopton is in Cornwall, and what forces he hath with him.
13. A true Relation of the conditi n of the City of Hereford.
14. What number of men his Excellency hath ſent to Hereford.
15. Of his Majeſties gathering his forces together to meet the Lord Generall.
16. A true Relation of the taking of the queens ſhip at Yarmouth.
17. A Letter that was intercepted in the ſaid ſhip from her Majeſty to the King.
18. That Prince Robert is at Bridgnorth, and the number of his Forces there.
19. That his Excellency is marching towards the ſaid place.
20. That his Excellencie hath ſecured Bewdly from the Cavalee s.
21. Of the taking of a Cheſt at Somerſet houſe and brought before the Parliament.
22. The Parliaments Inſtructions to the E. of Eſſex, concerning their petition to the King. 23. Of a Poſt being ſent to Worceſter.
24. A true Recitall of M. Stricklands Letter out of Holland to the Parliament.
25. With a Relation how the States of Holland ſtand affected to the Parliament.

Octob 8. Printed for *ROBERT WOOD*, 1642.

PETTIGREW MUSEUM

A

CONTINUATION

OF

Speciall Remarkable Passages, from both Houses of Parliament: From Munday the 3d. of *Octob.* till the 6th. of *Octob.* 1642.

MUnday there came Letters to the Parliament out of *Lancashire* from *Manchester*, intimating that there hath lately beene a great fight between the Towne, of *Manchester* and the Lord *Strange*, who set upon the Towne, having at least 1000. men, but the Townesmen did so bravely acquit themselves, that they slew fix score of his men, and tooke fourescore Prisoners, and caused them to retreate towards *Preston*, the Townesmen loosing but five men in all, three of them being accidentally slaine by their fellowe Souldiers. They doe earnestly desire some speedy aid from the Parliament which was intended to have been sent unto them by the Lord General from *Worcester*: But the Parliament having received Information that his Majestie intends to drawe all the forces hee can possible together to meete the Lord Generall. It was not thought convenient that his Excellency should send any of those forces that are with him to *Manchester*, but the House have taken

ken order that a thousand Dragoniers shall forthwith be raised in *London* upon the Propositions and bee sent thither under the command of Sir *Edward Ceton* for it is very much feared by the Towne that the Lord *Strange* will make another attempt against it very suddenly, and they are resolved to try it out with him and not to yeeld, they having gotten 2. pieces of Ordnance into the Towne, and are casting their Bells into Ordnance, whereby they may the better defend themselves untill more ayd and assistance can bee sent unto them.

Letters came from the Earle of *Warwick* intimating that he had lately taken 2. ships loden with store of Arms and Ammunition, and about seven hundred thousand pounds in Money, which was comming out of *Denmarke* to assist the King.

A Letter came from the Earle of *Essex* signifying that hee had sent to the Earle of *Dorset* to acquaint him that he had a Petition to present to his Majestie from both Houses of Parliament, desiring his Lordship to acquaint his Majestie therewith, and that hee might be informed of some fitting way or meanes for the presenting thereof to his Majestie which for the present the Earle of *Essex* could not doe in regard he knewe not certainly whether his Majestie would receive it, or how it should come peaceably to him, whereupon the Earle of *Dorset* sent a Letter to the Earle of *Essex* intimating that he had acquainted his Majestie therewith who answered that he would alwayes have his eare open to any Petition that came from the Parliament but would not receive any from the hands of Traytors, or any that he had proclaimed soe.

Whereupon being put to the Question it was voted to this effect, *viz.*

That for his Majestie to deny the receiving of any Petition by the hands of those that he accompts to be Traytors, is in effect a flat denyall of receiving any Petition at all from them, for in proclayming the Earle of *Essex* a Traytor hee had proclaymed the whole Parliament Traytors so that his

Majesties

Majesties refusing to receive this petition was a great abridgment of the *Priviledge of Parliament*, and therefore voted, that the said Earl should advance forwards with his forces; and that the *Earl of Essex* should use some means that those forces of the house should be preferred to his Majesty.

On *Tuesday* morning letters were read in the house, which came from *Yorkshire*, certifying the house, that since the taking up of Arms in that County under the Command of the L. *Fairfax* against the *Earl of Cumberland* and his *Cavaliers*, there was a Treaty of Peace, and certain Articles agreed upon on both sides, whereby they agreed that Armes should be laid down on both sides, and that they should stand as Neuters betwixt the *King and Parliament*, and preserve the peace of the County against all Forces that should come against them; and that his Majesty shall have liberty to remove all the Cannons and Ammunition as he hath in that county, except such as M. *Hotham* brought from *Hull*, with divers other Articles very prejudiciall to that county: but Mr. *Hotham* and many others that were for the *Parliament* did utterly refuse to joyn in the said agreement, but were gone to *Doncaster* there to remain with those Forces they had, untill they hear what further directions they shall receive from the *Parliament*.

It was also certified by letters to the house, that Sir *Edward Hyron* high Sheriffe of Yorkshire, which formerly hath shewed a good affection to the *Parliament*, had a great hand in drawing on the county to agree to those Articles.

At which agreement the house was much discontented, and after long debate therof, a Declaration was drawn up, shewing, that none of the parties had any authority to bind the County to any such Neutrality, it being a priviledge peculiar to the *Parliament* onely.

Secondly, That it is very prejudiciall to the whole Kingdome. Thirdly, that it is derogatory to the power and authority of Parliament. Fourthly, That many things in that Agreement, are very unequall, contrary to the nature of Neutrality, being more advantagious to one side then another, and would be a great Impeachment to that good Agreement betwixt his Majesty and his subjects, which both houses do earnestly desire.

Inf)

Information was also given to the house, that although the County of *Hereford* for the greatest part thereof, were heretofore against the *Parliament*, they are now better informed in their judgments, and begin to incline much towards the *Parliament*, being much incensed against the Cavaleers, and have sent 300 men to *Worcester* to aid and assist the *Parliament*, under the Lord Generall.

There was Letters came to the house on *Wednesday*, that the Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham* in the County of *Lincoln*, signifying that he had received instruction from the house, for the aiding and assisting of *Yorkshire* against the E. of *Cumberland*, and that notwithstanding the Treaty and agreement that was made between the L. *Fairfaxe* and the rest of the Gentry and the Earl of *Cumberland*; yet he intends to go on according to his instructions, and that on *Thursday* next the whole body of *Yorkshire* were to meet, according to appointment at their making of the said Agreement; at which meeting they expect to hear the pleasure of the house, which doubtlesse they will present for the whole west Ryding, and a great other part of that County, were dissenting to the said Agreement.

Letters were read in the house of Commons, intimating that the City of *Hereford* being apprehensive of the danger that they were in be reason of the Cavaleers, which they feared would surprize that City, and so expose them to much danger, as they had done lately at *Worster*, they sent to the E. of *Essex*, shewing that they desired to assist the *Parliament*, but because there was a great Malignant party in the City, those that were well-affected did not dare to stand upon their guard without they had some forces sent from the *Parliament* which they might cleave unto. Wherupon his Excellency sent one thousand foot, and four Troopes of horse to make good that City, and to settle the *Militia* there, and that a sufficient Garrison should stay there to maintain the peace thereof.

Letters came out of *Somersetshire*, intimating that Sir *Ralph Hopton* with about 100 men were gone into *Cornwall*, but the Marquis of *Hartford* was in *Monmouthshire* in *Wales*, and that

that the Earl of *Bedford* had left a ſtrong garriſon at *Minhead* and ſeverall other places, to keep the *Marquis* from comming back again to any of thoſe ſtrong holds.

There was alſo upon Thurſday laſt, being the ſixth of October, a packet of Letters brought to the Houſe from Yarmouth, which were taken comming out of Holland with a ſhip and divers other things, together with many Commanders therein, comming from the Queen to aſſiſt his Majeſty, which were taken in this manner, viz.

On Monday night laſt, there was a ſhip driven in at Yarmouth by a contrary wind (it being bound for Newcaſtle) which came out of Holland, being a ſhip which her Majeſty bought with her own money, and had ſent it before to his Majeſty, the Queen her ſelfe as his ſuppoſed being very ſhortly to come after, having ſhipping prepared for her conduct, which ſhip was ſearched at Yarmouth, and about 140. Commanders were in it, and twelve pieces of Ordnance, with great ſtore of powder, &c. which were brought up to London.

This day Newes was brought to the Houſe, that Prince Robert with about ten Troops of horſe was at Bridgenorth, the Kings Majeſty being for the moſt part at Shrewsbury, and it was conceived that the E. of Eſſex with his mayne Army are now upon their march toward Bridgnorth, where the King hath drawn his main forces his Excellency being now in the midway between Worſter and Bridgnorth, having left a ſtrong Garriſon in Bewdly, which ſtands upon the River of Severn, and ſo the two Armies being drawne ſo neer together, it is very probable they will have another Battle very ſhortly.

This

This day a Cheſt was brought to the Parliament house which was taken going out of Somerſet-house by water, and nayled up very faſt, wherin was thought to have bin ſome of the *Friars Treaſure*, but being opened, there was nothing in it of any great conſequence.

Vpon *Friday* there was a Conference of both houſes, concerning the preſenting of the petition which the E. of Eſſex hath to be preſented to the King, and ageeed that in regard his Majeſty had refuſed to accept thereof, from any that he had proclaimed to be trayters, and in ſo doing, he had denyed to receive any petition from the *Parliament*: It was agreed that His Excellency ſhould proceede according to his Inſtructions, and that he ſhould uſe ſuch means for the preſenting of the ſaid petition to his Majeſty, as he ſhould think fit, and therupon a Poſt was ſent away to his Excellency with Letters to that effect.

Letters was reade in the houſe which came out of Holland from M. *Strickland*, intimating that the queen had provided 4. ſhips to come into England with men and ammunition to aſſiſt his Maj. and that the States of Holland had made ſtay therof, and that the united Provinces did profeſſe much love and affection to the *Parliament*, and was very vigilant that no proviſion of Men, Arms, or Moneys, ſhould come from thence to aid his Majeſty in this unnatural war againſt his good Subiects.

VVherupon it was agreed, that a Letter of thanks ſhould bee ſent to the States of Holland, for their faithfulneſſe to this Kingdome.

October 8. printed for *Robert Wood*, 164[illegible]



1643

24.

THE LORD Stanley STRANGE HIS DEMANDS:

Propounded to the Inhabitants of the Town of MANCHESTER, concerning a pacification, and laying down of Armes:

WITH

The valiant Answer and Resolution of the Commanders and Souldiers, in denying and withstanding the said Demands.

ALSO

The names of the Scots Elders and Ministers chosen by the Commissioners of Scotland *to be sent to the Assembly of Divines appointed by the Parliament to be holden at* London *for the setling of Religion.*

LONDON,
Printed for Th. Cook. *October* 8. 1642.

THE LORD
STRANGE
HIS DEMANDS

Propounded to the Inhabitants of the Town
of MANCHESTER, concerning Succession, and laying down of Arms:

WITH
The valiant Answer and Resolution of the Commanders and Souldiers, in denying and refusing the said Demands.

ALSO
Their Sure Adherence to Maintain the Good Cause of Scotland to be for the defence of Divine appointed by the Parliament to Solemn Covenant for the Glory of Religion.

LONDON,
Printed for Th. Cook. October 8. 1651.

THE LORD STRANGE his Demands of the Inhabitants of MANCHESTER.

Also a Catalogue of those Elders and Ministers that were chosen by the Commissioners of the Generall Assembly of Scotland, to present to the Assembly of Divines in England.

THe late Lord Strange, now Earle of Darby, having strongly besieged the towne of Manchester in the County Palatine of Lancaster, and lien before it with his Forces, to the number of two thousand Foot and six hundred horse, with 8. or 9. Peeces of Ordnance, from the four and twentieth of September to this present, since which time many shot have been discharged on both sides, the Lord Strange planted his Ordnance in two severall places, and

plaid very fiercely upon the Towne, and so hath continued night and day ever since, but hath done very little or no harme: his Muskeriers have made many furious assaults against the town, and were as bravely withstood by those of the towne, who most courageously defended their works, & made good their quarters against the enemy, beating them off, and killing above an hundred of them (among which were some Commanders of note) without the losse of one man.

His Lordship seeing that by force he could not prevaile against the towne, hee sent a messenger to desire a parley with the inhabitants of the towne, but they would not condescend unto it, till after foure or five messages from his Lordship, and then they agreed that there should bee a cessation of Armes on both sides, from tuesday in the afternoone, till seven of the clock the next day: in the mean while the L. Strange propounded these demands following:

1. That

1. That they would lay downe their armes, and deliver them up to his Lordship.

2. That he might march through the town with his Army, which were both denied.

3. That they would deliver him a thousand pound in money.

4. Then he demanded but two hundred Muskets.

5. Seeing none of these would bee granted, rather then be frustrate in all his demands, in his last message he desired but fifty Muskets, and he would raise his siege and leave the town.

After some debate and serious consultation concerning these demands between the Commanders and common souldiers, a peremptory and resolute answer was returned his Lordship by the unanimous consent of them all, that he should not have so much as a sword. The towne hath now held out a compleat fortnight, and still continues with an undaunted resolution to stand it out against

against him. Many of his souldiers run away, and confesse they have neither meat nor money, but what they get by robbing. Captain Bradshaw hath behaved himselfe most valiantly, to his everlasting renown. The enemy have discharged their Ordnance above three hundred times, and the Musketiers have done what they could, and yet have we not lost one person in the fight, but a boy unarmed standing upon a stile, but the townsmen have killed above a hundred, and taken eighty prisoners of the enemies.

A Catalogue of the Elders and Ministers of Scotland appointed by the Commissioners to be sent to the Assembly of Divines in England for setting of Religion.

Certain Letters are sent from Scotland to the Parliament, and read in the House of Commons, directed to the Lords and Commons now assembled

assembled in the high Court of Parliament of England, in manner of a Remonstrance, wherein they did declare the sense that they have of the great distractions and distempers of this Kingdome, tending to the subversion of the long established government thereof, and the confusion of the whole State, and in the end would prove the distruction of that their Kingdome of Scotland; and therefore the Lords and Commons of that Kingdome are resolved to present a Petition to His Majesty, with such reasons as they conceive may move him to an accommodation of peace & agreement with both his Houses of Parliament, but if the same should be rejected, they are resolved to assist the Parliament with force of armes, to defend their just cause, and to bring all delinquents and incendiaries that have disturbed the peace of the Kingdome, and caused these troubles, to condigne punishment, which the House with great joy and much thankfulnesse accepted of.

The

The Parliament seeing distractions and divisions, and schismes to be crept into the Church, have made choice of an assembly of divers reverend and learned Divines for the setling and reforming of Religion: and the Commissioners of the generall Assembly of Scotland have made choice of three Elders, and six Ministers to be present at the Assembly of Divines here in England.

The Elders are { The Earle of Cassells. / Lord Maitland. / Sir Archibald Johnston

The Scots Ministers are,

M. Henderson. M. Bayly.
M. Douglasse. M. Gelaspe.
M. Rutherfurd. M. Borthwicke.

FINIS.



TRUE,

But Sad and Dolefull Newes FROM SHREWSBVRY.

Expreſſed in two ſeverall LETTERS:

Whereof,

The one was written to a Gentleman of the *Inner-Temple:*

The other,

To a friend in *London,* relating at large the ſeverall Paſſages of the late skirmiſh at or near *Worceſter,* between a Party of each Army, *viz.*

Under the Command of Prince *Robert* on the one ſide, and of Colonell *Sands* on the other.

Confirmed by a Letter ſent from Prince *Robert* to His MAIESTIE. *Septemb.* 24.

With divers other Circumſtances of ſeverall Paſſages at that time. With the Cornets *Motives.*

Octob. 10. 1642.

Imprinted at *Yorke,* and now re-printed in *London,* 1642.

Sad and dolefull Newes from SHREWSBVRY.

The first Letter.

SIR,

I Doe beleeve you have heard of the flight between His Majesties Forces and my Lord of Essexes; but yet I thinke you have not heard the truth, or any true relations thereof; for we have them in print here with us from London: Your Diurnall sayes Prince *Robert* is dead, and his brother dangerously hurt, and most of the Cavaliers cut off, nay that thanks are given to God for it, but beleeve it not: For now even their friends begin to be ashamed of their lyes. And therefore I will relate the very truth of it.

Sir *Iohn Byron* was in Worcester with two Troops of Horse and some Foot, Prince *Robert* marcht away from his Majesty with 8 Troops of Horse, and came to Worcester upon Fryday, about foure of the clocke in the afternoone; and as he was marching through the Towne, Newes came that about 12 Troops of Horse, and about 500 Dragoneers were marching to the Towne: Whereupon, Prince *Robert* sent Sir *Iohn Byron* with two Troops of Horse to view

the Enemy, and the Prince in the meane time set his men in a Battalia, and Sir *Iohn Byron* retreating back to the Prince, they marcht towards the Enemy and met them, upon the Top of a Hill they stood looking about halfe an houre one on another. At length, they comming nearer together, Sir *Alexander Douglas* discharged his Pistoll against Serjeant Major *Byron*, but mist him, for it was about seven yards distance; but Prince *Robert* commanded ours not to charge the enemy just untill they came to their Breasts, the which they did well observe; For the Front of the Parliament Troops discharging at too uncertaine a distance, did no execution; but the Front of Prince *Roberts* Troops comming on, discharged just at their breasts, and quite cut off the Front: Serjeant Major *Byron* shot a bullet into *Douglas* belly; Prince *Robert* his Brother, and Sir *Lewis Dives* slew each a man; Colonell *Wilmot* singled out Colonell *Sandys*, and gave him his deaths-wound, though he like a valiant Commander fought while he had one drop of bloud. The Parliaments forces endured two shots well, but at the third they were routed, and the Prince had them in chase halfe a mile. The Parliaments 500 Dragoneers were placed upon a Bridge, about a quarter of a mile off; but their Horse being routed, came to the Bridge to get over, so that then the Dragoneers all fled, but with their making too much haste, there were about 60 drowned, which fell over the Bridge. There were about 350 slaine and drowned, divers common Troopers taken prisoners; but their Horse and Armes taken from them, they were set free againe, because they were not worth their breed.

We have here prisoner one Captaine *Wingate*, Burgesse for Saint Albans, and he fought valiantly. We lost but foure men; the one was a Cornet to Master *Hastings* Troop,

and brother to my Lord *Beaumond*. Prince *Robert* is very well, though he ventured as far as any Trooper of them all; Prince *Maurice* is wounded in the head, but no danger; Sir *Lewis Dives* was shot through the Arme, Commissary *Wilmot* cut in the backe, but all of them were with the King abroad the next or within two dayes after the fight.

When the Marquesse of Hartford is come, and my Lord *Strange* we shall march forward; We expect them on Munday at night; My Lord *Strange* would have been here before this, but only that he is talking with Manchester, and then we make no question but we shall be able to march through England.

Colonell *Sandys* behaved himselfe like a Gentleman and a Soldier, for he charged upon us valiantly, and at the houre of his death, said, That we had cut off the flower of their chivalry, and dyed very penitently. Prince *Robert* sent his Chaplaine, Doctor *Wall* to him, to whom he confest his disloyalty to the King and the Church, praying God and the King to forgive him. I pray you remember my love to our friends at Moregate, and tell them I am very well, and hope to be with them within these three weeks. So with my love to your selfe, &c. I rest,

Shrewsbury, *September* 30. Yours; *B. H.*

Postscript.

Captaine *Browne*, Colonell of the Dragoneers ran away at the first.

The Welsh-men come in apace.

The

The Second LETTER.

I Have written to you the laſt weeke, which I preſume you have received, whereby I informed you of my ſafe arrivall here. Since that time I have been in ſome part of Wales, and am laſt night returned here. Where the King is with his Army, the Earle of Eſſex is alſo at Worceſter: Where for his firſt entertainment, the vant carryers of his Army were ſhrewdly handled by Prince *Robert*, who with 8 Troops of Horſe routed a thouſand of the Parliaments forces, killed 300 in the place, brought ſix Cornets with him here, taken in the field, and one Parliament man taken; Colonell *Sands* and other Commanders were ſlaine, and the reſt taken or drowned in the river, and all this only with the loſſe of foure men on the Kings ſide, and Prince *Maurice* ſleightly hurt with a ſword in the head, with ſome others, but without danger of death. The King is here very ſtrong, and they flocke to him in multitudes. There is at Bridgenorth ſome two or three Regiments of the King, where laſt night ſome of his Excellencies Army came and made a bravado, and valiantly ran the ſame way they came. It is expected that in a ſhort time there will be a Battell, the King hath already defied the Earle, and it is expected, ſome twelve dayes will decide the quarrell.

Farwell.

A True Copy of a Letter sent by Prince *Robert* to his MAIESTIE.

SIR,

THE Bearer will with all your Circumstances tell your Majesty our Proceedings at Worcester, I shall only say this, That upon your Majesties Commands to succour the Towne, we went thither with our Forces, and found the Rebels on both sides of the Towne, no Ammition, nor nothing fitting to entertaine so great a Force as the Lord of Essex would have brought that Night. But all things in so great a disorder, that certainly we had all been lost, had we not by a great chance met with ten Troops of their Horse, and five of their Dragoneers, which we did entirely rout, and killed most of their chiefest Officers. The Manner and the Names I leave for the said Bearer to tell you. Your Majesty will be pleased to accept this as a beginning of your Officers and my Duty; and I doubt not, as (certainly) they behaved themselves all very bravely and gallantly, that hereafter Your Majesty shall finde the same behaviour against a more considerable number. Of this Your Majesty may be very confident, as also of the endeavours of

SIR,

Your Majesties

Most obedient Nephew,
and humble Servant,

From *Bodfort* this 24 of *Sept.* 1642.

ROBERT.

Sir, *This Gentleman hath behaved himself so gallantly, That I must needs humbly desire your Majesty to knight him, which will encourage him and all others to continue the Affection for your Service.*

The

The Circumstances related by Master *Crane*, who is knighted. He is (I heare) Prince *Roberts* Cornet.

THat at the first Charge, Prince *Robert*, Prince *Maurice*, Master *Foxe*, and two more, charged and defeated a Troop, whom they knew not to be enemies till they were upon them, by their Orange colour Scarfes.

That seven Cornets are taken some I saw.

That severall Officers are kill'd on their side, particularly, *Douglas* and *Sandys*; that the last repented before his Death, for having borne Armes against the King.

That severall men are taken, as Captaine *Wagot* of the House of Commons, and others.

That we have but three kil'd in all.

That but three of ours of quality have been hurt; Master *Wilmot* in the back, and the worst of any, but yet he marches in a Coach and is merry. Sir *Lewis Dives* through the shoulder; M. *Byron* (a brother of Sir *Iohns*) over the face. I heard he hath said, that Prince *Maurice* is a little hurt, but I understood him but those three.

That Captaine *Browne*, who commanded in chiefe as Colonell of the Dragoneers, was one of the first that ran away.

That our men are very hearty with the victory, and the spoile of the killed (as Horses, Armes, Buff-coats, Money in their pockets) and the Enemy (as they heare) much disheartened, and not likely to make so great haste from about Worcester as they meant.

The Cornets Mottoes.

PRo Rege & Regno.
Exurgat & Dissipabuntur.
Pro Rege & Religione.
Si pro Patria Mortui, non Mœsti.

The rest were so torne, the Mottoes could not be read.

FINIS.



A DECLARATION OF THE Commons Assembled in PARLIAMENT.

For bringing to condigne punishment, those that have raised false and scandalous Rumors against the House, how that they intend to assesse every Mans Pewter, and lay excize upon other Commodities.

ORdered by the Commons in Parliament, That this be forth-with printed and published.

H. Elsynge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

As also further directions to his Excellence the Earle of *Essex* Generall of the Army, and to the Committee for his assistance in the Army, appointed by both Houses of PARLIAMENT.

LONDON,
Printed for *Richard Best*, *October*, 10. 1642.

DECLARATION

OF THE

Commons Assembled in

For bringing to condign punish-

ment some Authors and Insti-

gators of the late Tumults about

the Parliament, and Lord

Mayor of London.

Ordered by the Commons in Parliament, That

this Declaration be forthwith printed and published.

Also further directions to his Excellence

the Earle of Essex Generall of the Army,

and the Committee with him.

Printed for Richard Bishop, 1642.

Die Sabbati, 8. *Octobr.* 1642.

THE Commons Houſe of Parliament receiving information, that divers publique Rumors and Aſperſions, are by Malignant perſons caſt upon this Houſe, That they intend to aſſeſſe every mans Pewter, and lay Excizes upon that and other commodities; The ſaid Houſe for their Vindication therein doe declare, that thoſe rumors are falſe

and ſcandalous. And foraſmuch as theſe falſe rumors & ſcandalls, are raiſed by ill-affected perſons, and tend much to the diſ-ſervice of the Parliament, it is therefore Ordered, that the Authors of theſe falſe & ſcandalous rumours ſhall be ſearched and inquired after, and apprehended and brought to this Houſe to receive their condigne puniſhment.

DIRECTIONS

For *Robert* Earle of *Essex*, Captaine Generall of the Army for the defence of the King and Parliament, and the persons hereafter named, to be a Committee for his assistance in the Army. That is to say, the Committee appointed by both Houses of Parliament touching the Affaires of the Army

THE said Committee, or any foure of them, whereof the said Earle of *Essex* to be one, shall have power to meet together at such times and places as they shall thinke fit. And to consult and advise touching such matters that shall concerne the Army, as the said Earle

of *Eſſex* ſhall thinke convenient. And from time to time ſhall acquaint both houſes of Parliament, with their reſolutions therein; That both Houſes may further proceed thereupon, as to them ſhall bee thought convenient for the publick.

They or foure of them, whereof the Earle of *Eſſex* to be one, ſhall have power, and are hereby authorized to adviſe and uſe all convement and reaſonable meanes they can, to ſupply the Army with money & other neceſſaries; And for that end and purpoſe are hereby authoriſed to take the ſubſcriptions of all perſons that ſhall give, lend, or advance any Mony, Plate, or other Proviſions

whatsoever necessary for the army, & shal give a note unto all such persons that so shall lend or advance, expressing the nature and particular thereof. Which Note subscribed with the hand of the said Earle of *Essex* and any three of the said Committee, whereof two to bee of the House of Commons, shall be sufficient warrant for the party that shall so lend or advance, to receive the same again with interest, after the rate of 8 pounds *per cent.* out of such monies as shall be collected for the affairs of this Kingdom, and both Houses doth engage the publick faith for the same.

They, or any foure of them, whereof the Earle of *Essex* to be one,

one, shall have power, and are hereby authorized to sit with the said Earle, and to examine all such persons as shall be sent for, apprehended and brought before them by vertue of any Warrant sent and issued under the hand of the Lord Generall, and shall have power to continue them in safe custody, and send them up to the Parliament, or discharge them as they shall thinke fit, and shall most tend to the publike good.

FINIS.

IO
Fr
H
Decl
c
Al
WA
Bein
Bri



PLOTS, CONSPIRACIES AND ATTEMPTS OF Domeſtick and Forraigne Enemies of the Romiſh Religion,

Againſt the Princes and Kingdomes of *ENGLAND*, *SCOTLAND* and *IRELAND*.

BEGINNING

With the Reformation of Religion under Queene *ELIZABETH*, unto this preſent Yeare, 1642.

Briefly Collected by G.B.C.

PSA. CXXIV. VI.

Bleſſed be the Lord, who hath not given us as a prey to their teeth.

IT is Ordered by the Committe of the Houſe of Commons concerning Printing this 19th. day of *September*, 1642. That this Booke be printed. *John White.*

LONDON,

Printed for *Ralph Rounthwait*, 1642.

Octob: 10

BRITISH MUSEUM

The Contents.

Philip ſecond King of *Spaine*, his offer of Marriage with Q. *Elizabeth* rejected.

The practice of the *Guiſes* with the Q. of *Scots*, againſt the Crowne of *England*.

The Rebellion of the Earles of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmerland*, the Pope ſends Letters to the King of *Spaine*, and K. of *Portugall*, to ſend an Army to invade *England*.

Leo: Dacrees joyning with the Rebells, indevoureth to deliver the Q. of *Scots*, after a ſharp conflict with the Lo. of *Hunſdon* is put to flight.

Iames Fitz-Morris of the Houſe of *Deſmond*, raiſeth Rebellion in *Ireland*.

Thomas and *Edward Stanley* with others conſpire againſt the Queene.

Don Iohn of *Auſtria*, his perpetuall (but treacherous) Edict for Peace.

Stucley, his deſigne againſt *Ireland*, turned another way by the K. of *Portugall*.

Iames Fitz-Morris, his ſecond attempt to reduce *Ireland* to Popery.

San: Ioſephus an *Italian*, ſent by the Pope and K. of *Spaine* with 700. *Spaniards* and *Italians* into *Ireland*.

Campian Sherewin and others, comming into *England*, taken and condemned for Treaſon.

Somervile, his deſperate attempt againſt the Queenes Perſon.

Mendoza the *Spaniſh* Embaſſador, thruſt out of *England*, for practiſing with *Throgmorton* and others to invade the Land.

D. *Parry*, for practiſing the Queenes death executed.
Savage and others, their attempt to kill the Queene.
The *French* Ambaſſador, his plot to kill the Queene.
The *Spaniſh* Armado, in *Anno* 1588.
D. *Lopez* his attempt to poyſon the Queene.
Squires practiſe to poyſon the Queenes Saddle.
Tyrone, his Rebellion in *Ireland*.
Garnet, *Cateſby* and others, their attempt for Invaſion of *England*.
Sir *Griffin Markham* and others, their conſpiracy againſt King *Iames*.
The Helliſh Gun-powder Treaſon.
The preſent bloudy Rebellion in *Ireland*.

Gentle Reader,

THou mayeſt evidently ſee by this enſuing diſcourſe, what are the fruits and effects of Popery, how the Popes have kindled the fier amongſt all the Princes and States of Europe, and like Balaam the falſe Prophet, troubled us with their wiles, curſed the Church and State of England, and by their Incendiaries, the Prieſts and Ieſuites (for effecting their owne pernicious and diveliſh deſignes) have ſtirred up one Nation againſt another, and all Chriſtendome againſt the Engliſh, tainted many a great Houſe, and endangered their Lives and Eſtates, to the ruine of great and Noble Families in this Kingdome.

BRITISH LIBRARY

Plots, Conſpiracies and Attempts of Domeſtick and Forraigne Enemies of the Romiſh Religion, Againſt the Princes and Kingdomes of *England*, *Scotland* and *IRELAND*, &c.

THoſe which make deſcriptions of large Countries in ſmall Tables, offend not againſt truth, though ſomewhat againſt quantity, ſo *Pliny* telleth us. Notwithſtanding with much convenience, eaſe to the beholder, and truth of obſervation, things are preſented to our eyes in thoſe little draughts, that the very places themſelves being viewed with great trouble and loſſe of time, cannot yeeld more benefit to the moſt diligent, oftentimes not ſo much. Wherefore, eſpecially, becauſe the argument cannot be now unſeaſonable (for the abridgement of the commentaries of large Hiſtories, is not unlike Maps of Kingdomes) I have here collected out of divers Authors, which have ſeverally handled parts of this ſubject, into one, The chiefe conſpiracies and attempts againſt the Kingdomes alone and immediately of great *Britany* and *Ireland*, or elſe mediately through the ſides of the Princes of theſe Countries, by Traytors at home or abroad, of the Romiſh Religion, or forraigne Enemies, by treacherous courſes of thoſe of the ſame bloody ſuperſtition. The beginning I make the firſt time of reformation of Religion here in *England* under Queene *Elizabeth*, and the extent unto this preſent yeere. I begin no higher then Queene *Elizabeth*, becauſe the Reformation of *Henry* the eight was but in part, and the other of King *Edward*, was an interrupted one, by the ſuddaine ſucceſſion of his ſiſter Qu. *Mary*; the rather, becauſe, for ought we know, there was no great matter plotted againſt

this hopefull young Prince, that was not rather from ambition, (if there was any ſuch) then from a deſire of ſubverting Religion. Not but that the Enemies of our Religion and Kingdome, had us then in their minds; but other wayes there were, before bloody and deſperate practiſes were to be taken in hand, to be firſt entred into, of leſſe difficulty, and more hopefull ſucceſſe. And theſe are the ſteps the adverſaries of our Religion uſe to tread, who thirſting after *England*, labour firſt to bring us back to *Rome*, by ſtriving to make our ſelves hate our own Religion, and leave that God which brought us out of the Land of *Egypt*, bewitching us with glorious Idolatry of the golden Calves of *Rome*, introducing ignorance and blindneſſe, that we may, when our eyes are out, patiently grind in the Mill of ſlavery. If this courſe faile, the next is by poiſon, murder and force of Armes, to draw us to *Sodom* and *Egypt*.

The Reformation of *England* and *Ireland* fall under one time, and becauſe that of *Scotland* alſo differeth not many yeares in age, they may all be brought in one account. With the Plots are joyntly handled the Deliverances, which in ſome reſpect or other may very well be called great, either in regard of the miſery we had fallen into, if God had not prevented them, of the ſlavery of ſoule and body, and this agreeth with all: Or elſe for the ſtrangeneſſe of the diſcoveries of their miſchiefes, (ſometime almoſt miraculous) before they have come to their birth, or diſappointing them of their purpoſes, when the Authors have put them in practiſe; and theſe two reſpects, the one or the other, which may well denominate Gods goodneſſe to us, in diſappointing them to be great, may be found in all likewiſe. So that for theſe mercies received, we ought to aſcribe to our Deliverer that which is due unto him, the praiſe of his own work, and continuall thanks for his mercies, which even to this day, is from thoſe deliverances of the dayes of old, extended; we ſhould have bin then betrayed, but we had now bin ſlaves, both we our ſelves and ours; one Plot, had it ſucceeded, had bin the betraying of *England* at once to them, who love themſelves too well to have loſt it eaſily, and are ſo wiſe, that they indure no Traytors, but for themſelves, nor can endure any that loves his Country but a *Spaniard*. We may learne alſo to truſt in him, even now particularly, who is the ſame yeſterday and to day, and for ever; nor is his hand ſhortened that he cannot ſave, nor his care heavy that he cannot heare thoſe that call upon him, lifting up

pure

pure hands in ſincerity of heart: although the ſinnes of our Nation in generall, may juſtly provoke our God to puniſh us by them that hate us, for that cauſe, that inſteed of extirpating Popery and ſuperſtition, (a thing not hard to be done in humane reaſon, if the children of Papiſts were carefully educated under Proteſtant Tutors) we think their Religion tolerable, and nothing ſo dangerous to ſoule or body as ſome men ſeeme to make it. Should we not deteſt and abhorre the Religion of ſuch a generation, as count they doe God good ſervice, by killing us? witneſſe the bloody perſecution under Qu. *Mary*, and the damnable plot of the Gunpowder Treaſon. Yet ſome there are that would ſeeme Proteſtants, and yet deny that their cruelty was ſuch, as the Author of the *Engliſh* Martyrology makes the *Marian* perſecution to be: others of no ſmall eſteeme in the Church of *England*, inſteed of acknowledging *Foxes* Hiſtory a monument of Martyrs, call it a Booke fraught with Traytors and Heretiques. And for the Gunpowder conſpiracy, ſome affirme it the deeds of a few male-contents, farre from the approbation of the Catholikes, others as falſely, that there was no ſuch Treaſon intended, but that it was an invention of him, whom in reverence I forbeare to Name. But yet this may incourage us, that God will ſtill preſerve us, for their ſakes that have now and heretofore ſtoutly defended Gods true Religion, and that in very many places of this Land, we have had thoſe that with all their power have oppoſed the very beginnings of Popery. But wonderfull it is, and ſcarcely credible, that any ſhould ſo much have forgotten the Gunpowder Treaſon, as to ſay, that they would rather truſt a Papiſt then a Puritan. As if they beleeved not there was any ſuch Treaſon, or had forgotten it; or that they thought that thoſe whom men call Puritans, were traiterouſly minded, and bloody perſons. In the moſt Reverend and Judicious Aſſembly of this Kingdome, a Member of that Aſſembly, declared in particulars, how the beſt men have bin branded with the name of Puritan, (it was where any man might freely have ſpoken,) yet no man contradicted him. If it be given ſometime to the beſt, without queſtion thoſe ordinarily called by that bie name, are none of the worſt; becauſe, from likeneſſe at leaſt divers men have one Name. We will acknowledge hypocrites among them, but becauſe one is ſuch, no man will conclude they muſt be all ſo. No man of us almoſt abhorreth the name of Proteſtant to be given him, and yet of theſe, ſome will lye, others will

ſteale,

ſteale, and a third ſort will doe worſe. Since this Parliament (perhaps I imagine the time, and reaſon aright) the Jeſuites and Ieſuited have invented a ſtrange Name for ſuch men, and let fall the reproach of Puritan. They call them by a figurative Name, which is ignorantly ſpoken by moſt, falſly by all, and as the roundeſt figure is of the largeſt capacity, ſo they have ſhaped them a Name, which larger then Preciſian, Browniſt, or the like, ſurroundeth every one, that thinketh it not a juſt thing to raile againſt the Parliament, or curſe the Fathers of his Country. But I deſire not to be called, but to be *totus teres, atq; rotundus.* So much by the way; to fall upon the buſineſſe now.

King of Spaine *offereth Marriage to the Queene.*

AT the beginning of the raigne of Queene *Elizabeth*, *Philip* the ſecond of *Spaine* ſought to winne her to him by Marriage, not doubting to procure a diſpenſation for the Inceſt, but was as wiſely anſwered, as he wickedly and craftily intended, that the Queene could not ſo ſoone forget her Siſters death, ſhe knowing it to be a part of diſcretion to keepe in hope ſo potent an Adverſary, if he ſhould be incenſed by a deniall (her own Kingdome, by reaſon of the change of Religion, and the depriving of many popiſh Biſhops, which the blinded people had in ſome eſteeme, among many other alterations, being of doubtfull affections) till ſhe could better provide for her own ſecurity. The *Spaniard* in the mean time perceived that his ſuite was not like to ſucceede; when the thought of uniting *England* to *Spaine* by the Marriage of Q. *Elizabeth*, if like her ſiſter *Mary* ſhe proved not barren, was taken away, he tooke hold on the next occaſion.

The practice of the Guiſes *With the Queene of* Scots *againſt* ENGLAND.

MAry was now Queene of *Scots*, Daughter and heire apparant unto *James* the fift, and Wife unto *Francis Dauphine* of *France*, Daughter of *Mary* of *Loraine*, who was Siſter unto the Duke of *Guiſe*. She, after the death of Q. *Mary* of *England*, being incouraged thereunto by the *Guiſes* her Uncles, uſurpeth the Armes of *England*, uniting them to the Armes of *Scotland*, on her plate, in the windowes of her houſe, and on her ſervants coates, declaring her ſelfe thereby Queen

of

of *England*. Her meaning was well underſtood, and this (it is very probable) in the fourth yeare of Qu. *Elizabeth*, made *Arthur Poole* and his Brethren, deſcended of *George* Duke of *Clarence*, Brother to *Edward* the fourth, and *Anthony Forteſcue* their Brother in law, with their confederates, to conſpire ſecretly to fly unto the *Guiſes* in *France*, and thence, and with their help, to come with an Army into *Wales*, and there to proclaime the Queen of *Scots* Queen of *England*, and *Arthur Poole* Duke of *Clarence*. God was pleaſed in a very good time to diſcover this plot. For had they gone thither, and diſcovered their intents, it had (if God had not powerfully oppoſed it) not only animated the *Guiſes* to have ſeconded them, and furniſhed them with men and money, but having returned into *Wales*, they would have gathered great forces to augment their numbers, and put the Queen to the incomparable trouble and danger of a civill warre. Beſide all this, ſhe had at this time on every ſide enemies abroad, the *French* King, the King of *Spaine*, the *Guiſian* and Popiſh faction in *Scotland*. The loyall people of *Scotland* were ſo unable to help her, that they ſtood in need of her help. The Low Countries were under *Spaniſh* tyranny, and a convenient place from whence to annoy this Kingdome. The conſpirators confeſſed that they did not intend to put in practiſe this thing, during the life of our Queen; for indeed they were made beleeve by predictions of Popiſh Aſtrologians, that Qu. *Elizabeth* could not live above one yeare. The good Queen notwithſtanding pardoned their lives, after ſentence of death upon them, from their own confeſſion.

And how zealouſly the *Guiſes* endeavoured to invade *England*, may appeare by the inclination of *Sebaſtian Martigius* ſent into *Scotland*, by the counſell of the *Guiſes* (for about thoſe times their alone counſels were principally followed) with Horſe and Foote, to aſſiſt in the civill warre of *Scotland*, who could hardly be reſtrained from invading *England* preſently, and firſt of all, preſuming (no queſtion) on the aide of Papiſts in *England*, from intelligence held with them here. For otherwiſe what could a 1000. Horſe, and not very many Foote doe in reſpect of conquering all *England*? Now was the Queen of *Scots* in *France*, and although the Regency of *Scotland* was put into the hands of the Marqueſſe of *Hamilton*, yet the power of the Qu *Dowager* with her *French* faction did ſo increaſe, and on the other ſide the authority of the Marqueſſe Regent ſo abate, that after the promiſe

miſe from the *French* King of 12000. crownes by the yeare, and Duchie of *Caſtle Herald*, to which was added the preferment of all the Marqueſſes chiefe kindred, the Marqueſſe reſigned his place into the hands of *Mary* of *Loraine* Qu. *Domager*. A thing for a woman to be Regent in *Scotland*, but once before knowen. She had made many promiſes unto the *Scots* of the freedome of exerciſing the Proteſtant Religion, but being now ſetled in the Regency, ſhe diſcovered her mind wholly bent to alter Religion. She tould her friends in plain tearmes, that though the Miniſters whom ſhe named ſhould preach more honeſtly; or (as ſhe called it) more ſincerely then they had done, yet they ſhould all be baniſhed. She expreſſed at the death of a young man, whom ſhe ſeemed to bewaile, being ſlaine, for that his father had not rather excuſed him, being a ſtoute defender of the reformed Religion, that ſhe was cruelly minded toward the profeſſors thereof. *Eaſter* alſo was commanded to be celebrated after the Romiſh cuſtome. For theſe and divers other overtures of her, Meſſengers were ſent unto her, to deſire her to be good to the Proteſtants, and to remember the many promiſes ſhe had made unto them to that end. But all in vaine. She told the Earle of *Glencarne*, and Sir *John Cambell*, who were ſent unto her, that performance of promiſes was to be expected from Princes, no farther then ſtood with their profit. Upon this they tould one another that they then renounced all obedience and duty toward her. Violence now with art was to be uſed for effecting her purpoſe touching Religion.

Hereupon advice was given by *Labroſſe* a *French* Commander in *Scotland*, to put to death all the Nobility of *Scotland*, for that the people being bereaved of their heads, would after be eaſily brought to undergoe any yoke; But that things might appeare with a more pleaſing colour, there was a ſhew, as if the Queen had laboured, and would endeavour to convince her adverſaries in Religion by no other way but by arguments. Into *Scotland* were ſent 3. Sorbon Doctors with the Biſhop of *Amiens*. But with what ſafety might any man diſpute with them, when he that did ſo was in the midſt of his armed enemies, and there was greateſt feare of violence from the diſputers themſelves. For the Biſhop of *Amiens* counſelled the Queen Regent, that if any there were which ſhould be found to diſpute againſt theſe Romiſh Decrees, he ſhould be put to death, yea even thoſe who but ſeemed to be of another mind onely. We are not informed

formed that the Qu. Regent put in practice the foregoing counſels, perhaps the time was not altogether ſeaſonable, nor doe we take every ſingle action which might conduce to the ſubverting of Religion, to be a conſpiracy: but we may well eſteeme by the Queenes words, the Counſellors and Commanders intents and purpoſes, the placing of ſuch a Regent, all this to be a continued conſpiracy, to ſtrangle in the birth the Church of *Scotland*, having yet ſcarcely taken breath in the world. Not long after the Qu. Regent dieth, and although it will perhaps be ſaid, there was no diſcovery of any conſpiracy which was in acting (as to put to death all the Nobility, or all that would dare diſpute againſt the Biſhop, or Doctors, could be no eaſie taske to goe about; the latter, becauſe the death of their laſt Martyr *Walter Mille* did ſeem ſo grievous unto them, and if any more ſhould ſuffer, how would ſuch a thing be taken from *French* men, people of another Nation?) It may be objected from the above named arguments, that their wanted no endeavour. After the death of the Mother, the Daughter returning into *Scotland*, was married unto *Henry* Lord *Darnley*, who being of the ſame Religion with the Queen, and they both a brother and ſiſters children, did ſtrongly maintaine Popery againſt the Proteſtant Religion. We cannot imagine here that any thing ſhould be contrived againſt the lives of thoſe Princes by a Popiſh party to overthrow Religion. For to ſubvert Religion no way could be found better then by maintaining in life and honour ſuch Princes as theſe two were, who profeſſed and maintained Popery. As contrarily to ſubvert Religion, Lawes, Liberties and the like, the beſt means are thorow the ſides of ſuch Kings and Queenes as are projectors and maintainers of them. So the holy Scripture declareth by word and example. I will ſmite the Shepheard and the Sheep ſhall be ſcattered. For this Queen was ſo far from farthering the eſtabliſhment of Religion, nay from connivence at thoſe who ſhould goe about any ſuch matter, that ſhe profeſſed that ſhe would follow the example of her couſin Qu. *Mary* of *England*, which was no other thing then maintaining in her dominions the Pope and Popery, and puniſhing the contrary minded as hereticks. It will not be thought (*I* ſuppoſe) that either the Papiſts at home in *Scotland*, or thoſe in *France*, or elſe where, would goe about to take away the lives of ſuch Princes, whoſe lives ſecured their Religion. For what was attempted againſt the life (and moſt unhappily ſucceeded,) of the King, was not any way to

ubvert Popery; becauſe the deede was committed, and the plot chiefly layed by Papiſts. It rather was undertaken againſt the life of this Prince, by ſome, to make way for their own family to inherit the Crown of *Scotland*, by others to get the Kingdome, and admit any Religion. But thoſe which looke farther into matters, judge this act to be committed againſt a profeſſor of the Romiſh Religion, that he being taken out of the way, another might ſucceed, which had greater power and friends to bring to paſſe, what King *Henry* the Queenes huſband, had a mind but not power enough to doe. And that made thoſe which were no enemies to the King in point of Religion, not diſlike the Treaſon for the ends ſake. I cannot be of their minds altogether, who judge that of the Queene of *Scots*, being now in reſtraint in *England*, not long before married to Earle *Bothuile*, and preſently to deſire a divorce from him, and to require that he ſhould be ſummoned within the ſpace of a very few dayes, to returne into the Kingdome, to make anſwer and defence to the Queenes ſuite of divorce, to have proceeded from the changing fancy of the Queen, or ſo much from conſcience. For it was as well known before her departure into *England*, as after, that Earle *Bothuile* had a wife living when he married the Queen. In ſo much that at the publiſhing of the banes of their Matrimony, one ſtood up in the Church and forbid them. It was generally thought that it was, that a way might be open for the Duke of *Norfolk*, who then made ſuite unto her. He indeed was ſuch a man, as being of great wealth, mighty in friends, and ſingular abilities of mind, could better bring about what was deſired; then a man of no great riches at any time, but was now in extreame poverty and diſgrace in the Dominions of the King of *Denmark*, and notoriouſly infamous for his crimes in *Scotland*.

The Rebellion of the Earles of Northumberland *and* Weſtmerland.

AT this time the King of *Spaine* wrote unto the Duke of *Norfolk*, to joyne with the Earles of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmerland*, to raiſe a rebellion in *England*, and to the Earle of *Ormond* to doe the like in *Ireland*. Theſe Letters were ſhewen unto Q. *Elizabeth* by the Duke and the Earle; that from hence might it leaſt appeare their loialty.

Nevertheleſſe, whether by the advice of the Biſhop of *Roſſe*, who lay as Ambaſſadour at *London* for the Queen of *Scots*, and one *Rodolf* a *Florentine*, going in the appearance of a Merchant factor, or purpoſing of himſelfe, whatſoever he might pretend, he privately ſought to marry

the

the Qu. of *Scots* (she being next heire to the Crown of *England*, contrary to his promise made unto his Soveraign Q. *Elizabeth*. The Qu. of *Scots* and the Duke, participate of one anothers mind, by Letters written in hidden characters. Neither was this a matter only suppos'd; but the Dukes Secretary, one *Higford*, who was commanded by the Duke to burne such Letters as came from the Qu. of *Scots*, but did it not, and hid them under a mat in his chamber, and being under examination, he caused them to be produced. This was when the two Earles of *Northumberland* and *Westmerland* had secretly complotted to raise Armes, and not long after the Dukes apprehension, they fell into open rebellion. One of the Letters which was shewen at the Dukes arraignement was to this purpose. That the Qu. was sorry that the said Earles of *Northumberland* and *Westmerland* were in Armes, before the Dukes forces were ready. This was undertaken after that Pope *Pius quintus* had in Bulles from *Rome* printed, and sent to *Ridolf*, absolved Q. *Elizabeths* Subjects from their allegiance. The Pope perswaded the *Spaniard* to assist the conspirators, that his affaires in the *Netherlands* might prosper the better: and the *French* did the like, that the Qu. of *England* might be lesse able to send aid to the Protestants in *France*. *Northumberland* and *Westmerland* having thus taken Armes, supplies and monies failing, withdrew themselves into *Scotland*. *Norfolk* was thrown into prison. *Ridolf* being in custody, for whom the Pope had appointed 150000 crownes to help the conspirators, was for want of cleare proofe dismissed. *Ridolf* being got out of prison, afterward distributeth the 150000 crownes to the partners in the Treason. He being with the Pope, is sent by him to the *Spaniard*, to presse him to give assistance to the King of *Portugall* also for the same purpose. He wrote also to the Duke of *Norfolk*, promising to send him aide. The Popes Letters to the *Spaniard* was, that he should send an Army out of the *Low Countries* to invade *England*. And this very thing the *Spaniard* endeavoured.

There was now a difference betwixt Q. *Elizabeth* and the *Spaniard*, about money sent by him to the Duke of *Alva*, but was intercepted by the Queen, and that was one pretence that the *Spaniard* had for his dealing against our Qu. and Kingdom. But the Duke of *Norfolk* was put to death. Nor is this the relation of an *English* Protestant, but of a Papist (a good part wherof had not bin known but for him) one *Hieronimus Catena*. The Book was printed at *Rome*, by the priviledge of *Pius quintus*, 1588. The Earles of *Northumb.* and *West.* seduced by one *Morton* a Priest,

and at *Durefme* ſet up the Maſſe, thence they marched to *Clifford* Moore, where hearing that the Queen of *Scots* was removed to *Coventry*, that the Earle of *Suſſex* was ſent with ſtrong forces againſt them, and that Sir *George Bowes* was behind them, and had fortified *Barnards* Caſtle, that *Scroope* and *Cumberland* had fortified *Carliel*, and had alſo an Army in readineſſe, that the Souldiers of *Barwick*, and the power of *Northumberland* were in *New-caſtle*, beſieged *Barnards* Caſtle, and tooke it on conditions. Then for feare of the Earle of *Suſſex* they fled to *Hexham*, thence by bny wayes to *Nawerth* Caſtle, from that place into *Scotland*. And from thence was *Northumberland* ſent, and here beheaded. *Weſtmerland* eſcaped into the *Netherlands*, where with a poore penſion under the *Spaniard*, he lived poorely all his dayes.

Dacres *his indeavour to deliver the* Scots *Queene.*

IN the Yeare 1569. *Leonard Dacres*, ſecond ſonne of *William* Lord *Dacres* of *Gilleſland*, being grieved to ſee a very great patrimony goe from him to the Daughters of the Baron, whom the Duke of *Norfolk* their Fatheir in law had joyned in marriage with his ſonnes, grew revengefull, and joyning with the Rebels, endeavoured to deliver the Queen of *Scots*; yet a little before being at the Court, promiſed to aſſiſt the Queen his Soveraign againſt the Rebels, but treacherouſly he undertooke to kill the Lord *Scroop* and Biſhop of *Carleil*, to whoſe cuſtody the *Scottiſh* Queen was committed, but he, failing in the performance, tooke *Graſtock* Caſtle, holding it as his own, and gathered Souldiers. The Lord *Humſdon* met him with the trained Souldiers of *Barwick*, and after a ſharp conflict overcommeth him, and *Dacres* fled into *Scotland*, from thence into the *Neatherlands*, where at *Lovaine* he lived and died poorely.

Fitz-Morris *raiſeth Rebellion in* Ireland.

IN this Yeare *Edmund* and *Peter Butler*, brethren to the Earle of *Ormond*, joyning with *James Fitz-Morris*, of the Houſe of *Deſmond*, entred into a conſpiracy againſt Qu. *Elizabeth*; and to farther it, came *Joannes Mendoza* ſecretly out of *Spaine*. The Earle of *Ormond* going into *Ireland*, cauſed them to ſubmit; they were impriſoned, and for their brother the Earles ſake, not brought to tryall. The Lord Deputy, and Sir *Humphrey Gilbert* (through Gods aſſiſtance) appeaſed that rebellion.

rebellion. It is cleare enough that this rebellion in *Ireland*, arose from the *Spaniard* as the first mover, for to this end he sent *Mendoza* into *Ireland*, and had not long before written to the Earle, brother to the two Rebels, to raise a rebellion in *Ireland*.

Stanleys *Conspiracy*.

IN the Yeare 1570, under a colour of delivering the Queen of *Scots*, *Thomas Stanley*, and *Edward*, younger sonnes of the Earle of *Darby*, *Thomas Gerard*, *Rolston*, *Hall*, with others in *Darbyshiere*, conspired; but the sonne of *Rolston* which was pensioner to the Queen, disclosed the conspiracy. All, but *Hall*, were imprisoned. *Hall* escaped into the Isle of *Man*. Thence by the commendation of the Bishop of *Rosse*, he was sent into *Dunbretan*; whence (the Castle being wonne) he was brought to *London*, and suffered death.

Dissimulation of Don John *of* Austria.

IN the Yeare 1576. *Don John* of *Austria* comming into the *Low-countries* as Governour, sent *Gastellus* to Qu. *Elizabeth*, pretending a perpetuall Edict for peace. The Queen as if ignorant of any bad intent, sent *Rogers* to congratulate *Don Johns* Edict; yet she knew that *Don John* had conceived a certaine hope of marrying the Qu. of *Scots*, and of enjoying *Scotland* and *England*; intending to invade the Isle of *Man*, that from thence he might out of *Ireland*, the North of *England* and *Scotland* also, (where he knew were many Papists) invade *England*. This man to help forward this great designe, practised secretly with the Pope, and with the King of *Spaine*, for the Havens of *Biscay*. But the King of *Spaine* neglected him in this desire, accounting *England* and *Scotland*, a morsell fitter for his own palate.

During this treaty of perpetuall peace, this treacherous *Don* treateth secretly with the *Scotish* Queen about the marriage: and the better to work his own ends, tooke divers Townes and Castles in the *Lowcountries* by trechery, and wrote into *Spaine*, that for the invasion of the *Neatherlands*, it would be best to seize on first the Townes of *Zeeland*, before the more inland places; and that *England* might with the more ease be first invaded. The Queen in the meane while prepareth for warre; but God cut off this her enemy very sodainely, before the fruites of his high thoughts were ripe.

Stucleys

Stucleys *deſigne againſt* Ireland.

NOt long before this time in *Ireland*, *Thomas Stucley* a prodigall, riotous and needy *Engliſh*-man, diſcontented for that he loſt the Stewardſhip of *Wexford*, breathes out contumelies againſt the Queen, and betaketh himſelfe to the Pope, with whom he treateth, and boaſteth that he will ſubdue *Ireland* with 3000. men, and burne the Queenes Navy. Pope *Pius quintus*, had a great opinion of him. After him *Gregory* the 13. and the King of *Spaine*, conſulted together to invade *England* and *Ireland* at once. The Pope aimed to get for his Sonne *James Boncompayno*, the Kingdome of *Ireland*, and the *Spaniard* chiefely to imitate the courſe of Qu. *Elizabeth* (who to keep the *Spaniard* buſie abroad, ſecretly ſent aide to the Dutch) that he might withdraw her help from the *Lowcountries*. But becauſe the ſtrength of *England* conſiſteth chiefly in the Navy, the King of *Spaine* ſetteth the Merchants of *Italy*, and the *Netherlands* a worke, to hire the Merchants ſhips of *England*, and ſo to ſend them away in very long voiages, that the ſhips being from home, and *Stucley* joyning with the Rebels of *Ireland*, the Queenes Navy might be overthrown by a greater. The Pope gave him very great Titles in *Ireland*, and ſent under his command 800. *Italians*, the *Spaniard* paying the Souldiers. *Stucley* then went to *Sebaſtian* King of *Portugall*, to intreate him to be chiefe Conductor, but was perſwaded by the ſaid King, and the King by *Abdallas* ſonne *Mahomet*, to goe firſt unto the *African* warre, where both King *Sebaſtian* and himſelfe loſt their lives. And thus God overthrew their wicked counſels for that time.

Fitz-Morris *his ſecound attempt againſt* Ireland.

ANno *Domini*, 1579. *James Fitz-Morris* formerly having fled into *France*, being pardoned for a former rebellion in *Ireland*, goeth now to the *Spaniard*, and is by him ſent unto the Pope, to conſult with him about his requeſt, which was to reduce that Kingdome by force of Armes unto popery. The Pope, at the earneſt ſuit of *Nicolas Saunders* an *Engliſh*, and *Alan* an *Iriſh* Prieſt, gave *Fitz-Morris* ſome money to that intent, and ſendeth him back to the *Spaniard*, from whence with his Prieſts, 3. Ships and a few Souldiers, he arrived at *Smerwick* in *Kerry* in *Ireland*, and raiſeth a Fort there. *Thomas Courtney* an *Engliſh*-man, preſently ſurpriſeth the Ships. *John* and *James*, brethren

to

to the Earle of *Deſmond*, joyne themſelves to *Fitz-Merris* who was their Kinſman. The Earle of *Deſmond* (although he pretended the contrary) fauoured them, drew forces together, and by this pretence of *Deſmond*, cauſed the Earle of *Clanrickard* who came to oppoſe them, to withdraw himſelfe. *Fitz-Merris* ſeeing few *Iriſh* come to his aide, under pretence of going in pilgrimage to the holy croſſe of *Tipperary*, went toward *Conaught* and *Vlſter*, to draw forces together: whoſe Horſes being tired, he tooke ſome Horſes from the Plough of *William a Burgh* his kinſman, and being purſued by the ſons of *William a Burgh*, *Fitz-Merris* perceiving that, tould his couſin *Theobald a Burgh*, that it was no time now to fall out about Horſes, but to joyne with him in the buſineſſe of rebellion, for which he was come into *Ireland*. Theſe brethren had bin in a former rebellion, but now declared unto *Fitz-Morris* their ſorrow for it, yet now fighting with *Fitz-Morris* to recover the Horſes, both the brethren, and ſome others were ſlaine. Sir *William Drury* was then Lord Deputy, who ſent for the Earle of *Deſmond*, who made a promiſe by his Wife to the Deputy, that he and his men would fight againſt the Rebels. He diſſembled long; but after that *Malbey* had defeated *John* his brothers forces, and had ſent for *Deſmond* to come unto him about *Rekel* a Town of *Deſmond*, he plainly diſcovered his rebellion.

That night the Rebels ſet upon *Malbeys* Tents, but were diſappointed. Afterward *Deſmond* was ſent for (to come in perſon) by the Lord Deputy *Pelham*, who ſucceeded the deceaſed Sir *William Drury*; but excuſeth himſelfe by a Letter ſent by his wife. The Earle of *Ormond* was ſent unto him, that he ſhould deliver *Sanders* the Prieſt, the Caſtles of *Carigofoile* and *Aſketton*, and to ſubmit himſelfe abſolutely. The perſecuting of him was committed to the Earle of *Ormond*, who ruined *Conilo*, the Rebels only refuge; he hanged the Bayliffe of *Youghall* at his doore, for refuſing to take an *Engliſh* garriſon into the Town, beſieged the *Spaniards* in *Strangicall*, but they withdrew themſelves, and after were all killed: and ſo hard he preſſed *Deſmond* and his brethren, that madly they intreated the chiefe Juſtice to take their parts. Afterward the Juſtice ſent for the Nobility of *Munſter* to come to him, and would not diſmiſſe them, till they had given pledges that they would aſſiſt againſt the Rebels. They made the Baron of *Lixenaw* yeeld himſelfe, took *Carigofoil* Caſtle, killed and hanged all the *Spaniards* in it, and the Captain alſo an *Italian*.

San Joſephus *with* 700. Spaniards *ſent into* Ireland.

THe next yeare, 1580. 700. *Spaniards* and *Italians* came to divert the Qu. Forces, rather then to conquer *Ireland*; they landed at *Smerwick*, under the command of *San Joſephus* an *Italian*, they fortified it, and called

it Fort *Delor*; but being followed by the Earle of *Ormond*, they withdrew thence into a valley called *Glamminge*. Some prisoners of them were taken, who confest they were 700, and that armes were brought for 5000, and that more were expected from *Spaine*; that to conquer *Ireland*, the *Spaniard* and Pope had resolved, and therefore sent into the hands of *Sanders*, *Desmond* and his brother *John*, a vast summe of money. That night the *Spaniards* and *Italians* returned to their Fort, which so soon as Ordinance could be brought, and *Winter* was returned with his Ships of war from *England*, was on every side besieged, and after 5. dayes taken. The common Souldiers, *Italians* and *Spaniards*, were put to the sword, the *Irish* hanged: only the Captaines of the former were preserved. Three yeares after, *Desmond* wandering like a vagabond, had his armes almost cut off by a common Souldier, before he was known, and after was slaine. *Nicolas Sanders* was almost famished in the Woods, and dyed stark mad. This yeare 1580. Priests and Seminaries much encreasing in *England*, severe Lawes were enacted against them. These were for the most part bred in the English Colledge of *Doway*, founded (by the procurement of *Alan*, sometimes a student in *Oxford*, afterward Priest and Cardinall) in the yeare 1568. Afterward under *Requesenius* government in the *Low-countries*, when the warres were betwixt *England* and *Spaine*, the fugitives were thrust from thence, and 2. Colledges erected for them, one at *Rhemes*, the other at *Rome*, the first by the *Guises*, the second by *Gregory* the 13. From these places rose in *England*, *Hanse*, *Nelson*, *Main*, *Sherword* Priests, who reported Q. *Elizabeth* to be an heretick, and so ought to be deposed; for which they suffered. In the aforesaid yeare 1580. *Robert Parsons*, a man of a turbulent spirit and impudent, *Campian* a more modest man, both Jesuites; they to serve the Catholicks turnes, obteyned of Pope *Gregory* an interpretation of *Pius* his Bull against Q. *Elizabeth*, that it bound the Q. and Heretieks alwayes, but not Catholicks, till a convenient season. *Campian* wrote a Book intituled 10. Reasons, in defence of Rome. M. *Clark* answered him soberly. *Parsons* wrote against *Clark* virulently: but *Camp:* 10 Reasons were thorowly answered by D. *Whitaker*.

Campian *and others condemned.*

Edmund Campian, *Ralfe Sherwin*, *Luke Kirby*, *Alexander Briant*, were taken in the yeare 1581. as Traitors to the Q. and State, and condemned for comming into *England* to stir up sedition. Still more and more Priests came into *England*, and for their dangerous doctrine, that Princes excommunicate were to be thrown out of their Kingdoms; that Princes of any other then the Romane Religion had lost their Kingly dignity; that those who had taken orders were freed from Princes jurisdiction, and not bound

by

by their Lawes, it was enacted 1582. that it ſhould be treaſon to diſſwade any ſubject from his allegiance, and from the Religion eſtabliſhed in *Engl.* &c.

Somerviles *attempt to kill the Queene.*

Ann: Dom: 1583. divers Prieſts and Jeſuites wrote dangerous Books againſt Q. *Eliz:* and certaine other Princes excommunicated: which prevailed ſo far, that one *Somervil* a Gentleman, breathing out nothing but blood againſt the Proteſtants, ſecretly ſought entrance into the Queenes preſence, with a drawn ſword ſet upon one or two in his way; and being apprehended, confeſſed that he purpoſed to have killed the Queen. *Edward Arderne* his Father in law, a Gentleman of *Warwick-ſheire*, and *Arderns* wife, and their daughter *Somervils Wife*, and *Hall* a Prieſt, were condemned as guilty of *Somervils* practiſe. After three dayes *Somervile* was found ſtrangled in priſon (for feare of revealing it was thought) where he lay, and *Arderne* was hanged the next day.

Mendoza *the* Spaniſh *Ambaſſador thruſt out of* England.

In 1584. ſome *Engliſh* Gentlemen began to practiſe the delivery of the Q. of *Scots*, *Francis Throgmorton* was ſuſpected, by letters written to the Q. of *Scots*, and intercepted. Preſently *Thomas* Lord *Paget*, and *Charles Arundel* a Courtier, left the Land ſecretly. *Henry* Earle of *Northumberland*, and *Philip* Earle of *Arundel*, were commanded to their houſes. And there was great cauſe of circumſpection; for the Papiſts by printed Books, incited the Maides of Honour to doe that againſt the Qu., that *Judith* did againſt *Holofernes*. Yet was the Queens mercy ſuch, that ſhe cauſed 70. Prieſts to be ſent out of *England*. The chiefe of them were *Gaſper*, *Heywood*, who of all the Jeſuites firſt came into *England*, *James Boſgrave*, *John Hart*, and *Edward Riſton*, who preſently after wrote a Book againſt the Queen. At this time *Bernardinus Mendoza* the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour, was thruſt out of *England*, for practiſing Treaſon againſt the State. He having dealt with *Throgmorton* and others, to bring in ſtraingers to invade the Land, as appeared by *Throgmortons* action, who being apprehended, ſent one of his packets to *Mendoza*: his other packets being ſearched, there was found a catalogue of all the Havens in *England*, fit to land in, and another of all the Noble-men in *England*, which favoured the Romiſh Religion. And he did not deny that he had promiſed his help to *Mendoza*, and the help of thoſe Nobles it was fit he ſhould deale with. At this inſtant it appeared by letters which one *Creighton* a *Scottiſh* Jeſuite, falling into the hands of *Dutch* pirates, had torne in peeces, and throwne into the Sea, but by force of weather were blown into the Ship again miraculouſly (which Sir *William Wade* joyned together and read) that

the Pope, *Spaniard* and *Guiſes*, intended to invade *England*. The Q. of *Scots* alſo wrote earneſtly by Sir *Francis Ingleſield* to the Pope and *Spaniard*, to haſten the intended buſineſſe. The conditions were, to deprive Q. *Elizabeth*, and diſinherit (as a manifeſt favourer of hereticks) the King of *Scots*. To marry the Q. of *Scots* to ſome catholick Noble-man, and him to be choſen K. of *England*, &c. *Hart* the Prieſt acknowledged ſo much. The Noble-man who was ſuſpected ſhould marry the Q. of *Scots*, was *Henry Howard* brother to the Duke of *Norfolk*.

Parry *executed for Treaſon.*

IN the yeare 1585 *William Parry* a *Welchman* and Doctor of Law, ſpake againſt that Law, which in the Parliament then held, was exhibited, and called it a bloody Law. Preſently after he was accuſed for practiſing the Queens death. He confeſſed voluntarily in the Tower, that having obteyned the Queens pardon for breaking into the chamber, and wounding one *Hart* (for which he was condemned) he being a ſworne ſervant to the Queen. From *England* he went into *France*, and was reconciled. Afterward at *Venice*, in conſultation with *Benedict Palmeus*, he tould him, that he had found out a way to help the afflicted catholicks in *England*: if the Pope, or ſome learned Divines would approve it as lawfull. The Jeſuite *Palmius* approved it: Next in *France*, one *Morgan* drew him to conſent to murder the Queen if it ſhould prove lawfull. This act the Popes Nuntio *Ragazonius* commended. *Parry* afterward having acceſſe to the Queen; ſhewed her all, and not long after Cardinall *Como* his letter approving the enterpriſe. Now he taketh a new reſolution to performe it, encouraged ſpecially by D. *Allens* Book, teaching that Princes excommunicate are to be ſpoiled of their Kingdoms and lives. Theſe, with many other things, *Parry* confeſſed before the Lord *Hunſdon*, Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, and Sir *Francis Walſingham*. In *Weſtminſter* Hall the heads of his acculation being read, he confeſſed himſelfe guilty. He died in the Palace-yard before *Weſtminſter* Hall, not once calling on the Name of God. At this time alſo *Henry* Earle of *Northumb:* for entring into traiterous counſels with *Paget* and the *Guiſes*, to invade *England*, was caſt into the Tower, where he was found dead, being ſhot with 3. bullets under his left pap, the chamber doore bolted in the inſide. A piſtoll was found in his chamber, and himſelfe the author of his own death. Thus from time to time the moſt noble Families of *England* have bin ſeduced and ruined by the falſe and bewitching counſels of Jeſuits and ſeminaries.

Savages *attempt to kill the Queene.*

NOw againe there was a moſt abominable treaſon conſpired, and volun-

tarily

tarily confeſſed by the conſpirators. One *Gifford* a Doctor in Divinity, *Gilbert Gifford*, and *Hodgeſon* Prieſts, perſwaded one *John Savage* a bloody fellow to undertake to kill Queene *Elizabeth*: To hide their miſchierous intents more cunningly from the Queenes Counſell, who were very carefull to foreſee all danger, they wrote a Book, in which they adviſe the Papiſts in *England*, not to goe about to hurt the Queen. For they were to uſe no other weapons againſt their Prince, then the Chriſtian weapons of teares, faſting, prayers and the like; and moſt cunningly alſo theſe Foxes ſpread a rumour, that *George Gifford*, one of the Queens penſioners, had ſworne to kill the Queen, and for that cauſe had gotten from the *Guiſes* a very great ſumme of Money. The *Eaſter* following *John Ballard* an Engliſh Prieſt of the Colledge of *Rhemes*, was come into *England*, who had bin trying the minds of Papiſts in *England* and *Scotland*. He had dealt with *Mendoza* the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador in *France*, *Charles Paget* and others, for the invaſion of *England*. And although it ſeemed to be a very hard work, yet he had ſworne to uſe his utmoſt endeavour in it, and alſo for the liberty of the Queen of *Scots*. At *Whitſontide*, in a ſouldiers habit, and under the Name of Captaine *Forteſcue*, he had a conference in *London* with *Anthony Babington*, a young Gentleman of *Darby*-ſheire, Romiſhly affected, who not long before in *France* had conference with *Thomas Morgan* and the Biſhop of *Glaſco*, the *Scotch* Queens Ambaſſador. He was drawn by them, ſhewing him moſt aſſured hopes of Honour from her, to addict himſelfe to them; and by their meanes had favourable letters from her. *Ballard* and *Babington* conferred together concerning the invaſion of *England*; but it was not deemed a thing could be done Queen *Elizabeth* being alive. Then *Ballard* informed *Babington*, that *Savage* had undertooke to kill him. *Babington's* advice was, that it ſhould not be committed to *Savage* alone, leaſt perhaps he might be hindered, but to ſix reſolute men, of which number *Savage* ſhould be one. Upon this *Babington* tooke into his conſideration the Ports, in which the invaders ſhould land, the confederates that ſhould joyne in the act of murdering Q. *Elizabeth*, and delivering the *Scots* Queen. In the meane time a letter was brought from the impriſoned Queen to *Babington* in a ſecret character, blaming *Babingtons* long ſilence. But he excuſed it, becauſe ſhe was under the cuſtody of Sir *Amice Paulet* a ſevere keeper, declared unto her, that which *Ballard* and he had reſolved before, and that himſelfe with one hundred more would deliver her. The purpoſe by her letters unto *Babington* was commended: and it was advited that it ſhould be undertaken conſiderately, and nothing ſhould be moved before they were ſure of externall forces;

that they ſhould make an aſſociation, as if they feared the Puritans, that ſome tumults might be raiſed in *Ireland*, while the thing ſhould be done here; That *Arundell* and his brethren, and *Northumb:* ſhould be drawn to the ſide; *Weſtmerland*, *Paget* and others called home. The way to deliver the *Scots* Queen, was appointed, to overthrow a Coach in the gate, or ſet the Stables on fire, or intercept her as ſhe roade to take the aire, betwixt *Charly* and *Stafford*. *Babington* undertooke for rewards to all that ſhould give their help. He had gotten unto him *Edward Windſore*, the Lord *Windſores* brother, *Thomas Saleſbury*, *Charles Tinley* the Queens penſioner, *Chidiock Tichburne*, *Edward Abingdon*, whoſe Father was the Queens Cofferer, *Robert Gage*, *John Travers*, *John Charnick*, *John Jones*, *Savage*, *Barnwell* an Iriſh Gent. *Henry Dun*, Clark of the firſt fruits Office: and one *Polly* alſo joyned himſelfe, who was thought to reveale all to Sir *Francis Walſingham*. *Abingdon*, *Barnwell*, *Charnick* and *Savage*, took an Oath to kill her with their own hands. *Babington* enjoyned that whoſoever was admitted into the conſpiracy, ſhould take the Oath of ſecrecy. They were ſo confident of the ſucceſſe, that they did not feare to cauſe the undertakers of the Treaſon to be pictured together, which picture being ſeen of the Queen, ſhe knew only *Barnwell*, and ſeeing him a good way off, ſhe blamed the neglect of guarding her perſon. This fellow afterward gave it out, that if the conſpirators had bin preſent, the deed might eaſily have bin done. That the aide from *France* might not be wanting, leave was obteyned for *Ballard* to paſſe over thither, for money, under a falſe Name, and *Babington* was to follow; who that he might the more cunningly work his ends, pretended to Sir *Francis Walſingham*, that he had a deſire to goe into *France*, to diſcover what the fugitives plotted for the delivery of the *Scots* Queen. *Walſingham* ſeemed very much to like the matter, and to commend *Babingtons* reſolution, but upon pretenſes, delayed his going. This was known to *Walſingham*, either out of a ſingular faculty he had to find out Treaſons, or els by the means of *Gilbert Gifford* a Prieſt, who was ſent out of *France* to incourage *Savage* in his wicked reſolution, and that letters might ſafely be tranſmitted by him to the Q. of *Scots*. *Gifford* corrupted with money, or for feare, revealed the plot to *Walſingham*, and promiſed to communicate unto him, all his letters. *Walſingham* kindly uſed him, ſent him into *Stafford*-ſheire to Sir *Amice Paulet*, in a letter perſwading Sir *Amice*, to ſuffer ſome of his ſervants to be corrupted by him. *Gifford* for ſome gold, prevailed with Sir *Amices* his Brewer, who conveyed the letters to and from *Gifford*, which by meſſengers for that end appointed, came ever to the hands of Sir *Francis Walſingham*, who coppied out the letters, and by the art of *Thomas Phillips*, found out the character, and by the help of one *Gregory* ſealed them up, that none

none could suspect them opened, and then sent the letters as they were directed. The Queen hereupon commanded *Ballard* to be apprehended, which was done. *Babington* advised presently to send *Savage* and *Charnike* to kill the Queen. *Babington* intreateth leave of *Walsingham* to goe into *France*, and saith for *Ballards* liberty, who wou'd be of use to him for discovery, and to avoid suspition. Sir *Francis* keepeth him back with delayes, and draweth him to his own house. *Skidmore* Sir *Francis* servant, was commanded to observe him strictly, and to goe with him, pretending, least he should be taken with Messengers. This letter being read (for the command was written) by *Skidmore*, was perceived and read also by *Babington* sitting by him, who supping with Sir *Francis* man in a Taverne, pretending to rise to go pay the reckoning, left his Cloake and Rapier, and fled. Then *Barnwell*, *Gage*, *Dun*, *Charnoke* being in the meane time proclaimed Traitors, fled into the Woods, and after were concealed, fed and cloathed in rusticall habit, by one *Bellamy* at *Harrow* on the hill. After 10. dayes they were found, and brought to *London*. *Salisbury* was taken in *Stafford*-shiere, and *Traverse* also, *Jones* in *Wales*, not privy to the conspiracy, but he concealed them, and furnished *Salisbury* and his man with a changed Cloake. *Windsore* was not found, *Gilford* was sent into *France* as an Exile and there died.

Septem. 13th. seven of the conspirators being brought to Judgement, confest themselvs guilty, and were condemned of Treason; other seven the next day pleaded not guilty, but were guilty and condemned. *Polley* though guilty, yet for confessing something to Sir *Francis Walsingham*, was not brought to Judgement, on the 20 th. the first seven were hanged and quartered in St. *Giles* Fields, where they used to meet.

The French *Ambassadors plot to kill the Queene.*

IN the Yeare 1587. *Obespineus* the *French* Ambassador of the *Guisian* faction, conferred with *William Stafford* to kill Q *Elizabeth*, *Stafford* refused it, but commended one *Moody* in prison, *Trappius* Secretary to the said Ambassador, in the absence of *Stafford* conferred with *Moody* about the deed, *Moody* proposed poyson or a bag of Gunpowder, *Trappius* disliked it, and wished rather for such a man as the *Burgundian*, which killed the Prince of *Orenge*, this thing *Stafford* revealed to the Counsell, *Trappius* was apprehended going into *France*, and afterward the Ambassadour, *Moody*, *Stafford*, *Trappius*, all accused the Ambassador before the Lords, who sent for the Ambassador. *Stafford* beginning to speake, was interrupted by the Ambassador, saying that *Stafford* first proposed it to him, who if he did not desist, threatned to send him bound hand and foot to the Queen.

Stafford

Stafford upon his knees with great proteſtations affirmed, that the Ambaſſador firſt moved it, the Ambaſſador was admoniſhed to take heed of ſuch crimes, and diſmiſt by *Burley*, inſinuating unto him, that it was more the Queenes clemency, then that his Office claimed any ſuch favour.

The Spaniſh Armado.

IN the Yeare 1588. was ſet out by the King of *Spaine* for the conqueſt of *England*, the invincible (as they call'd it) Navie, for this purpoſe the Duke of *Parma* had an Army in *Flanders* of one hundred and three Companies of Foot, and three thouſand Horſe, amongſt which were ſeven hundred *Engliſh* fugitives, the Bull of *Pius quintus*, for excommunicating Qu. *Elizabeth* is renewed by *Sixtus quintus*, and a plenary Indulgence granted to all which would joyne againſt *England*. The Queen prepared a Navy alſo, and makes the L. *Charles Howard* Admirall, and ſends him into the Weſt, to joyne with Sir *Fra: Drake* Vice Admirall, *Henry Seimour*, ſecond ſon to the Duke of *Somerſet*, with 40. Ships, *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, is appointed to ſtop *Parma's* comming forth, upon the Land Southward, were placed 20000. men, another Army of 22000. Foot, and 1000. Horſe at *Tilbury* under *Leiceſter*, another Army guarded the perſon of the Queen, conſiſting of 34000. Foot, and 2000. Horſe, under *Henry* L. *Hunſdon*. The counſell of War, decreed that all places commodious to land in, ſhould be ſtrengthened with Men and Ammunition, which places ſhould be defended by the trained Bands in the Maritime Countries, to hinder the Enemies landing if he ſhould land, then they ſhould waſte the Country round about, that he might find no more releefe then he brought, and that they ſhould keep him in continuall Alarums. To ſecure the Qu. at home from Papiſts, ſome were committed to *Wiſbitch* Caſtle. There was in the mean time a treaty of peace from the *Spaniard*, even till the Fleet was come almoſt to the Engliſh-coaſt. The *Spaniſh* Fleet conſiſted of 130, Ships, 19290. Souldiers, Marriners 8350, Chayned rowers, 2080. Great Ordinance, 2630. The chiefe Commander was *Perezius Guzman*. On the 30. of *May*, they looſed out of the River of *Tagus*. 3. Ships by the help of *David Guin* an Engliſh ſervant, and the Turkiſh Rowers, were carried into *France*, the reſt of this mighty Fleet, was by Gods help overthrown and diſperſed, with 8. fier Ships, made to cut their Cables, weigh their Anchors, and fly confuſedly, and the Admirall *Gallyaſſe* was taken, when they began againe to gather together, they were battered and torne, divers of them periſhing in the Sea. ſo a Navy 3. yeares in preparing, was overthrown in a Moneth, (many of their men being ſlaine and drowned, divers of their Ships ſunck and taken, not 100. Engliſh-men loſt, and but one Ship) driven about *Scotland*, *Orchades* and *Ireland*, much impaired, and returned with ſhame, Gods Name be honoured.

Lopez

Lopez *his undertaking to poyson the Queene.*

IN the Yeare 1593. one *Stephen Ferrera de Gama*, which came with *Don Antonio*, the expulsed K. of *Portugall* into *England*, and afterwards sought to be reconciled to the K. of *Spaine*, being of inward familiarity with one *Roger Lopez* a *Portuguese*, the Queens Physitian, prevailed with him to promise to poyson Q. *Elizabeth*. *Ferrera* writeth to *Ibarra* the K. of *Spains* Secretary at Warres, about the promise of *Lopez*, and his requiring for the undertaking 50000. Crownes. *Ferrera* promised him, that there should one come in the habit of a Marriner to him, who should bring him the value of 50000. Crownes in Rubies and Dyamonds, this was *Lopez* own confession, who added also, that it could not be but that the K. of *Spaine* was acquainted with the matter, for the Money was to come from the K. of *Spaine*, he further confessed, that *Stephen Ferrera* told him, that if he would offer to the Count *Fuentes* this great service to poison her Majesty, he should want no Money, and hereupon he was content, that *Ferrera* should write to the Count *Fuentes*, or Secretary *Ibarra*, to assure them that the Doctor would undertake to poyson her, this secret was discovered by letters which were intercepted, (for all letters to any *Portugues*, and every *Portugues* comming from beyond-Sea, was to be stayed) superscribed to *Diego Hernandes*, from *Francis Torres*, *Diego Hernandes*, *Ferrera* confessed to be himselfe, *Francis Torres* was one *Manoel Lowys*, who had served the K. of *Portugall*, but remained now at *Bruxells*, about Count *Fuentes*, the letter was very misticall, and pretended merchandize, as that the Merchants on the other side, did commend his wares, *&c.* assuring him of good returne, *&c.* and therefore desired him to continue there some time. They commended the Jewell he sent, and reported how the Amber and Musk was highly esteemed, and spake of broad Cloath, Scarlet, threads of Pearle, Dyamond, *&c.* which letter was confessed to be in Answer to that was written by *Lopez*, to take away the Queenes life, more letters there were to the foresaid purpose from Secretary *Ibarra* to *Stephen Ferrera*, and from the Count *Fuentes* at *Bruxells*. *Stephen Ferrera* told *Peter Ferrera* his Keeper, that himselfe and *Lopez* had written into *Spaine*, and made offer to give the Qu. poyson.

Squires *Practice to poyson the Queenes Saddle.*

ANno Dom: 1596. one *Edward Squire*, sometimes a Scrivener at *Greenwich*, afterwards a deputy Purveyer for the Queenes Stable, in S. *Francis Drakes* last voyage, was taken prisoner and carried into *Spaine*, and being set at liberty, one *Walpole* a Jesuite grew acquainted with him, and got him into the Inquisition, whence he returned a resolved Papist, he perswaded *Squire* to undertake to poyson the Pummell of the Queenes Saddle,

and to make him constant, made *Squire* receive the Sacrament upon it, he then gave him the poyson, shewing that he should take it in a double bladder, and should prick the bladder full of hoales in the upper part when he should use it, (carrying it within a thick glove for the safety of his hand) should after turne it downward, pressing the bladder upon the Pummell of the Queenes Saddle. This *Squire* confest. *Squire* is now in *Spaine*, and for his safer dispatch into *England*, it was devised, that two Spanish prisoners taken at *Cales*, should be exchanged for *Squire* and one *Rowles*, that it might not be thought that *Squire* came over but as a redeemed captive. The Munday sevennight after *Squire* returned into *England*, he understanding the Horses were in preparing for the Queenes riding abroad, laid his hand, and crushed the poyson upon the Pummell of the Queenes Saddle, saying, God save the Qu., the Qu. rode abroad, and as should seem laid not her hand upon the place, or else received no hurt (through Gods goodnesse) by touching it, *Walpole* counting of it as of a thing done, imparted it to some principall fugitives there, but being disappointed of his hope, supposing *Squire* to have bene false; to be revenged on him, sent one hither (who should pretend to have stolne from thence) with letters, wherein the plot of *Squire* was contained, this letter was pretended to be stolne out of one of their Studies, *Squire* being apprehended confessed all without any rigor, but after denied that he put it in execution, although he acknowledged he consented to it in the Plot, at length he confessed the putting it in execution also.

Earle of Tyrones Rebellion.

Anno Dom: 1597. *Hugh* a Bastard made Earle of *Tyrone* by Q. *Eliz:* pardoned also by her for a murder, and usurping the Title of *Oneale*, set on by the *Spaniard*, with whom he had lived a fugitive, assaulted the Fort of *Blackwater*, and at that very time when he wrote to S. *John Norris* the English Generall, that he might be dealt mildly withall, least he should run on the rocks of rebellion, wrote also to *Kildare* to side with him, the desiring to spare shedding of blood, agreed unto a conference with him by her Commissioners, the Rebell not liking the conditions proposed by the Commissioners, departed and spoiled the Country about *Blackwater*, and plucked down the Town of *Dunganon*. The Country wasted, and no victuall to be had, *Tyrone* presented to the Generall a Petition, craving pardon upon his knees, at the foote of the Qu: picture; and in the mean time dealt for aide out of *Spaine*, the K. of *Spaine* promised him aide, requiring him to admit of no Artitles of peace with the *English*, hereupon (though there was a cessation of Armes) he burneth and spoileth the Country, then he put

on

on againe his old habit of diſſimulation and ſues for pardon, preſently by ſhuffling or neglect, *Conaught* and *Ulſter* revolted, then he fell to rebellion againe, and about the *Blackwater* overthrew 1500. Engliſh, then the Earle of *Eſſex* comming Generall into *Ireland*, he cleared *Munſter*, thence went into *Lemſter* againſt the *O Conors* and *O Neales*, whom he vanquiſhed, he ſent thence S. *Conyers Clifford* againſt *Ororke*, himſelfe going another way, to diſtract the Forces of *Tyrone*, but S. *Conyers* was ſlaine, and his Forces defeated, *Tyrone* comming neare to the Generall, he declared, he deſired not to fight but parley of peace, which was denyed, afterward he obteyned conference with the L. Generall, and then another conference, where it was concluded, that next day Commiſſioners ſhould meet to treat of peace, then was the L. Generall ſent for into *England*, after whoſe departure *Tyrone* takes the Field againe, in the time of ceſſation of Armes, the *Spaniard* ſent him ſome Money and Ammunition, the Popes Indulgences, and a Plume of Peacock-Feathers.

Anno 1600. The L. *Mountioy* came into *Ireland*, as Lieutenant Generall, and in divers ſmall ſkirmiſhes beat the Rebels. The *Spaniard* to farther the Rebellion, ſent *Don John de Aquila* with 2000. old trained Souldiers, with ſome *Iriſh* fugitives, who landed at *Kingſale*. There were alſo at that ſame time, 2000. *Spaniards* more arrived at *Been-haven*, *Ballimore* and *Caſtle-haven*. The L. Deputy encamped neare *Kingſale*, S. *Richard Leviſon* with two of the Queenes Ships blockt up the Haven: and on both ſides the Town was battered. Then S. *Richard Leviſon* ſunke five of their Ships. To theſe *Spaniards*, *Odonel* betook himſelfe, and preſently after *Tyrone*, *Ororke*, *Raymund*, *Burk*, *Mac Mahon*, *Randal*, *Mac Surly*, and *Tirrell*, with the chiefe of the Nobility, in all 6000. Foote, and 500. Horſe. *Tyrone* on a hill not far from the Camp, made a bravado two dayes together, as if he would give the Engliſh Battaile. The L. Deputy at the foote of the hill, choſe a convenient plot to fight with him, but *Tyrone* foundeth a retreat, whom the L. Generall followed, and forced to make a ſtand in midſt of a bogge: where by the E. of *Clanrikard*, their Horſe were routed, and defeated. *Alonſo O Campo* one of the Spaniſh Generalls, and ſix Enſign-bearers, were taken priſoners, and the Enſignes taken by the Engliſh, and 1200. *Spaniards* ſlaine. *Tyrone* was forced to fly into *Ulſter*, *Odonel* fled into *Spaine*, the reſt hid themſelves. The L. Generall returned to *Kingſale* to batter it, in 6. dayes ſpace, the enemy attempted nothing againſt him. Then *Don John* offereth conditions of ſurrendring the Town; which propounded, the L. Generall (the Engliſh being wearied out with a Winters ſiege) agreeth with the *Spaniard* on certaine Articles, and taketh poſſeſſion of the Town, and ſendeth away all the *Spaniards*, as well

well as thoſe in this Town, into *Spaine*. The next Spring the Generall purſueth *Tyrone* into *Ulſter*, and ſpoileth the Country; upon which the Rebels make haſte to come in unto the Deputy, and *Tyrone* beggeth pardon upon his knees. From *Dublin Tyrone* ſhould have bin carried into *England*, but the Queens death hindered that, and K. *James* pardoned him. Afterward he entred into another conſpiracy with *Ocane*, but being ſent for with a Proceſſe, to anſwer a ſuite which the Biſhop of *Derry* had againſt him, and fearing he had bin ſent for for his conſpiracy, he fled out of *Ireland*.

Garnet, Catesby *and others, labour to invade* England.

IN the laſt Yeare of Queen *Elizabeth*, there was a plot layed againſt her by *Garnet*, *Cateſby* and others, that the *Spaniard* ſhould joyne with the Papiſts here, in the Invaſion of *England*. *Winter* was ſent into *Spaine* for that purpoſe, and *Creſwell* the leger Jeſuite in *Spaine*, *Don Pedro Franciſca*, ſecond Secretary of State, and the Duke of *Lerma*, aſſured *Winter*, that this Meſſage would be very acceptable to the K. of *Spaine*. Then had *Winter* an Anſwer by Count *Miranda*, that the K. would beſtow 100000. Crownes toward the expedition, and at the next Spring at fartheſt, would ſet his foote in *England*. *Winter* returneth, and acquainteth *Garnet*, *Catsby* and *Treſham* with all, and they others; but before the next Spring the Queen died.

At the Queens death, *Chriſtopher Wright* was ſent into *Spaine*, and *Guy Fawkes* alſo from *Bruxels* by S. *William Stanley*, to advertiſe them there, that K. *James* was as violent againſt the Catholicks, as Q. *Elizabeth*, and therfore urged the *Spaniard* to proſecute the old deſigne. The Jeſuites privately ſuggeſted that they ſhould not admit him into *England*, as being an heretick. *Catesby* held, that the K. being an heretick, forfeiteth his Kingdome before any ſentence pronounced. The Parl: was diſſolved the 7th. of *July*, which the K. held, and prorogued till the 7th. of *February*. *Catsby* at *Lambeth* broke with *Winter* about blowing up the Parliament Houſe. *Winter* told him that it ſtrooke at the roote, but what and if it ſhould not take effect? *Catesby* won *Winter* to conſent, but firſt (ſaid he) goe over and winne the *Conſtable*, to obteyne more favour for Catholicks; and if you may bring over with you ſome confident Gentlemen, as M. *Fawkes*. *Winter* went, met with the Conſtable at *Bergin*, and delivered his Meſſage. The Conſtable anſwered, that his Maſter commanded him to doe all good offices for the Catholicks; but he ſhewed the Conſtable nothing of the matter. *Fawkes* and *Winter* came both into *England*. This plot of blowing up the Parliament Houſe, after an Oath of ſecrecy, and the Sacrament received

upon

upon it, *Catesby* disclosed it to *Percy*, and *Winter*, and *Wright* to *Fawkes*. *Percy* hired the House, *Fawkes* was pretended to be *Percies* man, and Names himselfe *Johnson*, and kept the keyes of the House till the adjournment of the Parliament: at which time all the conspirators departed into the Country. A House was hired at *Lambeth* by *Percy*, to keep the Powder and Wood for the mine, to which it was to be conveyed. When the plot had taken effect, what should they doe? *Percy*, with two or three of them, with a dozen more, would seize on the Duke, and carry him away. The Lady *Elizabeth* was to be surprized at hunting neare the L. *Harringtons*. They would save from the Parliament, first Catholicks, then some particular persons. While they wrought in the mine, they fed on baked meates, that they might not goe forth. At Candlemas the Powder is brought over, about which time working in the mine, they came against a stone-wall; when hearing a rushing noise of Coales, they feared they were discovered. But it was only the moving of Coales to be sould, which Cellar *Fawkes* hired, 20. Barrells of Powder they had provided, which they hid with Billets and Fagots. *Fawkes* went into *Flanders* to acquaint therewith *Stanley* and *Owen*, *Stanley* was not there; *Owen* approved it. *Percy* and *Catesby* met at the Bathe; and it was agreed, that *Catesby* should call in whom he thought best, the number being small. He called in Sir *Everard Digby*, and afterward M. *Tresham*. The Parliament was anew prorogued till the 5. of *November*. Then the conspirators all went into the Country, and returned 10. dayes before the Parliament, and hearing that the Prince would be absent from the Parliament, said they would then seize on the Prince, and let alone the Duke. Saturday before the Kings returne (which was on Thursday) a letter in the street was delivered to the L. *Mounteagles* man, to put into his Masters hand: It had neither date nor superscription, and by the Lord was that night sent to the Earle of *Salisbury*, who made acquainted with it the Lord *Chamberlaine*, the Lord *Admirall*, the Earle of *Worcester* and *Northampton*. The Letter was this.

My Lord,

OUt of the love I beare to some of your friends, I have a care of your preservation. Therefore I would advise you, as you tender your life, to devise some excuse to shift off your attendance at this Parliament. For God and Man hath concurred to punish the wickednesse of this time. And think not slightly of this advertisement, but retire your selfe into your Country, where you may expect the event in safety: for though there be no appearance of any sterme, yet I say, they shall receive a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet they shall not see who hurt them. This counsell is not to be contemned, because it may doe you good,

and can doe you no harme: for the danger is paſt ſo ſoone as you ſhall have burnd this Letter. And I hope God will give you the grace to make good uſe of it; to whoſe holy protection I commend you.

Friday following the King read it, who conſidering the ſentence therein expreſſed (that they ſhould receive a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet ſhould not know who hurt them) and joyning it to the ſentence (for the danger is paſt ſo ſoon as you ſhall have burn'd this Letter) did ſuſpect the danger mentioned, to be ſome ſodaine danger of blowing up with Powder. Afterward it was determined the Lord Chamberlaine ſhould view both above and beneath the Parliament Houſes. Which the L. Chamberlaine having done, found in a Vault under the upper Houſe, great ſtore of Billets, foggots and Coales, and caſting his eye aſide, a fellow ſtanding by, which called himſelfe *Percys* man, that had hired the Cellar. The K. ſuppoſing that Gunpowder might be hid under that Wood and Coales, cauſed a farther ſearch to be made. Whereupon Sir *Thomas Knevet* went about the Parliament Houſe with a ſmall number, to ſearch more narrowly, the mid-night next after, where he found *Fawkes* ſtanding without doores, booted and ſpurd, and apprehended him; then in ſearch under the Wood and Coales, 36. Barrells of Gunpowder, and about the Traitor three Matches, and other Inſtruments fit for that wicked purpoſe were found, which wicked intent of blowing up the Houſe, he inſtantly confeſſed; affirming, that if he had bin in the Houſe, he would not have failed to blow up both himſelfe and them. In this mine wrought *Catesby*, *Robert Winter*, Eſquires. *Thomas Percy*, *Thomas Winter*, *John Wright*, *Chriſt: Wright*, *Guido Fawkes*, Gentlemen, and *Bates*, *Catesbyes* man. Sir *Everard Digby*, *Ambroſe Rookewood*, *Francis Treſham*, Eſquires, *John Gram*, Gent: and *Robert Keys*, were made acquainted with the plot, but wrought not in the mine. After *Fawkes* apprehenſion, the Traytors poaſt away, and pretending Religion they would fight for, gathered in open Rebellion all they could, which number never exceeded 80. They wandered thorough *Warwick*-ſheire, to *Worceſter*-ſheire, and thence to the borders of *Stafford*-ſheire, and having gotten themſelves into a Houſe, they obſtinately refuſed to yeeld to the Sheriff:, but (through Gods providence) a leſſe quantity of Powder then 2. pounds, taking fire, did ſo mangle ſome, diſable others, that having begged pardon on their knees for their crime, of God, they deſperately expoſed themſelves to the peoples fury, 3. of the chiefe joyned back to back, and two of them were killed with one ſhot, *Catesby* and *Percy*, *Winter* was taken alive. So all of them were killed, beaten or taken.

The

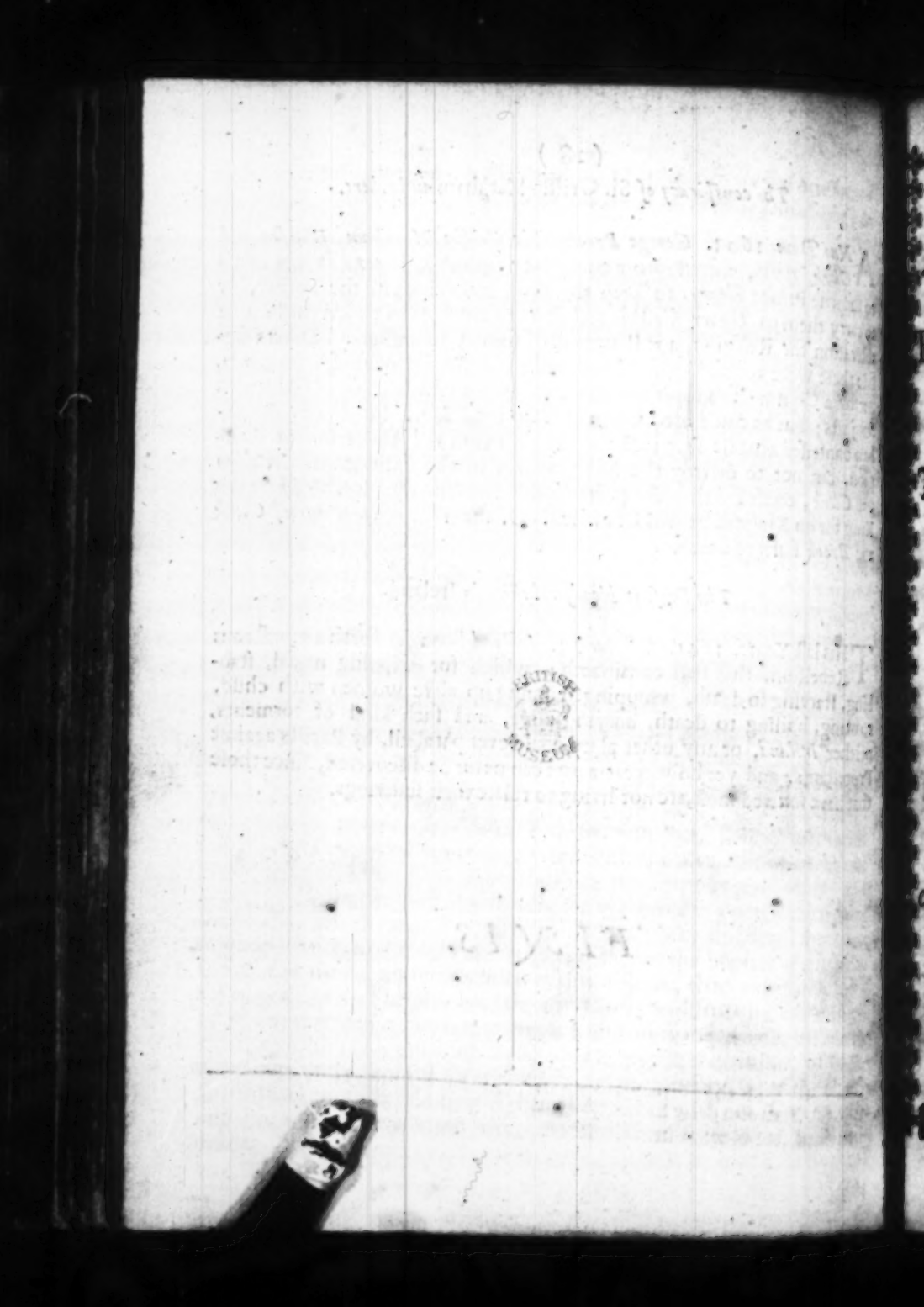
The conſpiracy of Sir Griffin Markham *and others.*

Anno Dom: 1603. *George Brooke*, Sir *Griffin Markham*, *Watſon* and *Clerk* Prieſts, entred into a conſpiracy againſt K. *James* (it was ſaid) to ſurpriſe Prince *Henry*, to keep the King and Prince in the Tower, or to carry them to *Dover* Caſtle, and there to obteine their own pardons, a toleration for Religion, and Removall of ſome Councellors. Divers beſide theſe were accuſed, and condemned; but *Brooke* confeſſed he did it, but by a Commiſſion from the King, to try the faithfullneſſe of the Kings Subjects; but he could produce no ſuch Commiſſion. Sir *Griffin Markham* confeſſed that he intended forraine Invaſion and Alteration of Religion, but not to deſtroy the King, as was in the inditement. *Watſon* and *Clerk*, confeſſed they drew the Gentlemen into the plot, houlding the King for no King till he was Crowned. Of them all only *Watſon*, *Clerk*, and *Brook* ſuffered death.

The Preſent bloody rebellion in Ireland.

THis laſt Yeare, 1641. *October* 23. *Ireland* brought forth a monſtrous Rebellion, that ſtill continueth; which for ſtripping naked, ſtabbing, ſtarving to death, whipping, ripping up alive women with child, roaſting, boiling to death, burying alive, and ſuch kind of torments, neither *Ireland*, or any other place could ever parallell, by Papiſts againſt Proteſtants; and yet how great a part can never be diſcovered, ſince thoſe that have ſuffered moſt, are not living to relate their ſufferings.

FINIS.



K England: Lords & Commons 30

A LETTER

Sent from

Both Houses of PARLIAMENT, to his

EXCELLENCE,

The Earle of *Essex*, Lord generall of the Army for the *King* and Parliament.

ALSO

Certain Articles which passed betweene the King and both Houses.

WITH

The Resolution and Protestation of the County of *Yorke* and *Lincolne*, to stand for the King and Parliament to maintain the true Protestant Religion.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament that this Protestation be printed and published.

H. Elsinge Cler: Parl: D.Com.

Printed for *Joh. Franc.* *Octob*, 11. 1642.

A LETTER

from

both Houses of PARLIAMENT to his

EXCELLENCY

The Earle of Essex, Lord generall of the

Army for the King and Parliament.

ALSO

Certain Articles agreed upon and concluded between

the King and both Houses.

WITH

The Resolution and Protestation of the

County of Kent and London, to stand for

the King and Parliament to maintain

the true Protestant Religion.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament this 8th Nov-

ember be printed and published.

H. Elsynge Cler: Par: D. Com.

Printed for Job. Franc. 1642.

A LETTER sent from both Houses of Parliament, to his Excellence, the Earle of ESSEX, *Lord Generall of the Army for the King and Parliament.*

Shewth,

THat considering the many unhappy distractions lately growne in Church and Common wealth, through the malitious practice of a mavignant party, labouring to breed Jealousies betwen the King and his People; wee are inforced to expresse in this our humble Declaration our desires and resolutions to spend our lives and estates in defence of hrs Majesties Person, the true Protestant Religion, the peace of the Realme, the maintenance of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, the Lawes of the Land, and the lawfull liberties of the Subjects; according to our late Protestation against all such as shall attempt to seperate his Majesty from his great and faithfull Councell of Parliament, and by that meanes to alienate his Majesties affection from his loyall subjects. And this our Declaration we humbly desire your Lordship to represent from us to the High and honourable Court of Parliament.

To the right Honorable, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled:

The humble Petition of the Gentry, Ministers, Freeholders, and other Inhabitants of the County of *Yorke*.

Sheweth,

THat they cannot be afraid themselves or any other shall incurre your displeasure, for declaring their just feares in an humble way, or representing that the generall distractions have a more powerfull influence upon this particular County, then upon any other part of the Kingdome; and the many inconveniences that we have endured, doe make us already sensible of more dangerous effects then hath hitherto befallen us; and from thence, apprehending the greatest of Calamities to follow, unlesse God blessing and a speedy union doe happily prevent them; we are bold, in all humility to Petition that a timely remedy may be applied, lest our disease grow desperate, past cure, without such application, as may indanger the vitall spirits of the Kingdome: that such regard may be had to his Majesties Honour, together with the faith of the Kingdome, as may evidence to all the worly that nothing is deerer to us then the sincerity and glory of our King and Kingdome, whose honour and reputation both at home and abroade must stand and fall together. That wee may not be distracted by contrary commands, but that the knowne lawe of the Land, which wee humbly conceive is the fundamentall liberty of the Subjects, and noe arbitrary government may be the rule of our obedience, and the guide and determiner of all our actions and differences. And we according to our alegiance shall be ready to maintaine his Majesties royall Person, Crowne and Dignity, in

ll rights and prerogative, together with the lawfull
vileges of Parliament, the just liberty of the subjects,
e true Protestant profession, and the peace of the Land.

Propositions for accommodation for the Composing of the present Differences *betweene his Majesty and the* PARLIAMENT.

1. IT plainly appearing by a Declaration made in Parliament, that the Commission of Array is gainst the Laws and Statutes of this Kingdome; and that is Majesty is graciously pleased to declare his resolution o governe his people onely by the Law: that his Majeshould be now pleased, for the more apparant expreson of that his royall purpose to recal his said Commiion and all instructions and commands which have been given therein.

2. His Majesty having acknowledged that in these mes of danger, the proposition made unto him by oth Houses of Parliament, for the setling of the Mia very fit, thereby to put the Kingdome into a posture of defence, and hath also approved of such persons for the ordering ordering of the same, who have been nominated by the Parliament, that he would be graciously pleased to give his royal assent to an Act of Parliament, for the establishing thereof, for two yeers space, which after may be continued, or laid downe, as the necessity of the time shall then require.

3. That all such persons so nominated by the Parliament, and approved of by his Majesty, to be Lievtenants in every County for the ordering of the Militia, may receive their Commissions onely from his

Majesty, with a proviso, that they shall not be displaced, nor their power taken from them, but by consent of Parliament, thereby to preserve the honour of his Majesty, and also to remove all doubts and feares from his Subjects.

4 That no Commissions for the Array or Militia which have beene made or given by the King or Parliament, may be further executed, but that all Armes shall be laid downe untill the Militia be setled by Act of Parliament.

5 That a generall pardon may be granted, in such manner as his Majesty hath beene graciously pleased to offer unto all his Subjects.

6 That a particular Declaration in that Act may be made, that neither Sir *John Hotham*, nor any other person shall be questioned for any Act done in obedience to the directions and command of both Houses of Parliament, or which hath beene since allowed and approved of by them.

7 That that the Towne of *Hull*, with all the Armes and Ammunition removed from them, may be delivered into the actuall and peaceable possession of his Majesty; and that his Majesty would be then pleased to commit the government therof with the said Armes unto such other person which both Houses of Parliament shall nominate. And that no such Governour shall be displaced, nor the Armes removed, but by consent of Parliament. And that *Newcastle* and all other Townes of strength may be in like manner disposed of.

8 That all the Lords and members of the House of Commons that are now with the King, shall presently repaire to their severall houses, and not be questioned for their absence.

9 That his Majesty would be pleased to runne againe to *Whitehall*, or some other place neere his City of *London*, there to make his residence, as formerly he hath don; thereby to revive the dejected hearts of his afflicted subjects, who have thus unhappily been deprived of the comfort and honour of his royall presence.

10 That all distractions and misapprehensions may be removed, by the happy concurrence of his Majesty with the Parliament, whereby such good Lawes may be made as may conduce to the establishing of a setled peace in the whole State.

11 That the reliefe of the distressed Protestants, his Majesties faithfull and loyall subjects in *Ireland* may be speedily resolved on, and their wants supplied, for the suppressing of the Rebels, Papists, in that Kingdome.

12 That all abuses in the Church may be removed in a more perfect Reformation, in Discipline and Ceremonies, by an Assembly of such learned Divines as shall be mated to that purpose by both Houses of Parliament.

The Earle of ESSEX his Instructions for *England* safety.

1 THat the safest and surest defence of this Kingdome is our Navie, and that we can never be hurt by Land by a forraigne Enemy, unlesse we are first beaten at Sea.

2 That the favouring and cherishing of Souldiers, will be no small security to this Kingdome.

3 A sweet harmony betwixt a loving Prince and loyall subjects.

4 A sweet reprehension of the superfluous expence of

of these times, which if some course were taken therein to limit them, it would make much to the generall good of this Common-wealth.

5 Lastly, if his Majesty would reserve the places properly belonging to the wars, whereof he hath the fewest of any great Prince in christendom; as the government of his Isles, the keeping of the Fores & Castles and places of command in *Zeland* only for souldiers, and men found in Religion: It would be a great encouragement to his Subjects to follow the wars, to enable themselves to doe him service, though to their cost and charge, when they have to hope that though they serve a strange Prince or state, to their no advantag, yet thereby enabling themselves to doe their owne King servace, they may in time be provided for in their owne Country, whereas if charges of commands, advancement of honour may be had better cheap by staying at home there will but few ever take the paines and labour.

His Excellency the Earl of *Essex* sent a Letter to the Earl of *Dorset* desiring his advice how hee might use the best meanes to present the Petition of both houses of Parliament to his Majesty in an humble manner, and that those that should be imployd therin might have accesse to his Majesty and safe conduct; and the said Earl of *Dorset* acquainting his Majesty therewith, his Majestie answered that his eares should be alwaies open to any Petitioner, but that came from his Parliament, but hee would not receive any Petition from the hands of any that hee had proclaimed traiters.

FINIS.

P A

And

pl

From 7 sep

THere

where

tells

tance, the

their liberty

nine of his

ship, and

manor,

were there

said, they

said, the Q

that the

it did like

Newcastle

throw me

after the tri

Divers

Parliament,

lying in



Numb. 9.

SPECIALL

PASSAGES

And certain Informations from severall places, Collected for the use of all that desire to bee truely Informed.

From *Tuesday*, the 4. of *October*, to *Tuesday* the 11. of *October*, 1642.

Yarmouth, October 6. 1642.

THere is a Ship chased into the River which came from *Holland*, wherein are 140. Cavaliers, all experienced Commanders, 300. Barrells of powder, and other Ammunition, and 12. Pieces of Ordnance, the Bayliffe of this towne could not arrest this Ship, being without their liberty; But Captaine *Johnson* a proper young man and stout, Captaine of 100. Volunteers put themselves into Long Boates, and boarded the Ship, and disarmed the men, and possessed themselves of her, upon examination, they confesse they were sent to *Newcastle* by Master *Jermaine*, And were there to receive the Earle of *Newcastles* direction; others of them said, they were sent by the Queene to goe to the King; a third sort of them said, the Queene and Master *Jermin* procured their comming over; and that the Ship and goods therein were all bought with the Queenes mony; And like the truth of this will appeare if the Queenes letters to my Lord of *Newcastle* be opened, which with others are sent up to the Parliament being throwne into the Sea by 2 Cavaliers, but a Mariner dived to the bottome after them, and fetched them up again.

Westminster, October 7.

Divers letters were intercepted this weeke and brought to the Houses of Parliament, one from the Earle of *Newcastle* to Secretary *Nicholas*, signifying in what a distracted condition the Towne of *Newcastle* was in, in re-

gard that the *Swallow* and *Bonaventure* were taken at *Tynmouth* by the Parliament Ships, and that his Lordſhip had diſpatched an expreſſe to the Queene to acquaint her with this great misfortune, whereby her Majeſtie was deprived of theſe two Ships for a Convoy.

Alſo one Letter from the Queene directed to her loving Cozen the Earle of *Newcaſtle*, was intercepted at *Yarmouth*, and brought to the Parliament, wherein her Maieſtie expreſſes her longing deſire to come for *England*.

And that ſhe onely waited for the *Swallow* and *Bonaventure* to conduct her over: That ſhe had lately ſent the 10000 l. in two Veſſells, and ſome Armes, and had ſent in this Ship that brought her Letter 300. Barrells of Powder, and 200. Experienced Commanders and Souldiers, ſuch as will not turne their backes to the *Hothamites* if they chance to meete with them, and that the reſt of the Armes and Ammunition ſhee will bring with her her ſelfe, which is all ſhe hath directions from the King to provide.

This Ship was ſeized on at *Yarmouth* by Captaine *Johnſon*, Captaine of a company of Voluntiers, ſtout and reſolute young men, who apprehended and diſarmed all the Cavaliers that came into the Ship.

Letters were intercepted going from Secretary *Nicholas* to the Earle of *Newcaſtle*, wherein he incloſed (as it was ſtiled) an impartiall relation of the fight at *Worceſter*, though hardly one word of truth in it, as (That foure Troopes were all cut in peeces, and one whole Troope drowned, whereas divers thouſands in and about *Worceſter* can witneſſe, that but 27. men on both ſides were ſlaine.

Secondly, he affirmes with confidence that Colonell *Sandys* ſhould acknowledge, he was through miſinformation and his owne ambition drawne to ſide with the Parliament, and that his conſcience did ſtrike him hee was ingaged in a bad cauſe, and craved pardon of God and the King, and would hereafter if he recovered turne againſt the Parliment. This being made knowne to Colonell *Sandys* at *Worceſter October* the fourth, did expreſſe much indignation againſt the Secretary, and ſaid that ſuch perfidious perſons as hee was, did make the King doe that hee would not doe: That it was falſe which the Secretary had writ, for hee was ſo farre from repenting to lay downe his life in this cauſe, and the Parliaments and Kingdomes behalfes, that if hee had ten thouſand lives hee would ſacrifice them all; and was ſatisfied in Conſcience they were the Kings beſt Subjects that ſtood with the Parliament to defend Religion, Lawes and Liberty, and they the worſt of Subjects, that did adviſe or aſſiſt the King by force to deſtroy his Parliament; and in them Religion, Lawes and Libertie. Hee

further writ that the *Essexians* were but 8000. Foot and 2000. Horse, and that his Maiesty had 6500. Foot well armed, besides the Lord *Strangers* 3000. men, and that his Majestie intends for *London*.

Letters came to the Parliament from Sir *John Hotham* declaring his reasons against the treaty agreed on by the Lord *Fairfax*, and Master *Bellassis*, &c. and that he had imparted the same to the Gentlemen of that County, shewing how destructive it was to the peace of the Kingdome to have a Neutrality; when as in all probabilitie his Maiesty intends to make *Yorkshire* his place of retreate, and the seate of the Warre, and therefore it concernes them in time to be in a good posture to oppose the Cavaliers, signifying further to the Parliament that they need not doubt of the affections of the Lord *Fairfax* and those Gentlemen on the Parliaments behalfe that subscribed the treaty, for things standing as they did in that conjunction of time might occasion that subscription which by getting a little time would the more advantage their designe against the Commissioners of Array.

Both Houses of Parliament agreed of a Declaration against this Treaty of *Yorkshire*, shewing their dislike thereof, and a necessity that it be not observed by the Lord *Fairfax* and those of his partie, and have sent the same downe by an expresse to the Lord *Fairfax* and Master *Hotham*, requiring them to apprehend delinquents and to send them up to the Parliament.

Master *Hotham* since this Treaty to shew his dislike thereof, by his accommodations as well as by his expressions in writing to the Commissioners of Array, marched out of *Selby* to *Cawood* Castle, the Archbishop of *Yorks* his seate, which was well fortified, 50. Muskets being within to guard it, under the command of a *Scotch* Commander, placed there by generall *Leuthen*, and two peeces of Ordnance they had also, yet such was the resolution of Master *Hotham* to take it by assault, that they yeelded the Castle upon quarter, which is within seven miles of *Yorke*.

A scandalous booke came out in Print this weeke, intituled *A speedy Post from Heaven, to the King*, which reflected upon his Maiestie; which the Parliament being informed of, ordered the

Booke to be burnt, and that a diligent ſearch me made for the Printer and Author thereof.

Information is given that the Lord *Faulkland* is ſent by his Majeſtie into *Ireland*, to invite ſtrength over hither; another Letter of Secretary *Nicholas* was intercepted wherein (amongſt other things) he writes that his Majeſtie hath given Licence, that ſuch as are well affected to him, and whoſe perſons and eſtates are in the power of the Parliaments Forces may ſubſcribe ſome ſmall ſumme of mony to ſeeme to comply with the Parliament, and his Maieſty will not queſtion them nor any of theirs for it.

Divers Recuſants (as information is given to the Parliament) doe offer to ſubſcribe for Horſe, Mony and Plate; but the Commiſſioners in the Country refuſe to accept thereof, unleſſe it bee ſuch conſiderable ſummes as are proportionable to the eſtates and qualities of the ſubſcribers.

Some of the Earle of *Bedfords* Forces have apprehended Sir *Hugh Pollard*, three of the *Berkleyes* that are Knights, and divers others that have aſſiſted the Marqueſſe *Hartford* in his Rebellion, and are under way towards *London*, but Sir *John Stowell*, Sir *Ralph Hopton &c.* with divers of their Forces are got into *Cornewall* to *Pendennice* Caſtle where there are ſixty Peeces of Ordnance and a brave harbour for Ships, fit to receive any force from *Ireland* or elſe where. Capt. *Leg* is eſcaped out of the Gatehouſe this week, his Keeper cannot imagine which way he ſhould goe but by having a falſe Key, the Keeper is accuſed of Treaſon for letting *Leg* eſcape, who was committed for levying warre againſt the Parliament, and the Lords have committed the Keeper to the Counter, who is to be proceeded againſt with effect, and have diſpoſed of the cuſtody of the Priſon to a ſafe hand, for that by this eſcape the place is forfeited by Law.

Weſtminſter, Octob. 8.

More Letters intercepted from Secretary *Nicholas*, and brought to the Parliament directed to Sir *William Boſwell* confirming his former notorious lie of *Colonell Sandys* recantation for taking up Armes on the Parliaments behalfe, and divers other rediculous paſſages in that Letter of his (amongſt the reſt) that the Lord *Fairfax* and the Yorkeſhiere men were ſo aſto-

niſhed

nished with the report of the great overthrow given to the Parliaments Forces at *Worcester*, and at the taking of Sir *John Savill* Prisoner, and killing two of his men, and of the great preparations the Earle of *Newcastle* is making, that it frighted them into a Treaty for the Kings advantage, or to that effect.

Certain Newes is come that the Marquesse of *Hertford* is in *Wales*, and hath assaulted *Gotheridge* Castle, 12. miles from *Gloucester*, and intends to make his way Southwards.

There being a false and scandalous report raised by ill affected persons to the Parliament, That the Parliament had passed a Vote to lay an Excise of three pence a pound on Pewter and other commodities: They agreed on a Declaration, That never any such thing was in their intention, And that it should be taken as an acceptable service for any man to bring to the Parliament the raiser or publisher of such a false report, that they might be brought to condigne punishment.

This weeke the Papists and the malignant party raised a report in *London*, that 700. of the Parliaments Forces were all cut in pieces neere unto *Bushley*, describing in what manner the fight was; which was all false, for *Octob.* 7. Sir *Henry Cholmly* was returned to *Worcester* from *Bushley*. And had been in person, and viewed *Bridge-North*, and left his Regiment in the Towne, and the Cavaleers never appeared against him.

Out of Shropshire,

It is certainly informed by a godly Minister not far from *Shrewsbury*, that in one great house which the Cavaleers have plundered and pillaged, they did plainly and openly professe they had little to live on, but what they took from others; and that when they went to bed (being about 60. of them) divers of them had Queenes hanging about their necks. In another great house where they were, they drunke a health to the good successe of Sir *Philem O Neale* in *Ireland*, of the Gentlemans own Beere, and in presence of himselfe, and divers of his servants.

These relations are certaine, and will bee proved by divers faithfull men and eare witnesses: by which we may see how likely these men are to maintain the true Protestant Religion, the Lawes of the Land, and lawfull liberties of the Subjects, whatsoever they pretend. And though they pretend they search only for

Armour, yet they break up, and take away whatſoever is of worth, or can well be carried away, and ſpoil many other things, cutting them in pieces; and many of them (eſpecially in out-townes and villages) where they are billetted, pay nothing for what they have, and take away many horſes from the people.

Alſo the Cavaleers did raviſh the wife of a very diſcreete, moderate, able and godly Miniſter in *Shropſhire*, whoſe name is thought fit to conceale, out of reſpect to the perſon, who is a very ſober and vertuous woman; and ſuch was their impudence, that this was done whileſt the Kings Majeſty himſelfe was in the Towne (or not far off) as is affirmed by divers perſons of know credit in theſe parts.

Weſtminſter, 6. Octob.

The Houſe of Commons upon mature deliberation, concerning the Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland* his going over to his charge, having ſtayed long with his Majeſty for his diſpatch, thought it moſt neceſſary to take a view of the Inſtructions which the King had given unto him to proſecute, in the managing of that great Charge, and ſent one of their Members unto him for the ſaid Inſtructions, but his Lordſhip ſaid, that without the privity of the King his Maſter, and his leave firſt procured, he might not part with his Inſtructions, whereupon the Houſe of Commons at a Conference with the Lords, ſignified that they could not conſent to the Lord Lieutenants going over into *Ireland*, untill that he did bring in his Inſtructions, and therefore deſired their Lordſhips that he might be enjoyned to bring them in.

The high Sheriffe of *Lincolnſhire*, who had been ſo much refractory to the Orders of the Houſe, and had complyed with all diligence to advance the ends and aymes of the malignant faction, was deſervedly committed to the Tower.

Mancheſter,

Manchester, October 7.

Now God be prayſed we have a cleere paſſage to ſend Letters and communicate with our friends, the Earle of *Darby* left this ſiege laſt Saturday after he had loſt neare 200. of his men that were ſlaine, and halfe as many taken, with little or no loſſe of ours; which was not in us or the ſtrength of the Horſe or the Rider that hath given ſo good an iſſue to our expectation, but God, the God of our ſtrength hath done it for us, perfecting and bleſſing us in a good cauſe. It is ſaid that hee went away becauſe the King had earneſtly ſent for him to come with all his Forces to make an addition to his Majeſties Army, being to put ſomething in execution when all his Forces are together; yet here the Earle continues to leavie new Forces, which makes many in our Towne to feare he meanes to come againe, but the more judiciall conceive it is to make up his number ſlaine and taken, beſides ſeverall hundreds runne away, that ſo he may appeare with the more eſteeme to the King, let it be what it will, if for our Towne againe, we ſhall not feare nor faint, having the ſame God and cauſe, if hee goes any where elſe, I pray God ſend him no better ſucceſſe.

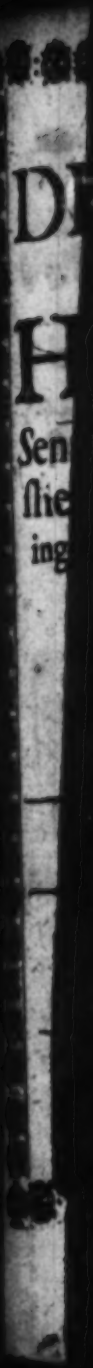
Stone, Octob. 8.

Here wee begin to bee ſenſible of the calamities which before we did but heare of, the Cavaliers doe now plunder neare us, they take our Cattle and drive them to their quarters, but doe ſell cheape penny-

worths

worths of other mens goods, which makes them have customers; a Butcher that dwells not farre off went to make a purchase amongst them, took a summe of mony and bought Cattle at an easie rate, making account of a very great gaine, but as hee returned, another Troope met with him and tooke his bargaine out of his hands and sent him home by weeping Crosse. The King is yet at *Shrewsbury*, but an honest man of that Towne saith some of the prime Officers of the Army give out confidently that the King will goe towards *London* next Wednesday, and saith that the Mint in their Towne goes a pace, the Papists bringing and sending in all their owne and what others plate they can procure.

London Printed for *H. Blunden*, 1643.



THE

DECLARATION

Of Captain

HOTHAM

Sent to the Parliament, wherein hee shieweth the Reasons of his marching into the County of *York*, with some troops of Horse and Foot, as also why he consented not to the treaty of Peace agreed upon by some of the Gentlemen of that County.

Imprimatur, *H. Elsyng Cler. Parl. Dom. Com.*

LONDON,
Printed for *Richard Best*, October 11.
1642.

THE

DECLARATION

OF [illegible]

HOTHAM

[illegible] to the Parliament [illegible]

[illegible] receiv[illegible] the Reasons of his Journey

[illegible]ing into the County of [illegible], with Instructions

of Horse and Foot [illegible] why he could

[illegible]ed not to the use of Parliament

upon by some of the C[illegible]

[illegible]thers of that

[illegible]ty.

Imprimatur, R. Ref. [illegible] Dec. 7th.



The Declaration of Captaine *Hotham*, sent to the Parliament, wherein he sheweth the Reasons of his marching into the County of *York*, with some Troops of Horse, &c.

WHereas divers ill-affected Persons seeking the ruine of Religion and the publique libertie have procured illegall Commissions to be issued out unto them thereby to get a colour to deceive those that naturally sit not into the bottome of their pretences and to perfect their Designes, have by feare and terrour caused divers persons to send in their arms and horses for them to make use of. And whosoever

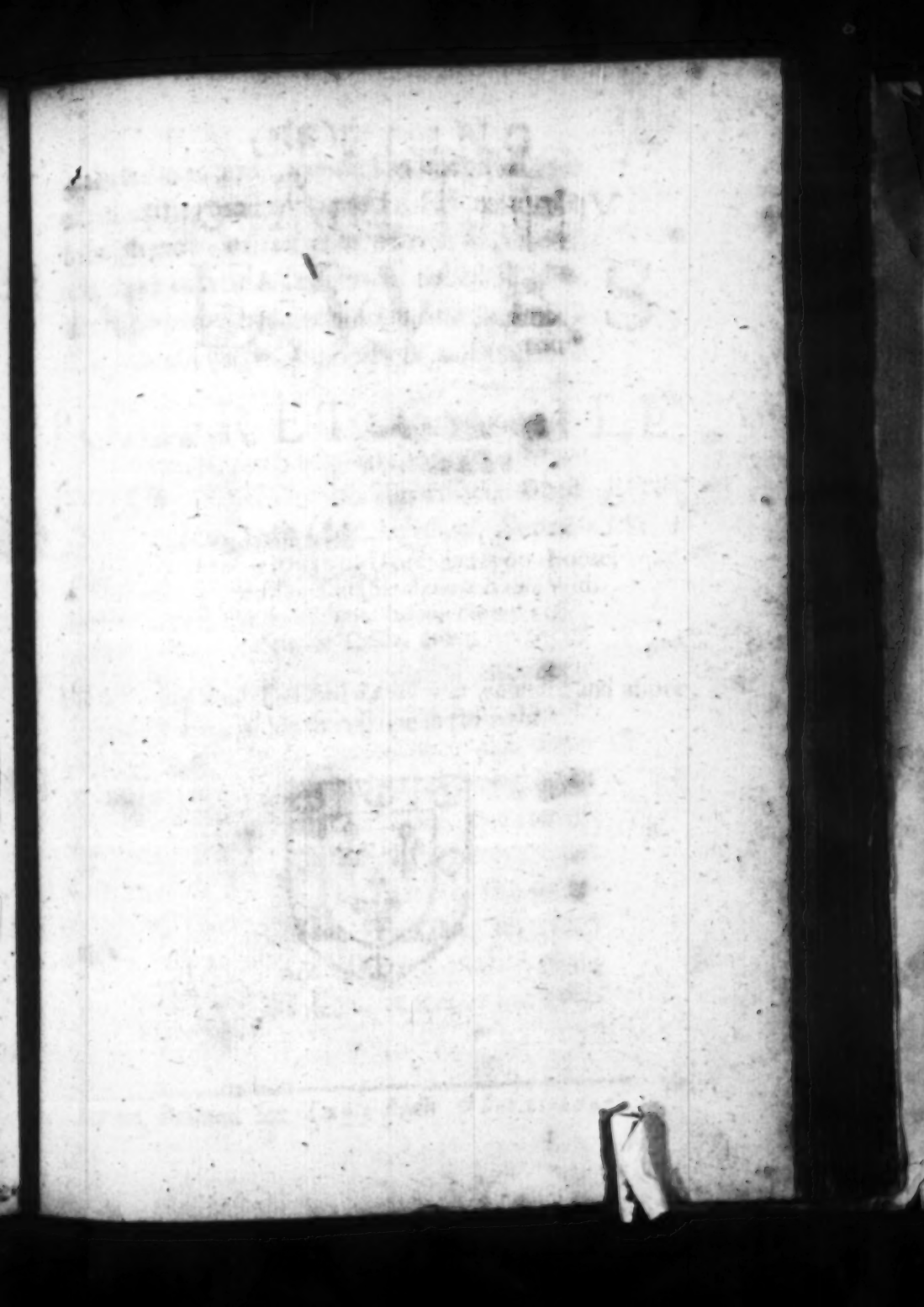
refuſed to ſecond them in their violent courſes, they have of ſome ſeized their perſons, and of others plundred their houſes, as of Maſter *Carter* the Miniſter, *Thomas Lake* of *Caſtleford*, and divers others during the Treatie, and M. *Nevill* hath made Proclamation in *Wakefield*, that whomſoever ſhall not aſſiſt them, themſelves, wives and children ſhall be ſeized on, and their houſes razed to the ground. To prevent theſe mighty violencies, and to give a ſtop to theſe miſeries, that the Subjects every where groaned under, I was forced to make uſe of that power and authority the Parliament, the great Protector of the Oppreſſed, had put into my hands, to march into this County with ſome troops of Horſe and Foot, and to give a breathing to theſe Oppreſſions. In purſuance of which, contrary to my Order, and expreſſe Command, the unruly ſouldiers have committed ſome miſdemeanours, for which there have bin divers puniſht, and all care ſhall hereafter be taken to keep them in order and obedience. And my not obſerving the

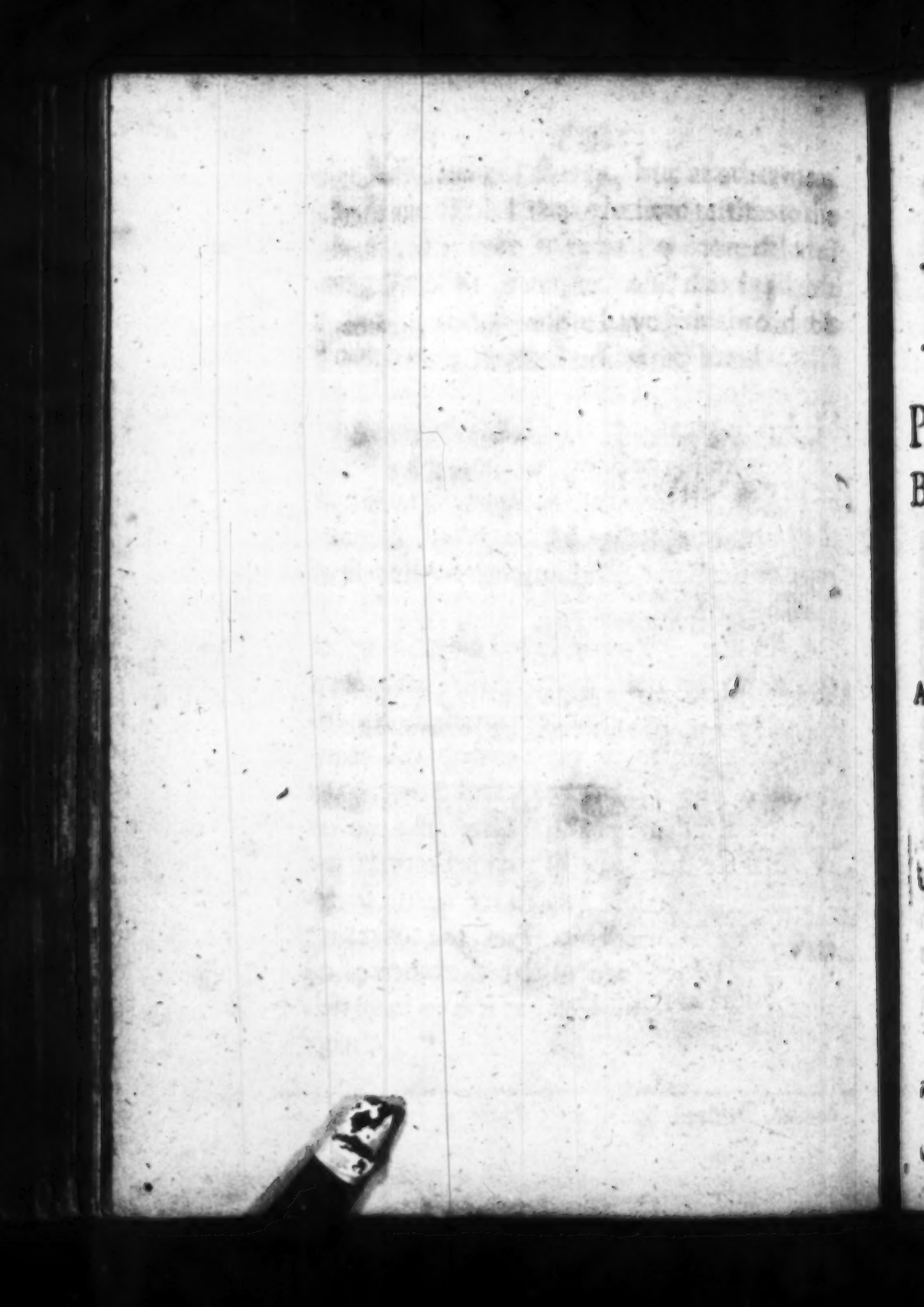
laſt

last pacification, I expressly declared, that I could never give my consent to anything wherein the Parliament advised how sent was not first asked, neither doe I perceive it to be by any generall consent, seeing there was six for the Westriding, and none for the North and East. And that all liberty is given to transport the Ordnance now in this County to the King, to the great disservice of the Parliament, and an association to obey neither, as if this County were independant to the King, Parliament, or the rest of the Kingdome.

And I doe here professe, I have no other end in this businesse, but to give assistance to those that are by violence oppressed, for doing their duties in performing the commands of the Parliament, and bringing to punishment those that have been the causers of all these unhappy breaches betwixt the King and his people, and have beene so declared by Parliament. For the effecting of which I doubt not of the assistance of all those that are sensible what it is to have neither

ther Religion or Liberty, but at other mens pleasures. This I thought fit to testifie to the World, that men may be no more deluded with specious pretences. And this is all that I aime at, and therefore have sent abroad this Declaration, attested under my hand.





EXCEEDING 33

True And Happy NEWES FROM POMFRET CASTLE.

Beeing a perfect description of a great Battaile, fought by Mr. *Hotham*, Sonne to Sr *Iohn Hotham*, with 300. Horse and 500. Foote, against the Lord *Savill*, and Sir *Francis Nevill*, With 1500. *Horse* and Foot, before the walls of *Pomfret* Castle. oct. 7.

Also declaring how the Lord *Savill* was wounded and above 200. of his men slaine in the fight.

London, Printed for Tho: Rider 0 Feb. 11. 1642.



True and happy Newes from *Pomfret* Castle in *Yorkeshire*, being a perfect discription of a great and wonderfull Battraile fought by Mr. *Hotham*, some of Sr. *John Hotham*.

THe noble and Heroicke Acts that hath oftentimes been performed & put in Execution by that thrice worthy and undaunted souldier Sr. *John Hotham*, whose name together with his prowes, is blazed through our wholl Kingdome, for performing that charge and trust which was reposed in him by the great Assembly of Parliament, at *Hull*, when his enemies spleen and inveterate

mallice burſt forth, thirſting after his bloud, likewiſe that noble and heroicke ſpirit Mr. *Hotham*, ſonne to Sr. *John Hotham* doth follow his fathers Steps, bearing the ſame mind and conſtant reſolution that his Prececeſſors hath done, for when that he heard ſay that the Lord *Savill* and Sr. *Jervis Nevill*, with divers others of their confederates, had taken Sanctuary in *Pomfret* Caſtle, in *Yorkeſhire*, he humbly deſired his fathers conſent that he might march out of *Hull* with ſome certain number of Forces, and to advance toward the ſaid Caſtle, and after ſome time ſpent in contemplation thereupon, Sr. *John Hotham* gave conſent to his Sonnes deſires, and ordered that he ſhould have 500. Foote and 300. Horſe, and by his command to march againſt the diſturbers of the peace of the Kingdome, which was immediately performed, and when Mr. *Hotham* was in readineſſe to ſet forth, he propounded divers propoſitions to his Soldiers, which was as followeth.

1. *To know whether they were willing to ſerve*

serve under him, and to hazard their lives with him in defence of the true protestant Religion, the Laws of the Land, and liberty of the subject, in which he had no sooner expressed himselfe, but they all with loud acclamations cryed out, and declared unto him that they would lose their dearest lives with him therein. *Hotham* with his company immediatly marched from *Hull*, taking his leave of his Father, towards *Kyrwood* Castle, not farre from the City of *Yorke*, when after some hot spent for the space of two houres, they obtained the same. Then he set down his resolution to march towards *Manfield* Castle, where indeed he found great opposition.

Of this news being with all haste and possible expedition carried to the Lord *Savill*, who was within the said Castle, giving him notice that he would be besieged by the Parliament forces, if not speedily prevented, whereupon he ordered his men, being neere upon a thousand, to march forth and to meet the said Mr. *Hotham*, which they did accordingly.

At their first greeting master *Hotham* let fly a messenger to him from one of his Cannons, where upon the Lord *Savill* sent a Herrauld of armes to master *Hotham*, to desire to know what was the cause of his comming in that hostile manner, who immedi tely rendered him an answer to this or the like effect That he came to preserve the peace of the County, and to execute the orders of Parliament, and to apprehend all such as are delinquents to either one or both Houses of Parliament.

Vpon which answer the Lord *Savil* presently sent to the Earle of *Cumberland*, requiring him to assist him with all expedition, but before that he could come in, Mr *Hotham* joyned battaile with the said Sr *John Savill*, playing with his Ordnance with such furious courage, and also assaulting of him with his Horse and foot both in the Front and Reare, and wing, insomuch that he was forced soon to retreate, to the Castle, but the blades of *Hull* pursuing them so close, that they killed 300 of his men before they could get into the

Castle

Caſtle, and wounded Sr. *Francis Nevill* of *Cheate*, with the loſſe of very few men.

But the Lord *Savill* having gotten into the Caſtle with his Forces, immediately ſhut the gates and began to make uſe of his Ordnance that were mounted upon the wals of the Caſtle, ſhooting and diſcharging very furiouſly againſt Mr. *Hotthams* men, but lying under ſhoot, in regard they were ſo neare the walls of the Caſtle, Mr. *Hotham* preſently commanded two of his greateſt pieces of Ordnance to be planted againſt the port of the Caſtle, on the ſouth ſide, which ſpeedily made entrance for his men, where fourthwith they entered not doing of the leaſt injury that night, ſuch was the care and charge of Mr. *Hotham*, in preſerving mens lives and ſhedding of blood, untill ſuch time as the Lord *Savill* with his complices began to oppoſe them, which Mr. *Hotham* ſeing, forthwith commanded all his men to make ready and to give Fire upon them inſomuch that Skirmiſh in the Caſtle began to grow hot, continuing for the ſpace of

of one houre, but at the last they of the Castle began to yeeld to Mr *Hotham* mercy, and some of them seeking to save themselves by flight, also it is credibly reported that the Lord *Savill* is very dangerously wounded thus hath Mr *Hotham* wonne the Castle of *Pomfret* which he now holdeth and maintaineth for the use of the King and Parliament, cleering the Countrey thereabouts of all evill affected persons to both.

IN T

Several

rec

Printed

34

WEEKLY INTELLIGENCE FROM

Severall parts of this Kingdome, received from very good hands.

K. PP. London

LONDON,
Printed for *R. Howes*, and are to be sold by *Henry Overton* in Popes-head-alley.
Octob. 13. 1642.

Shrewsbury, Octob. 1.



We have had a victory over some of the Parliaments forces on the West side of *Severne* neere *Worcester*, in which we lost ten men, for three Colours, some Horse and Scarfes. There is a report going, as if we had slaine hundreds of them, but the wisest here doe not beleeve much, but rather commend the valour of Collonel *Sandys* and

and others, and say that had the action been as diſcreetly as valiantly performed the ſucceſſe had been doubtfull; however we are much encouraged, and talke of comming againſt the Enemy, but my Lord of *Briſtoll* and others who tranceact the affaires, talke of wintering about *Shrewsbury*, or at leaſt of ſtaying while the Lord *Strange* and the Lord *Fawkland* returne, the one from *Ireland*, the other from *Marchester*; and whereas you at *London* talke as if we did eate what we have from the Subject, beleeve me theſe can afford his Majeſty as many hearty friends as the Parliament have, eſpecially of the Gentlemen and poore, the one for ambition, the other for need; and be ſure we have plots on foot upon the Officers in the Parliament-Army, one upon another; looke to heare that we being awry ſome, and corrupt others. Captaine *Wingate* is here uſed with all reſpect that is fit for a Gentleman, and good reaſon, for you have one of ours in your army; beſides we keep the maxims of warre.

Worceſter October 3.

I ſhould paſſe by the laſt weeks actions here, as the pulling in peeces the two paire of Organs in the Cathedrall, the defacing the Monuments of two grave Biſhops; the fall of a Souldier from the upper Gallery that he brake all his bones, the plundering Sir *William Ruſſels* houſe againſt command, the plundering of divers houſes of papiſts elſe; and of the diſpleaſure taken by the Lord Generall at ſuch unbeſeeming actions, and his Declaration upon the pittiful complaint made to him that he would have the rogues hanged, and of our ſurprize of *Hereford* by Captaine *Maſſy*, without any reſiſtance made by the Towne, onely a warning-peece ſhot off, and then they yeelded, when they might have ſlaine hundreds of our men, had they had *Manchester*-ſpirits, and of my Lord *Stamford* being after ſent and made Governour; and of the diſcovery of ſome plots to corrupt our

Canoneers and others; and tell you that Sunday in the morning my Lord Generall had notice that many of his Majesties Army was comming to *Bridgenorth*, and as it was conceived to *Coventrey* or *Warwicke*; whereupon my Lord dispatcht an expresse to *Warwicke*, *Coventrey*, and *Northampton*, that they all prepare for their defence, and doe what they could also to advance with some considerable powers against the enemy, himselfe promising all the helpe he could spare. This day also Collonel *Chimley* was sent to make sure the bridge over *Severne* at *Bewdley*, which he promised the Generall to give a good account of.

Manchester, Octob. 1.

We have no good newes to write, we are in a sad condition, the Parliaments want of expedition hath undone these two Counties. My Lord Generall, I heare, depends upon his Horse, as appeares at the late defeat; it must be the Foot that must doe it, for Horse will suddenly be disordered. I much feare the King will grow strong; had he but 10000. Foot, in all probability he will beate the Parliament Army. We are ever day in expectation of 1500. Scotch Dragoneers, had they been called in soon r or in part kept in when they were here, as I have often said, the worke had been compleated before this. Why may not the three Regiments of Foot, and five Troops of Horse, designed for *Yorkshire* touch upon us before they come thither; and then we could send some with them our troubles being over.

Edenburgh September 27.

The Commissioners of the generall assembly have ordered six Ministers, and three Elders to be at the Assembly, Mr. *Hinderson*, Mr. *Douglas*, Mr. *Rutherford*. Mr. *Bayly*, Mr. *Gellaspie*, and Mr. *Brathick*, the Elders are the Earle of *Cassilles*, Lord *Maitland*, and Sir *Archibald Johnson*. The Winter drawes on so fast that

that it is to be feared our men will doe little in *Ireland* untill the spring.

Westminster from the 5. of *Octob.* to the 12.

Newes came hither that a ship by foule weather was come in to *Yarmouth*, in which was 150. speciall Souldiers, and many barrels of Powder, money, and other things, from the unwearied agent of His Majesty, with speciall Letters. This weeke also came up the Sheriffe of *Lincolnshire* in a close Wagon, having so stoutly stood to His Majesty, that he received a knocke before he was taken. One of the Sejeants men was dispatcht with a packet to *Worcester* one day this weeke, and before he went, some of the other party had so loyned his head, that he lost his packet, and went not untill morning, his Letters being found in the dirt in the streets. This week the keeper of the Gatehouse was outed of his place, and charged with treason for letting goe Captaine *Legg*; its believed he tooke a good bribe, for the said Captaine attempted so to get off at *Coventry* offering a Diamond Ring. This weeke we sent 20000. pound to my Lord Generall and speciall Instructions to my Lord by M. *Rushworth*.

York Octob. 4.

This County is quiet since M. *Hotham* tooke the Bishops Castle, and the accord was made by the Lord *Fairfax*, which accord hath since been violated in a base manner, having horse and goods taken from them for the Kings service, when by the accord a neutrality ought to be. I can assure you sir, here are many thousands for King and Parliament, but they dare not shew themselves, unlesse some Forces come from *London* hither. There is such an antipathy in the generality of the poore and Gentry here, against any one that seems but religious, that if one goes but to a Sermon he is hissed, or sings but a Psalme in his house his windows are

broke, and he is in danger of his life; so that you see, if His Majesties instruments prevaile, what a protestant religion we are like to have.

Rome September 20.

His Holinesse and the Conclave are mightily incenced against *Englands* Parliament, which they account wholy puritans, and have therefore given order the Inquisitions be hot against the *English*, but it is yet with a distinction, that they take hold of friends to the Parliament, and the sonnes of puritans, or such University-men as are that way affected, and some for letting such passe when they were ordered have for their neglect been condemned to the Inquisition Galleys, and the like; so that its dangerous to passe into *Italy* without a Roman passe.

Dublin the 8. of September.

This Kingdome is for present lost, I wish it be regained in seven yeares; I wish our Governour be right, for heere are Officers of his making as perfect haters of the Parliament, as they are lovers of poperyrie: true that poor numbers that have lost their estates heere are right and valiant, and had the recovery beene committed to them, it had beene done by this: but Souldiers love long Warrs because they know not how other wayes to live.

Amsterdam the 19. of Octob.

The *Swede* begin to advance against the Emperor, the City of *Olmutz* (which the *Swede* sally out of dayly) much anoyes the Emperial's their Army is in *Silesia* and other parts, and prevailed against the Emperour, but the Emperor gathers all he can together, and will doe his utmost to send them farther of, not induring them so neere his hereditory

hereditory lands, the *Wemoriſh* have lately given ſome defeate to *John de wirth*, but are now drawing downe towards the States Countries: there is not a right accommodation to the Parliament of *England* from theſe Provinces, which I rather thinke to be politicy then disaffection: I ſhould never doubt but wiſe States will preſerve their intereſts.

Paris 5. Octob.

I ſuppoſe our greatneſſe is famous in your parts, the gaine of *Perpiniano* and other ſtrengths preſents us terrable to the *Spaniard*, we now advance towards *Torroſa* and other parts, our Souldiers take one place after another: If you in *England* accord not the ſooner we may happily make a truce with *Spaine*, and then will our Souldiers be ſick to be upon your backs, and ready to releive the *Iriſh*.

Worceſter the 7. of Octeber.

We begin to fortifie the Hill neere this City, and to think of winter quarter, and its ſaid His Majeſty doth the like at *Shrewsbury*, we ſhall empty their purſes before we have done. His Majeſty doth all he can to get the love of the people, and when from *Shrewsbury* divers of the inhabitance were fled, then were they recalled with all promiſes of ſafety, and good uſage, which intimation was drawn with much retorick, and read in all the Churches; Juſt now here comes newes that His Majeſties Forces are retreated that were upon their march, and that ſome are advanced towards *Wolverhampton*, which I ſuppoſe are onely Horſe for conveyance of quarters and forridge: My Lord *Say* is expected heere, whoes adviſe will be of much uſe, and I believe much expedite our deſignes!

From

From Brifton.

Heere God be praised we be all quiet, and we have here fortifyed this City very strong, and other mens harmes have taught us to looke to our selves, for we now stand not upon the name of rattle-heads or round-heads, for I hope we be all sound-heads, and be so united in one as we neither feare Cavaleers, nor Malignants, for our very prentises, and youths begin to be good Souldiers, and are like to make good men for the defence of the King, Kingdome, and Parliament, which we are at all times, ready to defend.

From Exceter.

We have fortifyed our City bravely, and have twenty five peeces of Ordnance readly mounted, & wherin we were dayly troubled with watching, warding, and trayning, which was a great hindrance of trade and losse of time, we have now raised a strong Garrison, and some take one Souldier, some two to billit, as men be able, and so we maintaine a most compleat Garrison of well governed men, and orderly Souldiers, and be in a brave posture of defence, against all those that shall offer to molest us.

From Manchester.

The Lord hath done for us wonderfull things, of which we rejoyce, tell it to your children, and to your childrens children, for he hath done for us marvelous things, for we have storme upon storme eight dayes together, not haile but stormes of lead, and yet the Lord hath delivered us out of it, But the Lord knowes how soone the enemy will returne againe, for we heere the Lord *Strange* is gone but 12 miles of to get more Papists, and Cavaleers to torment us, but praised be God their Crucifixes and Crosses cannot as yet

conjure

conjure our Muskets from doing us good service, we only want some of your brave Commanders, for we believe had we them to lead us, all the good Protestants here about would help us, and many others, for now here is as well as sorts plundred as those they call Round-heads, for all is fish that comes to the net; with them they dig up men hearts where they make their use to looke for money, and still all those that have beene for the King, they now suffer as well as those that be for the King and Parliament, and still the Papists be them that be spar'd most, and for certain the Earle gives a seale of protection to those that shall be spared from plunder; so that now his followers may rob and steale by license, this is true; all the Yeomen must now be made slaves. O *Englands* Yeomen and Husbandmen looke to your selves, for if you stand not to it, as we of *Machyn* do, but be overcome, looke for ever to be slaves, for you see how this bloudy tyrant rages who broke his Father heart, and cannot now intend to bury him without shewing, all his revenge on us. We are still fortifying, our Dutch ingineer hath done us extraordinary service. we want such men and the Parliaments help, in which we hope they are not forgetfull of us.

FINIS.

Jo

K

Moſt co
com

That He
ons to

Which is
that

Prin

Property of the
Library

35.
App

JOYFULL NEWES OF THE KINGS

Most certaine Resolution and purpose to come to LONDON with His Army,

That He may at a neere distance send some Propositions to the Parliament to comply with them, and settle a much desired peace in this Kingdome.

Which is to be embraced by all well-affected persons, hoping that His Royall approach will prove very happy and prosperous to this City.

LONDON,
Printed for Th. Hoverton. *October* 12. 1642.

JOYFULL NEWES
OF THE
KING'S

Most certaine Relation and purpose to
come to LONDON with His Army,

That He may ere a neere distance send some Propositions to the Parliament, to comply with them, and settle a much desired peace in this Kingdome.

HOUSE

That he is to be conducted by all well-affected persons, during his stay: And all opposers will be severely punished and proceeded against.

LONDON,
Printed for Th. Hovenden. October 13. 1642.

JOYFULL NEWES,

OF

The KINGS moſt certain Reſolution and purpoſe to come toward LONDON with His Army, that he may at a neere diſtance ſend ſome Propoſitions to the Parliament, to comply with them, and ſettle a much deſired peace in this Kingdome.

Which is to be embraced by all well-affected perſons, hoping that His Royall approach will prove very happy and proſperous to the City.

ENGLAND hath long mourned in the ſhade of ſorrow and diſcontent, the reſplendent beams of Royall influence proceeding from the Kings Majeſty, having ſhined moſt brightly in the Northerne,

and now in the Westerne parts of this Kingdome, but hath been totally restrained from appearing in the Southerne Horizon, so that the City hath been darkened and obscured with much discontent during the Kings absence. But now the Kings Majesty having so long withdrawne himselfe, being led about to divers places of this Kingdome by the advice and instigation of the malignant Party, and being now with his Army resident at Worcester, by what meanes it is not known, unlesse some divine power hath wrought a transmutation and alteration in his thoughts, to give him a full resolution & determination to advance with his Forces Southward: for upon Sunday in the morning my Lord Generall had notice that many of his Majesties army were coming to Bridgnorth, intending to goe forward to Coventry or Warwick: whereupon my Lord Generall immediatly dispatcht an expresse Message to Warwicke, Coventry

penry and Northampton, advising them to prepare for their defence, and advance with some considerable powers against the enemy, himselfe promising all the help he could spare. So that my Lord had certaine intelligence of the Kings purpose to carry his forces and all his Army into the Southerne parts, and to advance forward from one Towne to another in a warlike manner untill he had brought all his Army neere unto the city of London, that so at so neare a distance from the Parliament, hee might propound some articles of accommodation and agreement unto both Houses, and to comply with them, to the setling of a firme peace throughout the whole land upon such articles of reconcilement as should be drawne up by his Majesty, and sent out of the Campe unto the high and honourable Court of Parliament: or if matters should not succeed according to his desires, and that these endeavors should not succeed,

and

and that the great differences which gave the first being and originall to discontents, feares and jealousies betweene His Majesty and the honourable and high Court of Parliament cannot bee composed in a most happy pacification and peaceable accommodation, to the prosperity and generall content of the whole Kingdome, His Majesty doth conceive that the approach of his Army neere to the City of London, and his owne Royall Person being so neere to the Parliament, will bee a meanes to quench the flames of civill discord, and to give a happy conclusion unto all matters in a desired peace: but if the Dove sent forth with the Olive branch in her mouth, shall not be received into the city, and that the consideration of the great plenty, peace and happinesse that shall ensue, cannot perswade a generall reconcilement, and make this populous city open the gates of their hearts to receive the offer of peace, whose accesse

and coming should be welcome to all understanding people, to all true subjects and well-affected persons, as no doubt but it is generally desired: but if this city should be so unmercifull unto themselves, as to resist the Kings peaceable intents and purpose, concurring with his Parliament, His Majesty might be induced to inforce his desires, (if his Majesty would be so cruell to his own subjects) which misery heaven avert from this flourishing city, that it may never know the miserable effects of warre, but that the Kings purpose of advancing hither may prove happy and prosperous to this famous city.

There are 340. souldiers come out of Herefordshire to his Excellency for the service of the King and Parliament, and that the city of Hereford had sent to his Excellency, signifying their good affection to the Parliament, and their desire to have that city secured against the Cavaliers, which they much feared would come

home, there being a malignant party in the city, those that were well-affected durst not shew their forwardnesse so much as they would, whereupon his Excellency sent one thousand foot, and foure troupes of horse to disarme the malignants, and to settle that City in a good posture of defence; and likewise ordered that a sufficient garrison should be left there for the safety and peace of those parts.

FINIS.

REM

the pr

K

Being an
ſtrength,
at the

With many
1. The two
2. The Ear
3. A Liſt
Lord D
my, whic
4. His Ma
5. The offe
the other
and other
6. The rebe

London, I

k. 8. 2. 36

A REMONSTRANCE OF the present estate of the KINGS ARMIE.

Being an exact discovery of his Maiesties strength, with the number of his forces, taken at the generall Muster on *Merrill*-Heath the 6th. day of *October*.

With many remarkable Passages contained therein.

1. *The two Princes Troopes.*
2. *The Earles in their order.*
3. *A List of the whole number presented to his Maiesty by the Lord* Digby, *Commissary Generall for his Maiesties Army, which is* 1950. *Horse, and* 6500. *Foot.*
4. *His Maiesties honouring Prince* Robert.
5. *The effect of two Letters, the one from Marquesse* Hartford, *the other from the Lord* Mohone, *touching* Plimmouth, *and other Ports thereabouts.*
6. *The releasement of Captaine* Wingate, *upon* 500*l. ransome.*

London, Printed by *Tho:* *Fawcet* *Octob.*12.1642.

REMONSTRANCE

the present state of the

KING'S

ARMIE.

Being an exact discovery of his Majesties

Strength, with the number of his Forces, taken

at the general Muster on Kingston-Down the

[illegible] day of [illegible]

With many remarkable Passages contained therein.

1. The Prince's Troops.

2. The Earl of Derby's.

3. [illegible]

4. The Duke of [illegible]

5. His Majesties [illegible]

6. [illegible]

[illegible]

London, Printed by [illegible]

A REMONSTRANCE OF

The Estate of his Majesties Army at this present, being taken at the generall Muster on Merxell Heath, Oct. 6.

SIR, I have, (in lieu of your last Newes), sent you what happened in these parts concerning his Majesties Army.

Upon Tuesday last beeing the 4th. of *Octob.* his Majesty came to *Shrewsbury* with a Guard of 500. Horse, and according to his summons, dated the 28. of *Septem.* Prince *Robert* and the rest of the Nobles, met his Majesty with their Forces, beeing a great com-

company of brave gallants, his Majesty having had a view thereof, commanded them to depart to their Quarters for that day, and gave command to Prince *Robert*, and the rest of the Nobles, that he expected their attendance the Thursday following, with all their Force of Horse and Foot, for a generall muster, which was consented unto, and so they departed for that day.

Vpon Thursday following between 8. and 9. of the Clocke, Prince *Robert* and Prince *Maurice*, with their Troops of Horse containing about 500. were the first that came into the field, and Prince *Robert* himselfe put the Horse in Battalia, and exercised them at least an houre, before any came after him, his Officers standing by all that time.

Then the Earle of *Newcastle* was bravely mounted, and brought with him 300. Horse and 1500. Foot.

The Earle of *Lindsey* with two hundred Horse, and one Thousand foot. The Earle of *Darby*, whose Companies attended his Majesty into the field, came almost with

700.

700. Horſe, and 4000. foot; the Earle of *Cumberland* came onely with 250. Horſe, a great number of Horſe and foot he hath here, which lyeth neere *Barwick* upon the borders of *Scotland* but by reaſon the Heath beeing his Majeſties place of Rendevous, & ſo farre diſtant from the ſaid Earles forces, they were excuſed, the certainty of the Earls forces we know not, but the report is he hath two or 3. or 5000. foot beſides 800. Horſe, but what number ſoever he hath, one halfe whereof are in ſeverall Goals in *Yorkſhire*, for refuſing to carry their Armes and divers of which were violently reſcued and taken out of ſeverall Goales up and downe the Country, and brought into *Hull* by Sr. *John Hotham*, my Lord Marqueſſe *Hartford* is expected hourely from South-*Wales*, who by report commeth with great forces of *Welſh* and *Cornish*, there was two Letters on this day preſented to his Majeſty, the one from Marqueſſe *Hartford*, the other from the Lord *Mohone* in *Cornewall*, hereupon there was a great diſturbance, ſo that they were full two houres before they could ranke them in order.

Which when they had accomplished, the Commiſſaries of each Regiment, muſtered the Souldiers, and gave a liſt of the names of each regiment to the Lord *Digby*, Commiſſary Generall of his Majeſties Army who preſented the number of Horſe and Foot then in the Field to his Majeſty, beering about the number of 1950. Horſe and 6300. Foot. This is his Majeſties compleat number he hath upon all occaſions about him, beſides the Earle of *Cumberlands* Forces neer *Barwick*, there is at *Whitchurch* in *Shropſhire* divers Engines preparing by his Majeſties Engineere, but they have had little or no good ſucceſſe as yet, for ſome perſons have ſpoyled at night, what he hath done in the day, divers of which have been impriſoned and ſeverely puniſhed.

Prince *Robert* hath had many Titles of Honour conferred upon him in the Field, and one Mr *Moore* (or *Morrice*) was made Knight *Banneret* in the Field, and others at that preſent by his Majeſty were Knighted, I cannot write you certainely of the Gentlemens names till the next Poſt, but for certaine

taine Prince *Robert* is made Generall of all his Army in the North, at which there is no little grumbling and murmuring thereat, and it is supposed, that the Earle of *Cumberland* and the Earle of *Lindsey* will leave their command, if by the way of Petitioning to the Parliament, they might be received.

I cannot give credit to the two Lords Letters, but somewhat I have heard from one of the Earle of *Darbies* Gentlemen, that the Lord *Marquesse* intendeth to land 2000. Horse and Foot at *Appledore* in *Devon*, where a Knight whose name I cannot well remember, but *Greenvill* a *Cornish* Knight, hath a great company of Horse and Foot, in expectation of the Marquesses Forces, to march to *Plimmouth* and enter the two Forts *Plimmouth* and *Drakesford*, or at *Mountwise*, *Mountedgrombe*, or at *Launceston*-Castle in *Cornwall*, and for my Lord of *Mohone* his Letter, I cannot understand any thing therein contained, till the next returne, and then I will write it at large, we are greatly burthened with Souldiers, & shall be wee feare

it

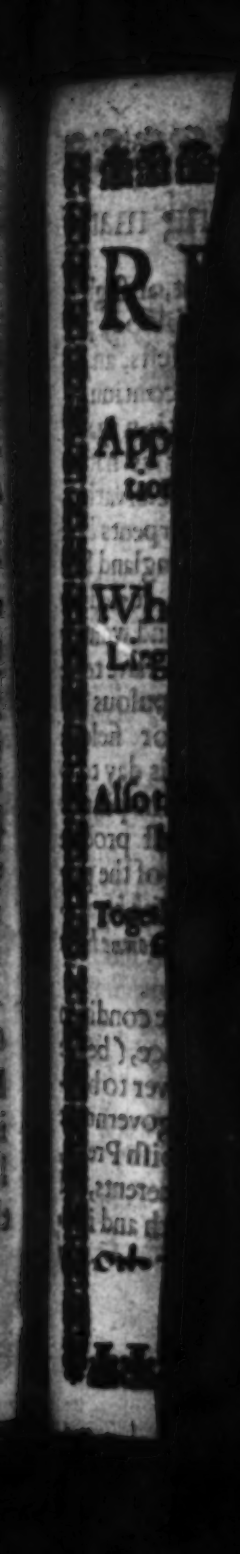
it, this whole Winter, about 4. of the clock his Majesty went out of the Field, and the rest in order. Prince *Robert* brought up the Reare, and went with his Majesty to *Whitchurch*, my Lord of *Essex* is not full 15. Miles from his Majesty, and his Majesty hath halfe waies between his, and the Earle of *Essex* his Army, a continuall guard of two Hundred Horse and Foot, which lyeth centinell to prevent a suddaine onset.

Captaine *Wingate* is in consideration of 500. pounds ransomed, and on Friday last the 7th. of this Moneth, was discharged out of *Shrewsbury* Goale, and thus for the present, I rest.

Your loving Cozen,

Whitchurch, the 7th of *October*, 1642.

FINIS.



An Exact

RELATION

Of the

Apprehension, Examination, Execution and Confession, of *Thomas Bullaker*, a Priest, of the Order of *S. Austin*,

Who for seducing his Majesties Liege people, was drawne, hanged, and Quartered at Tyburne, on *Wednesday* the 12. of *October*, 1642.

Also the Examination of Mrs. *Margaret Powel*, his Land-lady, whose Tryall is referr'd till the next Session.

Together with the Names and Facts of the other prisoners, Condemned at the same time, who were reprieved, and who executed.



London Printed for *John Wright*, 1642.

More worke for the Hang-man

IS now not time to connive at, or slightly passe over the wicked and bloody practices of Iesuits, *Popish Priests*, and other of that hellish faction, continually contriving, and designing agitation against the Church and State of England. For as nature teacheth every thing to affect, its owne preservation, so reason will prompt us, to cut off the serpents head that begins to fly in our faces; Poore England hath long nursed and given way to these foule vipers, who having gotten a little strength and wanting only opportunity did verily intend to have torne out her Bowels, and to make this Populous and flowrishing Kingdome an *Aceldama* or field of blood, whereof wofull *Ireland*, is at this day to sad an example; little considering, that the pits prepared by them for others will at last procure their owne destruction according to that of the Psalmist, *The wicked is snared in the worke of his owne hands*, Psal. 6. 16.

If we doe but reflect upon the miserable condition of this Kingdome, some few yeeres since, (before the beginning of this most blessed, and ever to be renowned Parliament) what the rayses of government lay altogether upon the shoulders of Popish Priests, Papists, and other their Malignant Adherents, and consider with what uncontroulable mirth and in-

London Printed for John Wright. 1642.

as they ran on in their designes, to over cloud this Nation with the blacke foggy mists of Error, and superstition, what hauock and persecution they had made of Gods faithfull ministers; and how great a part of the Land was corrupted by their abhominable practises, it cannot be deny'd, but that the Reformation of these grosse abuses, was a mercy never to be forgotten and a strong encouragement to all that feare God, to expect with patience the perfection of this good worke. And though it tarry to waite for it because it will surely come, it will not long be delayed. *Hab.* 2. 3.

Difference in Religon, ever was and will be the ground of al misery, and indeed what hope can there be of peace where a Kingdome is not at one in Religion, lamentable experience makes it now sensible of this truth; It was a wise mans speech, what family saith he; was there ever, where a difference in Religion made not a breach, set it in *Iacob* and *Israell*, *Iacob* and *Laban*, *Moses* and his wife *Zipporah*, and if so, what Concord can be expected in a whole Kingdom, where there is much more disagreement; who were neerer kin then *Israell* and *Iudah*, but as soone as Aaar was erected against Altar they were as soone devided in an irreconcilable warr. Simpathy in Religion is the surest meanes conducing to prosperity, *Ecce quam bonum*, saith the Prophet, *Behold how good and how pleasant a thing it is for Brethren to dwell together in Unity.* Psal. 133. 1.

It is a principal in Nature take away the cause and the effect will soone cease; what hath beene the cause of our long & many miseries is already sufficiently

ently discovered, to every ordinary capacity, what? but the wicked, and destructive counsells of a Popish party about his Majesty, what, but the soule perverting doctrines of a company of Priests and Iesuits (lurking in this City) silly whispered into the eares of silly and ignorant people, if so, God grant that all sorts of men, both King, and Parliament, together with all true Protestants, may renounce and extirpate these Catterpillars; and be no longer seduced by their cunning pretences, but throughly purge the floore of this our Church, that there be no such Canaanites left in the Land to be thornes and pricks in the eyes of our Posterity here after.

And of this (God be blessed) we have already seen some good beginnings and daily expect more; *London* Bridge can afford room enough for the heads of many such Traytors, and when that's fild, wee know where to make more; So let the Enemies of God, the King & the Church perish, their Cities of refuge are now taken away; Time was when a little man of great authority could have done them some good, but now they have no Sanctuaries to flee to: 'Tis a great storme; yet in vaine doe they expect shelter; for if they offer to seeke it, they are hal'd to the Gallowes, and young *Gregories* fingers still itch to be dividing in this age of divisions.

Witnesse the Subject of this my Discourse, (a Bird of the old brood) Father *Bullaker* by name.

Who was as himselfe confessed at the time of his apprehension, a Popish Priest, of the Order of Saint *Austin*: And before he remov'd his lodging to Newgate, lay at a Gentlewomans house in Saint *Peters* Lane

Lane neere Cow-Croſſe, where ſome obſerving his carriage, and knowing ſome that he had ſeduced and others that hee ſought to ſeduce, gave information thereof to the Officers of that Pariſh, who preſently entred the houſe, diſcovered this ſubtle Fox, attacht his perſon, and committed both him and his Landlady (according to their deſerts) to New-gate.

Where remaining till the laſt Seſſions, hee was firſt carryed down to be examined, and being asked of what quallity he was, anſwered, That he was a Prieſt, that he had received Orders from *Rome*, and that he would prove it lawfull out of the Scripture: and thereupon he turn'd to the 109 *Pſal.* ver. 4. The words are theſe: *Thou art a Prieſt for ever, after the order of Melchiſedecke.* Which place he ſaid, he would maintaine was ſufficient to prove the authority of their Prieſt-hood, being further told, he was accuſed of Treaſon, for ſtriving to ſeduce his Majeſties Liege-people, contrary to the Statute, provided in that behalfe, he anſwered, that if it were Treaſon for a man to uſe his conſcience, or to receive holy Orders of Prieſthood from beyond the Sea, and being proved to him by ſome text of Scripture, then he would confeſſe himſelfe guilty of Treaſon, otherwiſe he would not. Then being demanded whether he would plead to his Inditement or no, he anſwered he would not plead as guilty of Treaſon, but ſaid as before, he was a Prieſt, and had received Orders at *Rome*, and came over with the ſame intent that he went, which was to convert his Country, and this he would anſwer. The Bench perceiving him ſo peremptory in his words, & ſo obſtinate in his opinion, that he would not yeeld

to be tryed according to the Law yet had confeſſed enough to prove him guilty of the Inditement proceeded to give judgement upon him, which was that he ſhould preſently be carried backe to the place from whence he came, and from thence on Wedneſday following be drawne on a ſledge to Tyburne, and their to hang till his body were halfe dead, then to be cut downe, his members and intrailes to bee burnt, and his body quartered, and they to be left to the Cities diſpoſeall. Which ſentence was no ſooner paſt upon him, but immediately he fell on his knees, and with much alacrity ſaid, *Te Deum Laudamus, te Dominum Confitemur*, Which in Engliſh is, *We praiſe thee O God, we acknowledge thee to be the Lord*. Then riſing up told them, that this was it which he had expected and deſired above a 12 moneth, ſo being diſmiſſed the Court, and conveied backe to priſon. Miſtreſſe *Powell* his Landlady, was next brought to the Bar, who upon Examination was found in nothing to vary from the erronious opinion of this her holy Father, whether by him converted (being formerly accounted ſo light, that her honeſtly would hardly be taken with allowance) or ſeduced it makes no great matter. But ſhe alſo ſeemed very willing to dye, confeſſing that her Fact was not ignorantly committed, for ſhe knew well enough what manner was, and what power the Law had to away her life. If it were knowne to any that ſhe harboured him in her houſe, yet nevertheleſſe ſhe ſaid ſhe could not but doe it out of conſcience ſake, and this was all ſhe had to ſay for her ſelfe, whereupon ſhe likewiſe ſhould have had ſentence to dye, but in regard the evidence a-

gainst could not be found it was refer'd till the next Sessions.

On Wednesday morning *October* 12 1642. about 8 of the clocke the aforesaid *Thomas Bullaker* Priest was drawne upon a sledge from Newgate to the Gallous expressing much cheerefulnesse all the way as he went, and when he came to the place of execution; after he had prayers by himselfe in Latin, invocating of Saints, calling upon the *Virgin Mary*, crossing himselfe upon the brest and forehead, he was at last stopt by the Hang-man who stopt his vaine babling and his breath together, performing the rest of his office with much dexterity; and is ready for the next as ever he was to sing like one of *Rhenes* Swan: who has no sooner drowned one, but he looks for another.

The names and Facts of the Prisoners condemned this last Sessions: who were reprieved, and who executed, on Wednesday *Oct.* 12 1642.

Thomas Bullaker *a Priest, drawne, hang'd, and quartered.*

Margaret Powell *his Land-lady, her tryall is reserred to the next Sessions.*

Mary Osland *Felony, reprieved by her belly.*

Mary Heard *for Felony.*

Arthur Ritchison *for* 20 li. *and three Gold Rings.*

Frances Pen *for the same reprieu'd by her belly.*

Thomas Grant *Alis* Shermon, *for the Temple Plate.*

Luke Warin *Felony for* 50 li. *out of a trunk.*

William Johnson *Robery on the high way.*

Richard Powell *for killing a Drummers Father.*

Elizabeth Hughs *Felony for* 60 li.

Sara Kerby *Robbing her master and others, reprieu'd by her belly.*

William Friend *for Horse Stealing.*

John Pearsall *for Burglary.*

Katherine Grengo *for Felony.*

Sara Fawcet *for Felony.*

FINIS.

CO

The late
my a

Particu
there
of

Writt

Lo



38

A CONTINVATION OF

K Charles I. 6pp.

The late proceedings of His Majesties Army at *Shrewsbury*, *Bridge-North*, and *MANCHESTER*:

WITH A

Particular relation of the Actions and strength thereof, and likewise of the Preparations of His Majesties removall towards London, York, *or elsewere.*

Written by a good hand from the Army.

London Printed for *M. Batt*, *October* 12. 1642.

A

CONTINUATION

OF

The late proceedings of His Majesties Ar-
my at Shrewsbury, Bridge-North, and
MANCHESTER:

WITH A

Particular relation of the Action and Encoun-
ters, and likewise of the Preparations
of His Majesties several Forces Northward
London, York, Newcastle.

Written by a good hand from the Army.

London Printed for N. Butter, 1642.

Shrewsbury, Octob. 8. 1642.

Sir,

I Received yours of the fourth of *October*, and thank you for your relation of the proceedings of the Parliament, which are welcome to all Loyall and true-hearted Subjects; There is daily here spred amongst us many lying and scandalous reports against that high and Honourable Court, to make it odious; but certainly that cause must needs be bad, which makes use of lyes to support it. I shall give you the best Intelligence I can of the strength of his Majesties Army: It is related amongst us, that it doth increase daily, and as I am an eye-witnesse my self, and have it likewise from others; It doth consist of six thousand Foote, three thousand Horse, and fifteene hundred Dragooneers, which, if supplies come not speedily in, must in few dayes mutiny: The Countrey hath been in particular dealt with for lending monies, and Commissioners appointed for receiving thereof, and every man of any

ability hath payed ſomewhat, who ſo refuſed, or gave not ſo much as was expected, was threatened to be plundered: This money is all ſpent, and what elſe his Majeſties Plate could coyne, which I can aſſure you was not much: Now the Gentry and Uſurers are again ſent to, to know what they will lend the King upon ſecurity, and great ſummes are demanded, but whether upon the former conditions we know not; They have a ſaying amongſt the Souldiers, that all rich men are Round-heads, and therefore they may bee bold with them, and certainly they make good their words, by their practiſe, for they have plundered many Gentlemens houſes in theſe parts, and thoſe too which were not ſo well affected to the Parliament, whereby men ſee now what is to be expected from them: We feare when his Majeſty goes, which they ſay he will upon Munday or Tueſday next, we ſhall be ill dealt with by the common Souldiers, both in Town and Country, We have had Warrants to ſend in Horſes and Carts for his removall, which are come towards *Salop*, but whither his Majeſty intends is not certainly knowne, it is given out he intends for *London*. I pray God bleſſe him, and ſend him well thither in peace, but it is conceived by others, that he will march towards *Yorke*, and take *Manchester* in the way, where the new Earle of *Darby* hath had but ill ſucceſſe, he hath loſt above two

hundred men. Laſt Tueſday he was faine to leave it, and it is given out for the reparation of his Honour, that his Majeſty ſent twice for him. Had there not been ſome faint-heartedneſſe in ſome of the prime Gentry in *Cheſhire*, who would ſtand as Neutrals, there had been as great an oppoſition there, as in any other County, and thoſe Gentlemen have found but little favour, for they ſtand committed at Court, and their Houſes have been plundered, the County is diſarmed, and likewiſe at *Wrexam* his Majeſty ſent for the Inhabitants of *Denbighſhire*, and *Flintſhire*, and hath diſarmed them: Moſt of our Gentry hereabouts are made Captaines, and reſolve to goe with the Army, ſome that you know very well, that came to *Salop* this laſt night for that purpoſe, and in hope of plunder, for his Majeſty we heare is in great want of money, and he is fallen into a barren part of the Kingdome for that, or any other proviſion fit for an Army, ſo that if the Mint at *Salop* do want ſupply, we feare it will goe hard with us, a Garriſon of 2000. are ſent to *Bridge-North* to relieve and keep that from the Earle of *Eſſex* his Forces, the like, or more, with ſome pieces of Ordnance are to be left at *Salop* for the ſame purpoſe: there are all ſorts of Nations (I thinke) about the Court, and I admire the Papiſts doe ſo reſort thither, ſince his Majeſties Proclamation to the contrary: many of his Majeſties

Officers and meniall ſervants pray for peace, and it is verily beleeved his Majeſty is graciouſly inclined to it, but the Cavaliers will not endure to heare of it, but rather will adventure upon moſt deſperate things. I conceive it great pitty his Majeſty ſhould be brought into any ſtreights; God reward them that have been the occaſion of it; but this I am ſure of, he is much abuſed by his plundering Cavaliers, who daily plunder and undoe men, and ſay they have Commiſſion for it: They have plundered Maſter *Nichols* Houſe, who is Sheriffe of *Montgomery*, and burned his writings, ſpoiled his houſe, ſold his furnace, and the Iron of his Carts, it is much doubted theſe paſſages, and other the like, will withdraw the affections of his Majeſties Subjects from him, this is the ſubſtance of all: Prince *Robert* and the Duke are yet in *Salop*, they lie at Maſter *Jones* houſe the Lawyer, it is reported here the Terme is adjourned, I pray let us heare if it be ſo. They tell us likewiſe that the Parliament Forces have had a great overthrow at *Hereford*, and that they are weake and dare not fight, but are returned backe towards *London*, and that one halfe thereof are againſt them utterly. I beleeve his Majeſties Army, Horſe and Foote, is above ten thouſand, but its feared the Voluntiers, not one of ten can give fire, many young boyes come in daily, to what number they may increaſe we know not; the

Horſe

Horſe of our County are gone to *Bridge-North* in his Majeſties ſervice, the Armes of ſeverall Welch Counties are brought to *Salop*: Your laſt Letter came ſafe; I deſire to heare from you, which way my Lord of *Eſſex* intends. I ſuppoſe you heare more at *London*. My ſervice,

I reſt,

Yours..

Octob. 8. 1642.

BRITISH MUSEUM

Vnparallel'd 39

REASONS

for

abolliſhing Epiſcopacy.

1. *It will aſſure his Majeſties authority Royall.*

2. *Increaſe his Revenue.*

3. *Settle a good union in his Majeſties owne Kingdomes, and between them and other reformed Churches.*

4. *Cauſe a good underſtanding betweene his Majeſty and his people.*

By *N. F.* Eſquire.



Octo: 1

Printed at London for *S. S.* dwelling in Budge-row, at the ſigne of the blacke Bull. 1642.

BRITISH MUSEUM

Printed at London for S. S. dwelling in Budge-row, at the Signe of the Black Bull. 1641.

Vnparallel'd Reasons for abolishing of Episcopacy.

1. *It will assure his Majesties Royall Authority,*

THe Bishops have, and doe claime their power as of divine right, intitling themselves to their severall dignities by the permission or Grace of God; and their authority accordingly: delegating it to others to execute under them in their owne rights, in their names and under their Seales, terming the Clergy under them their subjects, and exacting an Oath of obedience from them.

It is very prejudiciall to soveraigne power that such a claime should be set up or upheld, because it not onely introduceth a right superior to all Civill power, so that it neither may be limited, nor can be controled by it, but also inforceth by consequence the acknowledgement of Forraigne power, for the limits of Civill Jurisdiction, being not of force to set bounds unto Divine Right; a Bishop shall by divine right have authority within the Dominions of a prince to whom he is no subject, in case his Dioceſſe shall extend into the territories of severall sufferages, which it may doe as well as the pretended Jurisdiction of the Bishop of Rome doth.

2. It may be very dangerous to Soveraigne power, and the whol Civill State, that the Clergy should in body it selfe within it selfe by which meanes it may be drawne into a faction against it, for being

being united into a body it is made able to be a ſtrong faction, and being ſo is liable by practice to be drawne againſt the State, The more united this Body is, and the greater dependance it hath by ſubordinate Officers, upon ſome one or few heads, the more dangerous it is; becauſe more expoſed to parties, and more capable to act or to be acted, and to put any thing into execution, ſpeedily, ſecretly and unanimouſly.

By meanes of this Corporation of the Clergy with their dependance upon a few Biſhops, and of them upon one Arch-Biſhop, the Pope ruling the whole body of the Clergy within this Kingdome at his pleaſure, raiſed conſtantly a potent Faction againſt the Kings of this Realme.

Since the Reformation though Biſhops have bin knocked off from the Pope, yet were they never joynted into the King and his Authority, to derive and exerciſe power under him, but remaine in all things as before, and ſo are ready upon any occaſion to be coupled againe to their old head, or to any other which they ſhall make amongſt themſelves when time ſhall ſerve, & the time will ſerve for ſuch a purpoſe, when by his Majeſties power they ſhall have totally ſuppreſſed the party oppoſite unto them, whereof they ſtand in feare, for they will then reduce the Clergy unto an abſolute blind obedience unto them againe, and by them the people, and by both the Prince as formerly they have done.

3. Such a Faction cannot be ſafe for the King, for if they be uſed againſt him, they are as dangerous as they are potent, and if they be uſed by him it is worſe, by reaſon it will continually keep up great jealouſies and miſ-underſtandings betweene him and his people.

Beſides, to make the prince which ſhould be the head of the whole, to be the head of a Faction is a demunition tending to deſtruction, the next ſtep below it tending to make him head of nothing, in caſe the party whereon he doth rely, either faile him, or betray him, and that Faction that one while may ſeeme to ſerve him turne, another while upon the turne of times, and change

of

of circumſtances may be uſed as powerfully againſt him.

4. The two oppoſite parties the Biſhops and thoſe that are againſt them, are now ſo exaſperated and pointed one againſt the the other, that either the one or the other muſt fall and bee ſuppreſſed, if the Biſhops ſupported by his Majeſty ſhall prevaile, and ſuppreſſe totally the other party, his Majeſtie will be wholy in their hands again as his Predeceſſors have been, for they will be able to rule abſolutely the Clergy, and the people, and then it was not their uſe to be ruled by their Prince, if the other ſide prevaile againſt the Biſhops (as poſſibly they may have to deal with a party long ſince rejected by other reformed Churches, and lately ſo blaſted in both the Kingdomes of England and Scotland) then will his Majeſty run the hazard that they do, which ſupport a tottering wall.

5. It wil encreaſe his Majeſties revenues. The temporalities of the Biſhops being in this bill granted to the King, there will be an augmentation of his revenues, by the conſtant rent of them, and beſides by fines upon leaſes and otherwiſe there will bee opportunities and meanes for his Majeſty to gratifie his ſervants, that will be now diſappointed of monopolies and projects. And that his Majeſty may take theſe lands thus given without ſcruple, is clear by theſe conſiderations following. As times termed that the Clergy in the conſtitution they now are in under Biſhops, have been a potent faction againſt the liberties of the Subject, and the purity and power of Religion, the aboliſhing of Epiſcopacy muſt needes give them a great ground of aſſurance in thoſe reſpects.

As to civill rights and liberties, becauſe men of all rankes have ſuffered in their perſon and eſtates by the power of this faction. Thoſe of the better ſort have felt their ſharp teeth, and their ill wil to the Subjects liberties in the houſe of Peers, Star-chamber, Counſell Table and the high Commiſſion. Thoſe of inferiour ranks have felt the ſting of their tayls in their Eccleſiaſticall courts, wherein by their under Officers, they have pilled and polled the

poor people at their pleasure, and laid upon them a burden heavier then ever ship money was unto them.

Neither can they beleeve that these have bin the personall faults only of some few men, seeing it hath been so generall to the whole tribe, and so constant at all times, not this time excepted that they have lien under such a cloud, and yet have been as ready to do or suffer any thing, which might be to the prejudice of the Subject as heretofore.

Lastly, they finde that their aims, interests, and dependancies are such, as that they will alwaies do the like, and that both the learn and exercise of their government, being altogether diverse from, and disproportionable unto that of the civill state, they are obliged thereby to run counter to it.

As to Religion because the jealousies of an alteration intended therein arising from the introduction of divers popish innovations and ceremonies, and the suppressing of preaching, it is evident that the Bishops and their adherents, have beene the author therof. And consequently,

1. There can be no means so potent to assure mens mindes that there is no intention of returning to popery, as the abolishing of Episcopacy, whereby we shall receive further from popery, than ever we did since the reformation, as by the late innovations we were drawn neerer to it, then ever we were since the reformation. Those that think this to be a running too farre to the other extream, should also consider, admitting it were so, yet being a thing indifferent, and fearfull to be done, whether it be not necessary, at least expedient to do it at this time, for the satisfaction of mens mindes, that have bin possessed with so great and so just a jealousie in respect of the latter declining so far to the other extream.

2. Multitudes cannot thinke themselves secure from popery and popish innovations so long as Episcopacy continueth, because conceive, that as Episcopacy and Popery were hatched and grew up to their height together, so that they are bottomed upon the same

ſame grounds and principles, there being the ſame reaſon for an Archbiſhop, and ſo for a Patriarch, and a pope, to keepe Biſhops from Schiſmes and factions as that there ſhould be a Biſhop over other Presbiters, to keepe them from ſchiſmes, and generally throughout, that the ſame reaſons which ſerve to maintaine the one, ſerve proportionably to maintain the other, and that the ſame effects that follow upon the one, will alſo proportionably follow upon the other, and withall they obſerve that there hath not been the like ſhew and fear of defection unto popery in any reformed Church, as in this, where Biſhops are retained, and that it hath proceeded alſo from the Biſhops and their adherents.

3. Multitudes cannot think themſelves ſecure from alteration in religion, till they are aſſured of the preaching of Gods Word, whereby mens minds may be inſtructed, and eſtabliſhed in the truth. They cannot be aſſured of the enjoying of preaching ſo long as Biſhops continue, for they have found to be the violent ſuppreſſors thereof.

The Biſhops will alwaies ſuppreſſe diligent preachers which cary away the reputation from them, may in time alſo cary away their reward and ſhare their Biſhoprickes among them; and for the ſame reaſon they will alwais favour dumb priests, that preach as little as themſelves, becauſe they neither eclipſe their honour, nor endanger their profits.

The Biſhops neither can nor will be diligent preachers themſelves, ſo long as beſides their Miniſteriall functions they have a whole Dioceſſe to rule, and cumber themſelves with places of civill Iuriſdiction beſides, and they much accompanied with great temporall dignities and revenues: multitude and diverſity of employments make them unable, and the height of temporall honour, ſtate, and worldly wealth, make them too finely, and too idle to diſcharge their Miniſterial functions as they ought, ſo that they muſt leave their ſweetneſſe and their fatneſſe, if with the bramble they will reign over the trees.

Vpon-

Upon the whole matter the queſtion is, whether the appointing of a certain number of Lay-men, by his Majeſty and his Parliament to exerciſe all Eccleſiaſticall Iuriſdiction under them, and by their authority inſtead of Arch-biſhops and Biſhops, appointing a certaine number of Laymen to exerciſe it under them by their authority, in their names and under their ſeales, and whether 5 or more of their learned Divines appointed by authority of Parliament to ordain Miniſters in ſtead of one man (when his Majeſty gives the title of a Biſhop) appointed to do it by act of Parliament together with 4 or more other Miniſters, be an alteration of that conſequence, as to be put in ballance with the ſafeguard of his Majeſties royall authority, the encreaſe of his revenue, the unity of his Majeſties Kingdomes in and betweene themſelves, and with other reformed Churches, and the ſetling of a good underſtanding betweene the King & his people by ſecuring unto them their Religion and Liberties.

FINIS.

A

By the
to th

With a
prefen

Wherein
this K

Lond

ARTICLES

or DEMANDS made

By the KINGS most Excellent Majestie

to the Gentry and Commonalty of the County of

SALOP.

on *Saturday* the 8. of *October*. 1642.

With an exact Answer to every particular therein presented to His Majesty at *Shrewsbury* the same day, by the high Sheriffe of the said County.

Wherein is exactly manifested, How active the malignant party of this Kingdome are to incense the King against the Parliament, and to engage him in a destructive warre against his Subjects.



London, Printed for HENRY HVTTON, *Octob.* 12. 1642.



ARTICLES OR DEMANDS,

Made by the Kings moſt Excellent Maieſty, to the Gentry and Commonalty of the County of *Salop*, on Saturday, *Oct.* 8.



His Majeſty beeing attended by Mr. *Murry*, *Endimion Porter* and many other Courtiers came into a Champaine Field on the Eaſt ſide of our town where the Gentry and Commonalty of the County were aſſembled, by his Majeſties command, where beeing come, and a generall ſilence throughout the Field, every one being with expectation, longing to heare what they were ſummoned thither for,

After a great and long preparation, *Endimion Porter* with a loud voyce, began to read theſe enſuing Articles, or Demands.

But before he began, he distributed neere two hundred copies, by which meanes I got that which I have sent you.

1. That His Majesty having ingaged himselfe in a warre against the disturbers of the Peace of the Kingdome, who under the name and authority of a Parliament have to the advancement of their own particular ends actually levied a war against him and all other his Loving subjects that differ from their Places, their only aime being to alter the Frame of government both in the Church and State, and to introduce an arbitrary and tyrannicall government into this Kingdome, for the prevention of which His Majesty having by the assistance of his good Protestant subjects, raised an Army to suppresse the said insurrections, Rebellion, in the maintenance of which Army his Majesty hath spent, all that is in his power to command, either by his owne power, or the assistance of his friends, even to his Lands and goods, his Revenue being detained from him, and all meanes of further subsisting denied him, wherefore he is inforced to Appeale to his loving Subjects and to desire their ayd in this so great a designe, it seeming but a reasonable demand that they that share in the benefit should likewise beare some of the burthen, his Majesties desire being to maintaine and defend the true Protestant Religion, the knowne Lawes of the Land, the just Privi-ledges of Parliament, and the lawfull Liberty of the Subject.

Like-

likewise to suppresse Papistry, Sects and Schisme, which have lately crept into the Church, and almost buried the Religion and Peace of the Kingdome in Anarchy and confusion, *Brownists & Heretiks*, and *Anabaptists*, being the onely Protestants, and the true Protestants in their opinion Church-papists, or favourers of the Church of *Rome*, if the maintainers of this cause can want assistance, if these sort of People can prevaile more with you then your King, in the defence of so just a cause, then doubtlesse our just God hath blinded your eyes, and in just vengance suffers you to runne headwinckt to your owne confusion, but his Majesty hopes better things from you, not doubting of your assistance, onely this is to give the meanest of his Subjects satisfaction, (who have all this while been misled) of the justnesse of his proceedings, and to manifest unto you how neer your owne peace and the maintenance of this cause is allied, so that ere cannot fall without the other, these things his Majesty leaves to your consideration till the sitting one, expecting a loyall returne of your Affections, assuring you in the Honour of a King, that the least mite offered for the advancement of this cause, shall not fall to the ground, nor be forgotten, but shall be registred in his Majesties princely and royall thoughts, as the greatest token of loyalty, being expressed in a time of so great necessity and trouble.

This being performed, his Majesty was conducted out of the Field with shouts and acclamations made by his owne followers, and some of the Ignorant country people, who were deluded with the specious pretence of Mr *Porters*, but one thing I observed by his Majesty, (notwithstanding those shouts and prayers which were made by those that followed him) his Majestie seemed mighty discontent, not shewing the least symptome of joy, from whence I inferre, that what was done at that time, he was wonne to, by the perswasion of *Porter* and others about him, and not by any voluntary Act of his owne.

His Majesty having left the field, our chiefe Gentlemen of the Countie, with our Freeholders and other men of esteeme, met together at the *George* where after a generall and free debate, of what we had heard and observed, we with a generall consent drew up this ensuing Answer.

That whereas the Parliament now sitting were called together by His Majesty legally, and that every member of the same was chosen by the generall consent of each Countie of the Kingdome, being men knowen to be Religious, Wise and well Reputed, and whereas their actions from the beginning to this day and (how ever censured by those that seeke their destructions,) have tended to the aduancement of His Majesties Honour the establishment of the true Protestant Religion, with the Lawes of the Kingdome, which before the

begin-

beginning of this Parliament, were almost ruin'd, Bishops having introduced Popery into the Church. The Iudges having corrupted the Lawes, neither can we forget the heavy taxes which we suffered by reason of Projectors and Monopolizers, the maine chiefest of which, are actors and contrivers of this warre, from whom we can expect no good neither to your Majesty, nor our selves.

And whereas your Majesty hath been pleased to stile your Parliament Traytors, and that Army which they have been forced to raise for the defence of your Majesty, and to maintaine the Religion and Lawes of the Kingdome, a Rebellion, wee are forced to declare, that we are bound in conscience to God, in loyalty to your Majesty, and in tender care of our owne peace, to joyne with your Parliament, for the defence of your Majesty, and maintenance of the aforesaid causes, with many others, (namely) to defend our Wives and daughters from rapine, our Houses from Firing, and our Goods from being made a prey to theeves and desperate Cavaleers, which have destin'd all to ruin and destruction.

As touching our assistance, If your Majesty shall please to put your trust in us, and to yeeld your selfe into the hands of such a guard as wee shall rayse, of the cheife Gentlemen and Free holders of our County, we will for your Royall support, willingly expend our Estates, and venture our lives against all apparent Enemies of your Majesties, but for us to weaken our selves

to

ſtrengthen thoſe that would hereafter glory in our overthrow. neither Law nor Reaſon can compell us, neither can we any way conſent to any ſuch matter.

Thus humbly beſeeching your Majeſty, in the name of Almighty God, as you tender the preſervation of the true Religion, as you reſpect your owne ſafety, or the welfare of your Royall ofspring, to abandon thoſe evill Counceilours, and baniſh all Delinquents from your protection, ſo ſhall your Majeſty be ſecure, and not your loyall Subjects will guard you with honour to your Parliament.

This beeing delivered to his Majeſty, every man went to his habitation, ſince which time we have heard nothing, onely many Gentlemen in Authority have been tempted by great promiſes to aſſiſt them, but all to no purpoſe.

FINIS.

Kirkt. To

CON

OF CER

Remarka

liament

1. *A Letter*

his Majesties

parts thither

2. *And of the*

3. *Of the Papi*

4 *That the wa*

tell sudden

5. *Of the high*

6. *That Mr.*

7. *Of Sir Ralp*

Ordnance

8. *Letters conc*

9. *That the P*

Orders con

10. *That 4000*

11. *A letter i*

12. *A letter*

13. *A letter*

14. *Letters*

15. *That his*

16. *That Pr*

17. *The man*

at this S

18. *Of Cap*

19. *Of Lett*

20. *Letters*



Kiddle Tr. 24 A 41 Numb. 14.

CONTINVATION

OF CERTAINE SPECIALL AND Remarkable paſſages from both Houſes of Parliament, and divers other places of the Kingdome, from *Saterday* the 8. of *October*, to the 12.

Containing theſe particulars, viz

1. *A Letter to the Parliament from Shrewsbury, giving a true Relation of his Majeſties Proceedings there, and drawing of his Forces out of other parts thither.*
2. *And of the Lord* Ruthins *being come out of* Scotland *to aid his Majeſtie.*
3. *Of the Papiſts bringing their Plate to the King to be coined to pay ſoldiers.*
4. *That the want of money in the Kings Army will conſtrain them to give battell ſuddenly.*
5. *Of the high Sheriffe of Lincolns being brought to the houſe upon his knees.*
6. *That Mr. Ruſhworth is gone upon ſervice for the Houſe.*
7. *Of Sir Ralph Hoptons fortifying himſelf in Cornwall, and the Number of Ordnance he hath there.*
8. *Letters concerning the M. of Hartfords Proceedings in South-wales.*
9. *That the Parliament are raiſing two Regiments for Lincolnſhire, with the Orders concerning the ſame.*
10. *That 40000 l. was ſent to his Excellency to pay the Army.*
11. *A letter intercepted that came from Secretary Nicholas, read in the houſe.*
12. *A letter read in the houſe concerning the Queens going into France.*
13. *A letter from the E. of Warwick concerning his taking of 5. Spaniſh ſhips.*
14. *Letters out of Lancaſhire concerning the Lord Strange.*
15. *That his Excellency hath fortified Worceſter.*
16. *That Prince Robert is gone from Bridgnorth.*
17. *The manner of the Arraignment, Cenſure, and condemnation of a Prieſt at this Seſſions.*
18. *Of Captain Kettlebyes being brought to the Houſe.*
19. *Of Letters out of Cheſhire.*
20. *Letters out of Yorkſhire of the Proceedings of the Earl of Cumberland.*

October 12. Printed for R. Wood, 1642.

BRITISH MUSEUM

A

CONTINUATION OF CERtain ſpeciall and Remarkable Paſſages from both Houſes of *Parliament*, and divers other places of the Kingdome.

From *Saterday* the 8. of *October* to the 13.

From Shrewsburie, October 8.

ON the eighth of Octob. Letters were read in the houſe that came from *Shrewsbury*, informing the houſe, that his Maj. hath drawne a great part of his Forces that were in Cheſhire, and other Counties to *Shrewsburie*, and that the L. *Ruthin* is come out of *Scotland* to his Maj. and it is very probable, that his Maj. will give battle very ſpeedily, becauſe notwithſtanding his Maj. hath a Mynt there, & the Papiſts therabouts do bring in the greateſt part of their Plate to be coyned for to pay Souldiers, yet all they can procure will not maintain the Army one Month, which will be a means to make them fight the ſooner, for otherwiſe the Souldiers will all diſband themſelves for want of pay, His Majeſty hath ſtrongly fortified this town, and hath given order for the pulling down of ſome houſes that ſtand

neer, and upon the Bridge, for the better fortifying thereof, at which many of the Inhabitants of the Town are much discontented.

This day Sir *Edward Heron* High-Sheriffe of *Lincolnshire* was brought upon his knees in the House of Commons, for endeavouring to levie warre in that County against the *Parliament*, and after examination, hee was committed to safe custody, there to remain till a Charge be drawn up against them.

This day Mr. *Rushworth* that hath done much good service for the *Parliament*, and the whole Kingdome by his Travels, was sent into the Country upon speciall service for the House.

Information was given to the house, that Sir *Ralph Hopton* was strongly fortified in Pinisk Castle in *Cornwall*, and that he hath about 200. men, there being also in the said Castle above 50. pieces of Ordnance, but a great part of the County stands well affected & will aid and assist any Forces that are sent from the *Parliament*, against the said Castle. Wherupon it was ordered, that part of those two Regiments that are to go towards *Bristol* and *Minhead* shall go into *Cornwall*, and that more forces shall be raised there for that purpose. It was also informed by Letters that the M. of *Hartford* is in South-Wales, and labours to raise those Countryes against the *Parliament*, boasting of the great strength his Maj. hath, saying that he is above 30000. strong of horse and foot, thereby to draw on those that stand as Neuters.

The House taking into consideration the present condition of *Yorkshire*, and *Lincolnshire*, have ordred that two Regiments of foot should be raised in *Lincolnshire*,

volnſhire, for the ſafety and defence of that County, and are alſo to aid Capt. *Hotham*, and the reſt of the Gentry of Yorkeſhire that ſtand for the Parliament againſt the E. of *Cumberland*, all the Officers of each Regiment being made choiſe of here, and receiving Commiſſion from the Parl. and ſent down to raiſe their men in the County.

Orders were alſo drawn up for *Ordnance*, *Waggons*, and *Ammunition*, and other things neceſſary for the ſaid two Regiments.

This day 40000. l. was ſent from Guild-hall in 3. VVaggons guarded with a Troop of horſe to his Excellency to pay the Army.

On Monday Letters came to the Parl. that was intercepted, which came from Secretary Nicholas, and was directed to Sir *William Boſwell*, ſignifying, that the L. *Fairfax* and the Yorkſhire Gentlemen were ſo aſtoniſhed with the report of the great Overthrow given to the Parliament Forces at *Worſter*, that it frighted them into a Treaty for the Kings advantage. Letters was read in the houſe that came out of *Holland*, declaring that the Queen hath made great preparation, pretending that ſhee would come for *England*, but it is thought ſhe will go into *France*, or ſome other parts.

Letters came from the E. of VVarwick, ſignifying that five ſhips were comming out of Spain, with about 300000 in mony, and were ſayling towards Ireland to aid the Rebels, and were all taken ſome of his ſhips, and that the whole Prize both of money and Ammunition is eſteemed to be worth about 300000 pounds.

Infor-

Information was likewise given to the House, by Letters out of Ireland, that five ships are going from Dublin to lye before Washford, to stop the passage of any that shall attempt to come to assist the Rebels.

This day letters were read in the house that came from Lancashire, shewing that the L. *Strange*, now Earl of Derby, hath raised his Siege from before *Manchester*, and is gone towards his Majesty, a great number of his men being run from him.

It was informed by Letters from his Excellency, that he had made strong Fortifications about *Worcester*, and had placed Garrisons in severall Townes of consequence, as *Bewdly and Kittermaster* which are neere unto *Bridgenorth*.

Information was given to the house, that Sir *Harrie Chalmley* was returned back from *Bewdly* to *Worcester*, and had bin in person very neer *Bridgenorth*, and viewed the Town, and yet the Cavaleers never appeared against him, Prince *Robert* (as it certainly informed) is gone from thence to a little Towne neere unto *Shrewsburie*.

At the Sessions of *Oyer et Terminer*, held at the Sessions house in the Old-Bayly *London*, the 10. of this present *October*, there was brought to his Tryall one *Bulger* a Priest, and being indicted for Treason according to the statute in that case, provided his indictment being read, hee was demanded whether hee pleaded guilty or not guilty, hee answered that hee would not say that he was not guilty, for that were to deny that he was a Priest, whereas hee confessed that he was a Priest of the Order of St. *Augustine*, and he held that to be no fault, neither had hee committed

mitted any other that deserved Death, and therefore he would not pleade guilty, and so stood obstinately, and refused to put himself upon tryall of the Country, and so had Judgment most deservedly pronounced against him according to the Law, and is to suffer on *Wednesday* next, the just reward of his merits.

Tuesday in the morning Cap. *Kettley* was brought to the House, he being taken comming to New Castle to victuall his ship, and after examination he was committed to the Gatehouse, untill the House hath leasure to draw up a charge against him, that he may receive punishment according to his deserts.

This day Letters were read that came from *Cheshire*, informing that the Lord *Cholmly* and the High Sheriffe of that County (by vertue of his Majesties warrant did very lately summon the County to appear before them, and that upon the appearance of the County, Propositions were made unto them for the tendring his Majesty 2000. l. and when they saw the Motion took not with the County, and that all but such as were intrusted in the Commission of Array, and those that were Popishly affected, did utterly refuse to contribute any money at all to his Majesties use for this design against the Parl. the L. *Chomley* read his Maiesties Commission and Warrant unto them, wherby they were authorized to leavie the said sum of 2000. pounds in that County for his Maiesties use, and that they were to return the names of all those that were of ability and refused to pay, or contribute such sums as should bee required at their hands: yet notwithstanding all that the Lord *Chomley* and the Sheriffe could do, they cannot gather in

in

above 150. l. and because the well affected persons are not much terrified with the Threatnings, that their Names shall be returned to his Maj. in a thing that is so contrary to the Lawes of the Land, they think to terrifie them in another manner, and suffer them to be plundered, and all their goods taken away by the Cavaleers, but they are like to gain little by it, for thereby they render themselves so odious to the whole Country, living like ravinous beasts onely upon the spoyl, that the Maior part of the County hath petitioned the *Parliament* for some Commanders to bee sent into those parts, and thereby have declared, that with the assistance of a very small number of forces to be sent thither, with some Ammunition (because the greatest part of their Armes are taken from them, they having none left but what they have hid and kept very privatly) they will undertake to cleanse that County from the Cavaleers.

Letters were read in the house of Commons, that came out of Yorkshire, signifying, that since the E. hath received intelligence that the *Parliament* have disanulled the late Agreement betwixt the L. Fairefaixe and the said Earl, the said Earl of Cumberland hath sent forth VVarrants to summon the Trayned Bands of the County to appear before him, but they utterly refused so to do.

FINIS.



Kill Fr. 9

A 43 Number 14.

CONTINVATION

Of certain Speciall and Remarkable passages from both Houses of PARLIAMENT, and divers other parts of the *Kingdome*, from *Saterday* the 8. of *October* till the 12 of *October*. 1642.

Containing these particulars. viz.

1. *A true relation of Letters from the Earle of Warwicke informing how that there are 3. Ships prepared in Dunkirk and Flanders to be sent to the Rebells in Ireland.*
2. *An Order of Parliament concerning the Earle of Warwicke.*
3. *A relation from Wales of the Lord Herberts raising of forces there against the Parliament.*
4. *Of Letters from Yorkeshire of the proceedings of Captaine Hotham in that County since the Treaty.*
5. *A true relation of the demolishing of Sherburne Castle by the Earle of Bedfords forces.*
6. *A true relation of news from Holland of the Queenes proceedings there, and a relation of news from France.*
7. *Of Letters of Mart granted to certaine Merchants to take all Pirats at Sea as their Lawfull prize.*
8. *A true relation of the proceedings of the Lord of Faulkland in Ireland.*
9. *Certaine relations of the proceedings of the Pope and Conclave in their late Inquisition concerning this Kingdome.*
10. *Of Letters to the Parliament from Worcester, and the Lord Generalls proceedings there*
11. *A true relation of the State of the Kings Army, and of his intentions to march up to London.*
12. *A true relation of the Marquesse of Hartfords proceedings in Wales with his Cavalliers.*
13. *A true relation of more Letters to the Parliament from the Lord Generall and of his securing Bridge-North and Bewdly Bridge.*
14. *A true relation of the Kings summoning the County of Chester to assist him with men and monies, and their resolution to the Kings demands.*
15. *A true relation of the great defeate given to the Earle of Derby at Manchester, and an Order of Parliament for a publique thanksgiving.*
16. *A true relation of Captaine Kettlebys bringing up to the Parliament and Commitment to the Tower.*

Printed for Francis Leach and Francis Coles. 164

Kill Fr. 9

CONTINVATION

Of certain Speciall and Remarkable passages from both Houses of PARLIAMENT, and divers other parts of the *Kingdome*, from *Saterday* the 8. of *October* till the 12 of *October*. 1642.

Containing these particulars. viz.

1. *A true relation of Letters from the Earle of Warwicke informing how that there are 3. Ships prepared in Dunkirk and Flanders to be sent to the Rebells in Ireland.*
2. *An Order of Parliament concerning the Earle of Warwicke.*
3. *A relation from Wales of the Lord Herberts raising of forces there against the Parliament.*
4. *Of Letters from Yorkeshire of the proceedings of Captaine Hotham in that County since the Treaty.*
5. *A true relation of the demolishing of Sherburne Castle by the Earle of Bedfords forces.*
6. *A true relation of news from Holland of the Queenes proceedings there, and a relation of news from France.*
7. *Of Letters of Mart granted to certaine Merchants to take all Pirats at Sea as their Lawfull prize.*
8. *A true relation of the proceedings of the Lord of Faulkland in Ireland.*
9. *Certaine relations of the proceedings of the Pope and Conclave in their late Inquisition concerning this Kingdome.*
10. *Of Letters to the Parliament from Worcester, and the Lord Generalls proceedings there*
11. *A true relation of the State of the Kings Army, and of his intentions to march up to London.*
12. *A true relation of the Marquesse of Hartfords proceedings in Wales with his Cavalliers.*
13. *A true relation of more Letters to the Parliament from the Lord Generall and of his securing Bridge-North and Bewdly Bridge.*
14. *A true relation of the Kings summoning the County of Chester to assist him with men and monies, and their resolution to the Kings demands.*
15. *A true relation of the great defeate given to the Earle of Derby at Manchester, and an Order of Parliament for a publique thanksgiving.*
16. *A true relation of Captaine Kettlebys bringing up to the Parliament and Commitment to the Tower.*

October 12. Printed for Francis Leach and Francis Coles. 1642.

A CONTINVATION OF Certaine Speciall and Remarkable passages from both Houſes of Parliament and divers other parts of this Kingdome,

From Saterday the eighth of *October*, till Wedneſday the 12. of *October* 1642.

Saterday the 12. *of* October.

BOth Houſes received Letters from the Earle of *Warwick*, ſignifying that at *Dunkirke* and *Flanders* there are three ſhippes laden with Ammunition and other proviſions for Warre, which are intended to bee ſent to the Rebells in *Ireland*, but hee hath appointed ſome of his ſhipps very cloſly to gaurd that part of the *Iriſh* Seas to prevent their paſſage. And upon conſideration of this buſineſſe, the Parliament Ordered that a Meſſage ſhould be ſent to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador to deſire that he would ſend letters into *Spaine* to Countermaund the paſſage of any ſhipps to the Rebels in *Ireland*, for that it is againſt the Articles of peace betweene *England* and *Spaine*.

And the Houſes then Ordered that by reaſon of the winter ſeaſon the Earle of *Warwick* ſhould be called from Sea, and appointed

pointed to attend the ſervice of the Houſe, and that he ſhould appoint Captaine *Batten* to be Vice-ADMIRALL in his roome, and there are 12. of the Marchants ſhipps appointed to Guard the *Iriſh* Coaſts for all this winter.

It was informed the Houſes by letters from *Wales* that the Lord *Herbert* ſon to the Earle of *Worceſter* hath raiſed ſome forces for his Majeſty in South *Wales* and that he plundereth all that ſeeme well affected to the Parliament, and that when he hath raiſed what proviſions he can, hee intendeth to march with to his Majeſtie.

Captaine *Hotham* ſent Letters to the Parliament informing that not withſtanding the Treaty of peace in Yorkeſhire, according to the Order of Parliament hee hath marched with his forces in that County and hath publiſhed a Declaration in all places where he hath come, ſhewing the illegality of that treaty and how it is diſclaimed by both Houſes of Parliament, that hee hath ſeized upon divers cheife Malignants of that County, and hath taken Cawod Caſtle where the Biſhopp of *York* had taken Sanctuary who made a very neare eſcape from thence, and the Countrie in all the Weſt riding are very willing to aſſiſt the ſaid Captaine *Hotham* if they may have but the leaſt encouragement from the Parliament, where upon after ſome debate of the buſineſſe, it was ordered by the Houſes that the high Sheriffe for Yorkſhire, ſhould upon all occaſions be ayding and aſſiſting to Captaine *Hotham* in ſecuring the peace of the County againſt all Malignants, and in apprehending of them, according to the directions of Parliament.

It was alſo informed that Docter *Baſtwick* hath of late beene very unkindly uſed by the *Goaler* at *Yorke*, but hath now gott his liberty upon Baile.

From *Sherburne* it was informed by Letters that according to the order of Parliament the Earle of *Bedfords* forces have battered downe *Sherburne* Caſtle, and layde it levell with the ground, and that thoſe forces which the ſaid Earle of *Bedford* left behind him, are now marched to *Falmouth* in *Cornwall* to rout out Sir *Ralph Hopton* and his Cavalliers from thence.

There

There came Letters to the Parliament from *Holland* informing that the States of *Holland* have made ſtoppe of 4. ſhips at the *Brill* which were provided by the Queen & Prince of *Orang* with Ammunition and other proviſions to be ſent to the King, one of which Shipps had put to Sea to come for *Newcaſtle* but was forced back againe by a States man of Warr.

That the Queens ſhipps for her tranſporting are made ready but the ſtates wil not ſuffer any Ammunition to come along with her, wherefore it is reported ſhe intends to take her Iourney into *France*, but of certaine by the meanes of the Prince of *Orange* the Queene hath now pawned the Iewells of the Crowne, and the King of *France* hath ſent ſeaven ſhips with Ammunition over into *Irelana* to releive the Rebells, and intends to ſend other aide into England to aſſiſt the King againſt the Parliament, however it will appeare a breach of the Treaty of peace betwene England and France, and is ſo reſulced by the Parliament.

The Houſes have granted Letters of Mart to certaine Marchants to ſend out ſhipps to clenſe the ſeas, and to ſeize upon all *Pirats* or other ſhipps ſending of aide to the Rebells in *Ireland*, or againſt the Parliameut and to take them as their lawfull prize.

It is informed by letters from *Ireland* that the Lord of *Fauk-land* hath raiſed forces there and tooke away divers Commanders from the proteſtant forces, to bee ſent over to his Majeſtie, and that they lye there onely waiting for a fitt opportunitie for their tranſportation, but it is hoped they will bee prevented in their paſſage by the 12. Merchants ſhipps appointed for the guard of that coaſt.

It is alſo informed by letters from Rome that the Pope and Conclave have held an inquiſition concerning the affaires of England, and that they declare themſelves with bitter invectives againſt the Parliament and upon conſultation how they may beſt aſſiſt his Majeſtie againſt the Parliament, for the cutting off the Puritan faction in England, as they terme it.

There came letters to the Houſes from Worceſter on Munday laſt informing that his Excellency hath fortified that City

for

for a winter quarter, and that Prince Robert with his forces are retreated back from their march toward Worceſter and are now gone towards *Wolverhampton*, their maine buſines being to pillage and foridge where they come, as having noe other ſubſiſtence but what they gett by the ſpoile: All the reporte now from the Kings Army is, that hee is 30000. ſtrong, and with the one halfe of that number hee intends to march upp to London and leave the other halfe behinde him, to keepe play with the Earle of *Eſſex* but there is litle credit to begiven to this reporte, it being certainely affirmed by good intelligence, that his Majeſty hath not halfe the force he is reported to have.

There came certaine newes to the Houſes from Wales, that the Marqueſſe of Hertford hath made ſome aſſault againſt *Gotheridg* Caſtle, and is upon his martch Southwards intending to ioyne himſelfe to the Earle of *Worceſters* ſonne, and ſo retourne backe to his Maieſtie, having firſt pillaged and ſpoyled the countrie thereabouts as their uſuall cuſtome hath been in all places where they come.

Vpon Tuſeday laſt there came more letters to the Houſes from the Earle of Eſſex at Worceſter, informing that hee hath his Army in a good poſture there, and that having notice that Prince Robert with his forces were marched from his Majeſtie to Bridge North he ſent out Colonell Chamley with his Regiment and ſome other Dragoneers to meete him, but before Colonell Chamley came to Bridge North, Prince Robert with his forces left the place. and never appeared againſt the Parliaments forces ſo that Colonell Chamley without any oppoſition poſſeſſed himſelfe of Bridge North, and hath now fortified the ſame for the Parliament, and hath alſo beene at Bewdley and made good the Bridge ther going over the Severne.

The Lord generall alſo informed that the Kings forces are in a lamentable condition for want of meanes, that the common Souldiers are already three weekes pay behind hand and have nothing but what they plunder for. But for that report concerning

cerning the Kings comming up to London it is but like the other relations raiſed by Papiſts and other malignants that ſay there was a great fight lately at Bewdley Bridge, and that the Parliaments forces loſt 9. or 700. of their men, which is moſt notoriouſly falſe.

The Lord Generall by his Letters alſo informed that the King hath ſent out Summons to the County of Cheſter for a meeting that the Countrey may declare what they would freely lend to his Majeſty to maintaine the Warre againſt the Parliament: But they ſince his Majeſty was at Cheſter, doe now diſcerne how things are, and altogether diſapproving of the carriage of the Cavalliers, and will by no meanes be perſwaded to lend any ayde againſt the Parliament.

There came more Letters to the Houſes from *Shrewſbury* informing that his Majeſtie makes great proviſions for the fortifieing of *Shrewſbury*, but Prince *Robert* with the maine force is marched to *Bridge-North* a place of ſpeciall Eminencie, where they intend to place them ſelves for a pitcht battell, the K. intends to ſtay at *Shrewſbury* and hath reſerved a part of his forces for a Gariſon there, his Majeſty hath cauſed all the houſes without the Walls of the Towne to be taken downe that ſo he may with more Conveniencie plant his Ordnance to ſecure the Towne, but the Townesmen doe not reliſh theſe proceedings and are much troubled at it.

There came alſo letters to the Parliament from *Mancheſter* ſignifiing that God in an extraordinary manner hath delivered them from the Earle of *Darby* and his Cavaliers, that they have cauſed him to remove his ſeige from before *Mancheſter* and given his forces ſo great a defeate with their power & ſtrength, that his Souldiers are ſo wearie of his ſervice, that there are not ſo many men left for the Guard of his perſon, as are killed and run away from him, how ever he ſtill ſtayes in the Country endeavouring to ſtrengthen his forces, which he will very hardly doe, being aſhamed to march to his Majeſty with ſo ſmale a number as

are

are left him, how ever it was reported his Majesty had sent for him to ioyne his forces with his Army.

Vpon consideration of this businesse the Houses ordered that there should be publique thankesgiveing in all the Churches in London the next Lords day for this great deliverance.

This day also Captaine *Ketlby* one of the two Captaines that revoulted from the Earle of *Warwick* was brought up to the Parliament, and comitted to the custody of the Sericant at Armes, and afterwards ordered to be sent to the Tower upon an accusation of high Treason for betraying the trust reposed in him by the Parliament and instead of Guarding the *Irish* Coasts according to his charge, against any foraigne supplies that should be brought to the Rebells, he gaurded the Seas for the Rebells and turned Pirots against the Kings good subjects pillaging and spoyling all he could with all that weare welwillers to the Parliament: But Captaine *Stradling* his Confederate hath made escape into *Ireland*.

FINIS

TR

L

By M

The

I. Decl
com
II. His
Reb
III. Ho
fan
yet

Print

A 44

TRVE COPIE
OF TWO
LETTERS
BROUGHT

By Mr. *Peters*, this October 11. from my L. FORBES from Ireland.

The one to the Houſe of *Peeres*, the other to the Houſe of Commons.

I. Declaring the wofull miſery of that Kingdome in all corners and quarters.

II. His very happie and ſucceſſefull endevours againſt the Rebels what they have been.

III. How (through Gods bleſſing) with five or ſix thouſand men preſently ſent, he may regaine that Kingdome yet, before December be paſt.

LONDON,
Printed by L. N. for HENRY OVERTON, in Popes-head Alley. MDCXLII.

A

TRUE COPIE

OF TWO

LETTERS

BROUGHT

By Mr. Peter, the Cobler, from

my Lord Ireton from Ireland.

BRITISH MUSEUM

the one to the House of Peers, the

other to the House of Commons.

LONDON,

Printed by L. N. for HENRY OVERTON,

in Pope's-head Alley. MDCXLII.

A TRVE COPY OF TWO LETTERS,

brought by Mr. *Peters*, this *Octob* 11. from my *LORD FORBES* from *Ireland*.

My Lords,

THe miſeries of the diſtracted *Ireland*, are ſo many in all the corners of it, that it would require a juſt volume, rather then a Letter to repreſent them, the combination is ſo ſtrong, and the Rebellion univerſall, the Britiſh inhabitants for the moſt part ruined, and the ſmall Armies in *Munſter* and *Connaght*, (for lacke of neceſſaries and timely ſupplies) more like to be a prey to the Rebels, or thorough mutinies to turne Rebels themſelves, than any wayes likely to reduce the Rebels to their due obedience: there is two things by the policy of their Prieſts, which adds ſtrength to the Rebellion: the firſt of which is worſe then the Rebellion it ſelfe:

which in al places they are ſo impudently bold, as to father their Rebellion upon his ſacred Majeſty, as if all they did, were in obedience to his Majeſties commands, which by way of implicite faith: although they never ſaw any ſuch warrants, they are bound to believ, becauſe their Prieſts and prime Commanders doe informe them; the ſecond, their Prieſts indeavour to perſwade them there is no diſtruction nor hope of pardon; thereby to drive all to ſuch deſperate courſes, as they will bee rather kill'd then taken, and encourage one another to enter into a bond, for killing all his majeſties Britiſh ſubjects, and proteſtant profeſſours. An happy agreement betweene his Majeſty and the Parliament would quickely take of the maſque, and ſo weaken the power, that the greater part of the ſeduced Gentry and Commons would leave them, and a diſcreete liberty given to Governours of Counties, and Provinces, to pardon ſome ſpeciall Perſons, and Corporations upon honourable termes, would untye their bond, and make every one of them, cut anothers throats to ſecure their owne pardon: the Towne of *Galway* hath by the Earle of *Clanricard* and Saint *Albons* meanes made a pacification with the Fort, but upon ſuch diſhonourable termes, that it hath rather beene a ſubtile ſtrengthning of their rebellion, then a truly intended pacification. Although in every Province where I come, I deſire the aſſiſtance of, and to be aſſiſtant to the chiefe Governours thereof: and have accordingly in that Province of *Conaght*, finding his Majeſties Fort, and the Town of *Galway* at odds againe, being called thither for the reliefe and aſſiſtance of his Majeſties Fort, advertiſe the Earle of *Clanricard* Governour of the Towne and County of *Galway*, and my Lord *Rannelagh* Preſident of *Connaght*, who did concurre

coucur in their opinions, that the loyalty of the Towne of *Galway* could never be ſecured without a garriſon, if they knew how to obtain it, my Lord *Clanricard* complaining that his friendes had left him, and the reſt would leave him, if the pacification were broke: and my Lord *Rannelagh* complaining that his Souldiers lacked all neceſſarie proviſions, mony, food and cloathing, and but ſmall proportions of Ammunition; my ſmall force not being in any probable way ſufficient to compell them to receive a garriſon: I ſilently ſuffred the Earle of *Clanricard*, and the Captaine of the Fort, to patch up their broken Pacification, by which the Fort is ſufficiently relieved; leaving the Fort of *Galway* in theſe termes of peace and plenty, I ſent to the Iſles of *Arran*, and did great ſpoile in burning the Rebells cabines, and corne, and brought from thence two hundred cowes, and ſome ſheepe. But the Rebells (except twenty that were kil'd, fled in boates from the other ſide of the Iſland, ſome eight miles diſtant, the ſtormes being ſo great, that in eight daies time I could ſcarce gaine the mouth of the River of *Limerick*: where I am ſtill doing all the harme I can to the Rebells: but ſeeing the warres are not like to be ſoon ended as was firſt ſuppoſed: if your Lordſhips will take a courſe for the ſtrengthning of theſe forces at preſent under my command to the full proportion contained in the ordinances of Parliament. I am confident they will be as uſefull here if not more, as in any part of the Kingdome: it will likewiſe be expedient that ſhips of good ſtrength be appointed to waite this winter in the ſpeciall harbours betweene this and *Kinſale*: this I thought it my duty humbly to repreſent to your Lordſhips wiſe conſideration, remitting the more full rela-

tion of all things to Master *Peters*, and the reſt reſt of the Committee of Adventurers of the additionall forces by ſea and land, for the reducing of *Ireland*, not doubting of your Lordſhips wonted care and providence to do every thing that may advance his Majeſties ſervice, and honour, and encourage thoſe that are ready and willing to lay downe their lives for the good of the State, as ſhall be ſignified unto them by your Lordſhips, or any having power from you, amongſt which as I eſteeme my ſelf one of the meaneſt, ſo it is my humble deſire, I may doe your Lordſhips ſome acceptable ſervice, which may honour me with the title of

Your Lordſhips moſt affectionate humble ſervice,

Caſtle of *Glin*. 27. *Sept*. 1642.

FORBES.

BRITISH MUSEUM

Mr

Mr. Speaker,

I Had a purpose to have sent you a full relation of all our proceedings heere in Ireland: but this bearer Mr. Peters, who hath beene an eye-witnesse, out of his Diurnall give you more full satisfaction and acquaint you with these things, that are most requisite for the subduing of Ireland, which will be an easie worke, if it be yet taken in time, and rightly prosecuted; for I dare say five or sixe thousand men well commanded and well provided for, could take both Limrick and Galloway, and so end the Warre before Christmas, for the strength of the Rebellion lies here, and there would be no difficultie in subduing the rest, Mr. Peters will acquaint you what was my purpose; but I dare not goe beyond my limits, the Countrey diseases as Fluxes and Feavours have mightily weakened these few men I have; yet blessed be God we have done good service as could be done with so many men, as you will perceive by Mr. Peters Diurnall; to the which, and his owne Relation, and the Copies of the Letters I have sent, I remit all further.

Your Nephew is in good health, and will prove a very good Souldier; and if speedy supplies be sent or provisiios and Warrants to make them, I shall have care of his further advancement. Mr. Maurice Thomson will acquaint

quaint you with what it is necessary to be proposed to the House in the behalfe of poore distressed Ireland: *and as I neither doubt of his sufficiencie in proposing, your willingnes to doe that good that is respected from you: so at this time I will trouble you with no longer Letter; but shall be much rejoyced to heare from you, of the happy and long wished for agreement betwixt his Majestie and the Parliament: for which I shall never cease to pray, and shall ever remaine,*

Your affectionate Friend to serve you.

Castle of Glin. 28. *Sept.* 1642.

FORBES.

BRITISH MUSEUM

A
o
M
I
V
W
A

A true & exact Relation

of the ſeveral paſſages at the Siege of

MANCHESTER,

Between the Lo: STRANGE his Forces, and the Towne.

VVherein is evidently ſeene the wonderfull mercy of God in their deliverance.

Written by one that was an eie-witneſſe, and an Actor in moſt of that ſervice.

Alſo a Proteſtation of Maſter *Hotham*, and divers other Knights and Gentlemen, againſt the 14. Articles of Pacification, and Neutrality.

LONDON,

Printed for *Edward Blackmore*, at the Angel in *Pauls* Churchyard. *Octob.* 12. 1642.

A true & exact Relation

of the several passages at the Siege of

MANCHESTER.

Between the Lo: STRANGE his Forces, and the Towne.

Wherein is evidently seene the wonderfull mercy of God in their deliverance

Written by one that was an eye-witnesse, and an Actor in most of that Service.

Also a Proclamation of Major Rotham, and divers other Knights and Gentlemen, against the 14. Articles of Pacification, and Neutrality.

Printed for Edward Blackmore, at the Angel in Paul's Church-yard. 1643.

An exact relation of the ſeverall passages at the ſiege of MANCHESTER.

SAterday the 25. of September, 1642. the Lord *Strange* having the fortnight paſt drawn to *Warrington* great Forces of Horſe and Foot, was feared to have intended ſomthing againſt our town, yet could not any certainty (by any ſure ground of appearance) be gathered, yet upon that night about ten of the clock, a letter came from *Warrington* aforeſaid, intimating that the Lo: *Strange* was comming with great power to diſarme us, this was ſeconded, and that foure great pieces upon cariages were on the way, & his purpoſe was to aſſault the Towne very early in the morning. This wrought in us great feare and a generall aſtoniſhment, there being in our towne ſome few gentlemen, Maſter *Hellande*, Maſter *Edgerton*, Maſter *Dunkeſtenld*, Maſter *Booth*, Maſter *Hide*, Maſter *Roſworme* a German, whom God hath ſent into our Towne a little before, who the night before had finiſhed the mud-walls and chains, that were done by his directions at the ſeverall paſſages of our town: Alſo Captain *Bradſhaw*. Theſe being preſent in Town, cooſulted about an houre with the chiefe of the Towne, and then it was concluded that the drum ſhould beat up, the bells ring croſſe to

give the Countrey notice, and every man within to ſtand to his Arms,& before the morning light, notice was given that they were very nigh the towne, at which being by ſcouts diſcovered, every paſſage was as well manned as that preſent time would admit, which by reaſon of ſome Country Forces that were come unto us, our Neighbours and towne all joyneing, kept them of a ſuddaine Aſault, which cauſed them to take up ſome houſes and paſſages very neare the town at three principall paſſages, South, North, and Weſt, to hinder us of the leaſt both of men and proviſion, the Lord *Strange* his Forces (as is certainly Reported) was about two thouſand Foot, ſome ſay, four, five, or ſix thouſand, are betwixt five and ſix hundred horſe, ſix great peeces of ordnance, they being ſetled, ſent word to Require the Armes of our towne, and to billet an hundred men, which being denyed them, two Gentlemen from our towne were ſent to know the Reaſon of my Lords comming in that manner againſt the Kings Subjects, one of them was kept two or three howers, but at length got Releaſt.

Sunday.

THis day (being the Lords day) paſſed away with great fears and troubles as the like was never ſeene in *Mancheſter*, yet it pleaſed God to ſend us ſome ayd from ſeverall Adjacent parts, ſo that before the next day at noone, there was about one thouſand men in compleat Armes within our town, moſt of them muſketiers.

Munday

Munday.

MUnday they ſtrengthened all the paſſages as well as the Fort could do; Captain *Bradſhaw* the Denſe gate end, Captain *Ratcliffe* the market ſtreete lane, Cap: *Booth* the Mill gate, Captaine *Roſwarme* the Bridge againſt Sawford way, Liſtermain, Barwick, the Hunts banck: and a company of reſolute Souldiers the Sned hill without any commander, towards the Afternoone it was obſerved that divers Horſemen of the Lord *Stranges* went out to aſault the towne Eaſtward, or to have ſtopped the way, which being taken notice of, Captaine *Bradſhaw* with about 30. Musketiers iſſued forth, Shot Sharply at them and made them retire backe with haſt towards their places of Randevouze.

Notwithſtanding there were then laid betwixt our men and that place 40. or 50. Musketiers that playd very vehemently upon them, and having the advantage alſo of a Ditch-bancke, our men feareing that they ſhould be compaſt in with them, Retreated without any loſſe or hurt to the Denſe-gate ende; the place that was firſt aſſaulted.

And preſently after that, divers of our enemies ſtoale downe to the ende of a great Barne that was full of Corne and Haye, and ſet it on Fire with ſome other buildings that was betwixt them and the new made Mudd-wall, the ſame being about an Hundred and Fifty yards diſtant, they gathered togeather (the Barne begining to burne) and thought to take the advantage of the ſmoake to cover them, and by a ſuddaine ſhot to have driven our men from their Fort, which aſſaying to doe, were anſwered ſo well by our ſhot, that they were beaten backe, and a cheife Commander of their Horſe ſlaine, with divers others of their Souldiers. This fight continued for the ſpace of three quarters of an houre in a vehement maner, our enemy having another company of foote to have ſeconded the firſt, and behind them a great force of Horſe to have come on, but their welcome (by the grace of God) was ſo hott that they durſt not aproach nearer but retired

tired backe, in this fight was not one of our men touched, ſave that an unskilfull man (whoſe Musket was ready to be diſcharged) let it fly at unwares and ſtrooke one of his fellows through the necke that he died, this man that was thus ſlaine, was Servant to Maſter *Aſhton* of *Middelton*.

Now when the flame of the fiered barne appeared (which might have diſcouraged all our hearts, had not the Lord ſupported us) came down from Sawford to the foot of the bridg, great ſtore of horſe and foot of the Lord *Stranges* with a ſudden ſhout, and Aſſayd to enter, but were ſo Anſwered with our ready ſhot, that they durſt not ventur on it again, At which fight tis ſayd ſome Commanders were cut off, and many Common Souldyers, for ſome lay dead in the ſtreet (that they durſt not come near all the next day for feare of our ſhot): the night begining to aproach great care was uſed for our ſafety and with great feare the night paſſed on, About twelve of the Clock that night came (at the bottom of the parſonage) tis thought an hundred or an hundred and fifty men down by the water ſide, Intending to have fired the towne by ſome ſtacke of faggets that lay cloſe behinde the houſes, but four men ſtanding Sentinell at that back paſſage, with the help of 8. men more that came in unto them, drove and forced them back, how the Lord preſerved theſe twelve men tis wonderful, for as the enemy ſhot fiercely at them before, ſo their own friends behind them, (not knowing who they were) ſhot as fiercely at them, yet God bee prayſed none of them were touched, the night paſſed on with great fear.

Tewſday.

THe next morning were planted ſome Ordnance, which firſt played upon the Deans gate end, the firſt ſhot ſtruck off a ridge tiles of a barn, and the bullet fel down among our Soldiers, the ſight whereof did ſome what terrifie them, but their Cap: encouraged thē ſo as by little and little they were drawn paſt fear: they ſhot ſeverall times again but did no hurt at all, then they planted two ereat peeces at Sawford, to batter downe about that

that paſſage that came forth over the bridge, and ſhot twice, then my Lord *Strange* ſent a Trumpeter to require paſſage through our Towne with his Forces, but that was refuſed, then played foure great pieces with great violence, the bullets ſhooting through and through divers houſes ſo that the bullets came tumbling amongſt us like balls but did no harme to any, only one boy (that was a wicked Childe, having overrun his parents) was with Cannon ſhot mortally wounded, by gazing in the face of the enemy, at a work made by the mudwall, who within a few houres died, then preſently followed out a troop of their horſe to ſtop part of the paſſage Eaſt-ward, but ſome of our muſquetiers iſſuing forth at the market-ſteed-lane, drove them back, in which fight one of our bill men only was ſhot into his ſhoulder, the ſhooting continued with ſuch vehemencie, then it is ſcarce credible to beleeve ſo little hurt ſhould be done, our town lying ſo open and naked on all ſides, in the Afternoone ſeven of our men went over the bridge to ceaſe upon a houſe that commanded the bridg, but were preſently diſcovered, this night paſſed away with great feare and trouble.

Wedneſday.

ON Wednesday morning our ſeven men were ſurpriſed in the ſaid houſe, and taken, and divers of our enemies were placed in their roomes; then they fell to ſhooting againe, which wee likewiſe anſwered, and Fortifications were ſoone made, that no great hurt was done to us. In the afternoone a man was ſhot into the leg as he was croſſing downe to goe to his guard, and another of our Bel-men was by peeping forth of his Rank ſhot through the head with a bullet and dyed. This night continued with ſuch ſhooting betwixt us and *Salford*, as the like hath not been heard. One of our men, his muſket breaking (in the Church-yard) ſtruck off his hand. The ſame evening they made an aſſault on the Sned-hill, but were beaten back. The Troopers went out into the Country this day to rob and ſpoile about two miles from our towne, where two or three Muſquetiers

tiers and five or ſixe Bill-men chaſed them and routed them, and tooke foure Horſe, and ſlew one, and five men that evening, beſides many other priſoners were taken and brought into our towne, with ſome Armes. About ſeven of the clock in the evening, notice was given that they had a deſigne to fire our Towne, but ſtore of raine fell that evening, which proved much to our advantage; for the waters were raiſed, and they could not ſo readily paſſe over the rivers; yea ſome one cryed within the compaſſe of the Watch, Fire, Fire, which gave the Alarum, and ran quickly through the towne, which put us in great feare, but proved nothing. Warning was given to all men that they ſhould watch their own houſes both within and without. About eleven of the Clock at night, the enemy made an Aſſault at the eaſt-ſide of the towne, and came upon the Brick croft with a great ſhout and a ſuddain diſcharge, where there lay 8 of our men in the brick kill, who had Fortified themſelves there, and Anſwered the other with as ſudden a ſhott as they could, They continewed ſhooting the ſpace of an hower, and then the Cavaliers began to Retreate. In this fight one of the poore men in the brick kill ſhot of two of his little fingers of one hand, and his hand alſo bruſed by the burſting of his peece.

This night was very greevous to our men, they being almoſt quite ſpent with watching, and toyling, and running to and fro, that beyond the ordinary courſe of Nature they held out: that Night it pleaſe God to ſend us about twelve of the Clock about 80 musketiers and pikes, eleven wherof were ſlain as they came to the towne, by ſeven of the enemies who lay ſecretly in the way as they ſhould paſſe and ſhot them ſuddenly, which was a great greef to their fellowes, theſe when they came in Ioyned themſelves to Captain Bradſhaw they being his neigbours, which ſtrengthned him very much, hee having indured a ſharp, long, and bitter time of it. A great ſtrength lying againſt that paſſage to enter there that night, before it was morning, were brought two great peeces and placed at the head of *Salford*, to come down to the foote of the bridge to make open way by driving down our works and our men from them.

But

But on the Wednesday morning, it being espied, care was taken how to prevent that danger. Shooting continued still very vehemently till towards the afternoone; then his Lordship sent for a Treatie, requiring a thousand Armes; we were then in a great straight, having powder and shot, but no match, neither had any way to get any; time was required till seven the next morning; whereupon the Lord *Strange* engaged his honour, that nothing should be done in that time; in which time his Souldiers went about the worke they came for, that was to pillage and play the theeves in the Country all thereabouts: in this little time of cessation, there was some man in our Towne that had seene the making of Match, and had thereby gained some little insight in the making thereof, he fell to worke, and gave direction about the making thereof, and performed it well, and got supply of Match; and our Souldiers being a little refreshed by rest and sleepe, did mightily incourage one another to stand to it, and would admit of no Parley; the Gentlemen being indinable to condescend, but the Souldiers expressing a great unwillingnesse, by a generall shout of Captaine *Bradshaws* Company, declared that they would part with their Armes and lives together. Now his Lordships Souldiers began to start aside, for they would not come neare but gave backe; for by reason of cold, and wet, hunger and thirst, and labour, want of sleepe, and a bitter welcome that we gave them, their hearts were discouraged mightily, in so much, that unarmed men of ours tooke courage and brought in both prisoners and Armes of theirs, so as scarcely can be beleeved. Now the time of Treatie was almost spent, and it was espied (by some of my Lords men) that some man of ours at the back side of a house, stood where was a ditch and small bancke cast up, to play upon *Salford*, they tooke exceptions against that which was done partly before that time, as also for taking downe a wooll pack, and laying it as it was the night before, a Souldier running downe to rest himselfe upon it; as also that a Country man newly come into the Towne, and knowing nothing of the Treatie, shot off his Musket; all which as they said, was against the Law of Armes, which being excused, his Lordship answered, that he was informed, that during the time of the Treatie, his Souldiers had not made one shot, not taking

tiers and five or ſixe Bill-men chaſed them and routed them, and tooke foure Horſe, and ſlew one, and five men that evening, beſides many other priſoners were taken and brought into our towne, with ſome Armes. About ſeven of the clock in the evening, notice was given that they had a deſigne to fire our Towne, but ſtore of raine fell that evening, which proved much to our advantage; for the waters were raiſed, and they could not ſo readily paſſe over the rivers; yea ſome one cryed within the compaſſe of the Watch, Fire, Fire, which gave the Alarum, and ran quickly through the towne, which put us in great feare, but proved nothing. Warning was given to all men that they ſhould watch their own houſes both within and without. About eleven of the Clock at night, the enemy made an Aſſault at the eaſt-ſide of the towne, and came upon the Brick croft with a great ſhout and a ſuddain diſcharge, where there lay 8 of our men in the brick kill, who had Fortified themſelves there, and Anſwered the other with as ſudden a ſhott as they could, They continewed ſhooting the ſpace of an hower, and then the Cavaliers began to Retreate. In this fight one of the poore men in the brick kill ſhot of two of his little fingers of one hand, and his hand alſo bruſed by the burſting of his peece.

This night was very greevous to our men, they being almoſt quite ſpent with watching, and toyling, and running to and fro, that beyond the ordinary courſe of Nature they held out: that Night it pleaſe God to ſend us about twelve of the Clock about 80 musketiers and pikes, eleven wherof were ſlain as they came to the towne, by ſeven of the enemies who lay ſecretly in the way as they ſhould paſſe and ſhot them ſuddenly, which was a great greef to their fellowes, theſe when they came in Ioyned themſelves to Captain Bradſhaw they being his neigbours, which ſtrengthned him very much, hee having indured a ſharp, long, and bitter time of it. A great ſtrength lying againſt that paſſage to enter there that night, before it was morning, were brought two great peeces and placed at the head of *Salford*, to come down to the foote of the bridge to make open way by driving down our works and our men from them.

But

But on the Wednesday morning, it being espied, care was taken how to prevent that danger. Shooting continued still very vehemently till towards the afternoone; then his Lordship sent for a Treatie, requiring a thousand Armes; we were then in a great straight, having powder and shot, but no match, neither had any way to get any; time was required till seven the next morning; whereupon the Lord *Strange* engaged his honour, that nothing should be done in that time; in which time his Souldiers went about the worke they came for, that was to pillage and play the theeves in the Countrey all thereabouts: in this little time of cessation, there was some man in our Towne that had seene the making of Match, and had thereby gained some little insight in the making thereof, he fell to worke, and gave direction about the making thereof, and performed it well, and got supply of Match; and our Souldiers being a little refreshed by rest and sleepe, did mightily incourage one another to stand to it, and would admit of no Parley; the Gentlemen being inclinable to condescend, but the Souldiers expressing a great unwillingnesse, by a generall shout of Captaine *Bradshaws* Company, declared that they would part with their Armes and lives together. Now his Lordships Souldiers began to start aside, for they would not come neare but gave backe; for by reason of cold, and wet, hunger and thirst, and labour, want of sleepe, and a bitter welcome that we gave them, their hearts were discouraged mightily, in so much, that unarmed men of ours tooke courage and brought in both prisoners and Armes of theirs, so as scarcely can be beleeved. Now the time of Treatie was almost spent, and it was espied (by some of my Lords men) that some man of ours at the back side of a house, stood where was a ditch and small bancke cast up, to play upon *Salford*, they tooke exceptions against that which was done partly before that time, as also for taking downe a wooll pack, and laying it as it was the night before, a Souldier turning it downe to rest himselfe upon it; as also that a Countryman newly come into the Towne, and knowing nothing of the Treatie, shot off his Musket; all which as they said, was against the Law of Armes, which being excused, his Lordship answered, that he was informed, that during the time of the Treatie, his Souldiers had not made one shot, not taking

notice of the two men they kild us comming to the Towne, nor of the pillaging and plundering the Countrey, not any of those Acts of injustice and violence, and therefore it was resolved, that wee would treate no more with him, neither would give him any Armes.

Thursday.

Then began they freshly to their worke againe on the thursday morning about ten of the clocke, and immediately was discharged two great Pieces of Ordnance against the new bancke that was rayſed along the water-side to command the Streete that leads up to the Chappell, they being discharged, strooke through and through a house of one that much favoured my Lord, but mist the worke. From whence we playde so hotly, that the Canno-neere having againe chargde his Cannon, durst not stay to discharge it, but so they stood all that night, and all the next day, and part of the next night, and they durst not come neare unto them, yea they were got away the second night, by what device I cannot tell. His Lordship sent for a Parley againe, but the Souldiers would admit of none. We passe here through great difficulties, Master *Butterworth*, a prime man, is gone out for ayde towards *London* we heare, Master *Holland* the chiefe, upon good reason, thought fit to condescend, had drawne Master *Booth* and Master *Edgerton* with him: the Souldiers also that were ill affected, began to murmure and complaine, making this an excuse, that the Countrey was spoyled, and they to save the Towne hazzarded their owne estates, so that we were even at a stand, which being taken notice of, the well affected Souldiers incouraged by Master *Hyde* (the meanest of the Lievtenants) Captaine *Bradshaw*, and Captaine *Rosworme*, spoke openly, that if all the Gentlemen deserted the cause, yet would they cleave unto it, and depend and rest upon the promise and engagement of the Parliament, for the making good any losse or dammage that should befall them.

Great and terrible words are given out against the Rogues of *Manchester* (as they please to terme us) calling us bloudy minded Roundheads: Lyes published by them, that Mr. *Johnson*

ſon one of our fellowes, was taken, hanged, and quartered, that Maſter *Bowker* our Conſtable was ſlaine, that our Towne was given up, and that the Queene had ſent great battering Peeces. Theſe and the like Reports went very farre into the Countrey, which hindered us of helpe, diſcouraged us within, ſo that had not the Almightie God (whom they ſcoffed againſt in their reproachfull way) ſaying to this effect, we ſhall ſee where their Almightie Gods helpe us: I ſay, had not our Lord God been our preſent helpe, certainly in that very extremitie we had periſhed. For encouragement reſted onely in the breaſts of a company of poore deſpiſed Chriſtians, who with our Towne, our poore *Mancheſter*, ingaged themſelves againſt the great mightie ones of our Countie; For, for ought I can learne, there was not one Gentleman of Eminency, Knight or Lord, throughout our Shire, nor any eminent man of note, but either in perſon or beſt aſſiſtance he was againſt us. Great boaſts were made abroad, and our Towne condemned for proud and bloudy people, becauſe we would not give up; and generall notice was given (by my Lords friends) to all thoſe whom they call well affected people, with all innocent women and children, as they did tender their lives, to forgoe and leave the Towne; yea, and before this time, many of the chiefe of our Towne, had left and forſaken us; and our owne neighbour Towne *Salford* was up againſt us, keeping us in play with their continuall ſhot, ſo as the theeves had more libertie to rob, yea, hope of helpe now faying, and no avde appearing, hope of proviſion beginning to ſlacke, the villaines having ſpoylde all about them, what they could not eate and carry away, either for horſe or man, moſt ſhamefully they caſt abroad and ſpoyld it. It is confidently ſpoken, they have done ten thouſand pound of hurt. Alſo report came, that Maſter *Leigh* of *Adlington*, with foure hundred men, were at *Stopport*, ready to aſſiſt the Earle of *Darbie*. Maſter *Ardene* of *Harden* went out Eaſtward to cleare a paſſage, and had one of his men ſhot and dyed; more priſoners were this day brought into our Towne; The Cannon ſtill play through and upon divers houſes, and hurt none: this night paſſed on with great and generall feare, not knowing how wee ſhould ſubſiſt.

Fryday.

Fryday morning the great Pieces were drawne out of *Salford*, the well affected peoples houſes there plundred, robbed, and ſpoyled, what they could not carry away, they mangled and puld in pieces; the former feares removed by Souldiers that were ſencible Chriſtians, they did vayle themſelves with valour, and gave out words, that if the head Gentlemen did ſtill perſiſt in deſtroying them, they would commit them, and thereupon Liſted themſelves to every place and Captaine apart. The Earle of *Darbie* ſent againe for a Parley, requiring to have the Trained and Freehold Bands with him made out two hundred, part whereof were with him alreadie, and that he required them to defend the Kings perſon, the Lawes and Liberties of the Subjects. But anſwer was made, that they were bound by the Lawes of the Kingdome to keepe their Armes to defend themſelves againſt Atheiſts and Papiſts, which they were ſure was Law, and that he ſhould not have one inch of match but againſt their wills. This day it was knowne that Captaine *Standiſh* was ſlaine by peeping out of a doore in *Salford*, which was a great griefe to the Earle of *Darbie*. The ſame time was three or foure drowned neare our Towne, one of them (as it is reported) had three Rings on his fingers, of an hundred and twentie pound value; three of our enemies men were buryed at *Dreſbery*, ſome foure miles from our Towne.

The Poſte came in this night and brought ſome good news, which did incourage us a little, who were till then almoſt out of courage; and alſo reported that Mr. *Leigh* his men would not follow him out of *Cheſhire* into *Lancaſhire*: here was two very remarkable things that haped.

One *Bloomely* of Ardwick was cocking his Match to have ſhot and killed an honeſt man that came to aſſiſt the Town, the ſaid *Bloomely* (wreſting the Scriptures) that obedience (as if every obedience were lawfull) was better than ſacrifice, the ſaid *Bloomely* was this night killed by them that he ſo much defended, going with his wife to milking, was by the Cavaliers ſhot into the belly; And though upon his knees he begged that they would

would ſave his life, yet could not obtain it. Alſo a man of a bitter ſpirit, one *Bradſhaw*, fleeing out of our Town to our enemies, for ſpeaking ſome unadviſed words, was ſlain and ſo requited. Another man, a Conſtable of *Blackley*, would not admit of a Watch, till his houſe was plundred, and the worth of thirtie pound taken from him, and then he was pleaſed to alter his opinion. And concerning the Barn that was burnt with Haye and Corn by our Town ſide, it was worth an hundred and fiftie pound at leaſt, and he that owed it was noted to be a man that did (as much as in him lay) comply with the Earle of *Darby*: and was ſo requited by his Cavaliers. Severall other remarkable paſſages might be collected, as this afternoone the plunderers coming to an honeſt mans houſe intending to ſlay him, got in, and cockt his piſtoll or peternell, ready to diſcharge at the mans breaſt, but his fellow hitting him on the elbowe as if he had had ſomething to have ſaid to him, turned therewith the muſſell of his Piſtol upon one of his own Company and killed him, whereby the poore man had time to make an eſcape with his life. Now the laſt and greateſt project was by fire-bals, which as tis credibly ſpoken, twenty pound was ſpent in the making of them, which were accordingly ſhot and caſt at our Town, but, God be praiſed, could take no effect, the Lord had reſpect to his own cauſe, and to his poore peoples prayers and teares; for otherwiſe certainly they had ſpoyled us, for no meanes for our overthrow was left unattempted.

Saterday.

This night paſt, with the like ſhooting as before, the next day being Saterday, a parley was moved for exchange of priſoners, which was aſſented unto, we had about foureſcore of theirs taken: and that they might not want a compleat number, they had taken divers poore men that were about their ſeverall buſineſſes in the fields.

And had uſed our men which they had taken very inhumanely, and had threatned to take their lives, yet God preſerved them. Then his Lordſhip raiſed his ſiege, and went back with his baggage; for the Lord had cauſed them to return with loſſe

and disgrace. Those that were slain by us, and those that ranne away from him were very many, and is not yet known.

Sunday.

The Lords day following, our men were upon their march, and many of them issued out and took much Armes that they had left behind them in divers places.

The report of their coming on was very terrible to my Lords Companies as tis said.

Munday.

Munday being come, our men being wearied out, went home: those of the Villages neare hand, promised us to be ready againe at a very short warning. The next morning a sudden report was that our Town was again assaulted, which was very terrible to us we being naked; notice was given, and divers came presently to our help, but it proved no such matter. It is now said that the Earle of *Darby*, with Earle *Rivers*, are at *Ormeschurch*, and at *Wiggen*, and *Warrington*, and in *Cheshire*, and are there raising Forces to come againſt us againe, our good God stand for us, we have no other hope nor help but from him; the cause concerns the whole County, and if the Lord give us over, none can then expect to stand, all hanging (for the most part) the other way. We expect aid of horse daily from *London*, with some great Peeces, which if the Lord send them us, we shall be enabled more powerfully to resist. In the meane time with prayers and teares we intreat the help of Gods people by their prayers for this poore Town of *Manchester*.

Beleeve my Reports, for I am confident that I spare to speake out, because I would be within the bounds of modestie and truth. My words are as the words of one risen from the grave, and sure you will heare him, they are my own observations, and what I know in great part to be true, being an eye witnesse: our troubles are so great, and fears so many, that we can scarcely tell what we do. Passe by the manner of my writing, for I cannot have time to peruse what I have writ: and though

though this and more be fresh in my memory, yet the time and circumstance being different, I may omit something in the order. I desire that this our deliverance may be had in perpetuall remembrance, that the generations to come may heare and know what the Lord God hath done for poore sinfull *Manchester*. We daily looke for assistance from *London*, but our onely trust and safe dependance is in God: The Lord shield his poore people from the rage of the oppressors, and give us faith still to depend and pray to God with faithfull hearts, that our King may comply his heart to and with the faithfull of the Land. I shall ore-runne my self, if any word or thing be wrong written, omitted, or left forth, let me intreat you to gather the sence of it by what is written before or after; if I have committed any fault in writing, for I have not time to read it over. I pray you pray for us all, and the Lord be with you all, and keep us all stedfast to the day of his appearance. And so I rest your loving Friend.

Manchester, the 8. *Octob.* 1642.

Although there is nothing more desireable to us whether we look upon our own particulars, or the present distractions and dangers of our Countrey, then that all our conclusions may conduce to a quiet and peaceable settlement, for the effecting whereof we are not at all insensible how necessary it is for us to hold concurrance with those Gentlemen with whom in all our consultations hitherto we have communicated to the same end: yet inasmuch as those Articles hereunto annexed being as we conceive, totally against the priviledges of Parliament, and the Protestation we have already taken, and no way at all tending to the peace, but rather to the exposing of us to more insuing dangers, being that it is a fundamentall liberty of Parliament, to send for Delinquents in such a way as they shall see needfull; and we conceive that the eight Article doth directly and plainly oppose it; being that now the Delinquents are so strong that they cannot be sent for in an ordinary way of proceeding: we therefore hold our selves necessarily obliged as well in discharge of our selves, as duty to our Countrey, utterly to disavow the said Articles.

Articles. To which end we have publiſhed this our Declaration, to which we have ſubſcribed our names this 8. of *Octob.* 1642.

John Hotham.	*Jeffery Gaile.*
Matthew Boynton.	*William Darby.*
Henry Fowles.	*John Boucher.*
Thomas Remington.	*Tho. Netcliff.*
Francis Boynton.	*Francis Laſſels.*
John Anlaby.	*John Liſter.*
Arthur Beckwith.	*John Dent.*
Phell. Saltmerſe.	*Henry Wickermer.*

And foure more.

FINIS.

BRITISH MUSEUM

R
D
The
His Re
in Engl
having
ce
The pr
Wi



PRINCE 46

ROBERTS

DECLARATION.

TO

The KINGS moſt Excellent Majeſty,

October 11. 1642.

DECLARING

His Reſolution to leave the Kings Army here in *England*, and with all expedition to go for *Holland*, having ſeriouſly conſidered of the preſent differences betwixt His Majeſty and his two Houſes of Parliament.

ALSO

The proceedings of the Lord Willoughby of Parham, *and* Sir William Balfoure, *who have joyned their Forces with his Excellency.*

With the Proceedings of both Armies neer *Shrewſbury*, from the 8. of October to the 13.

LONDON,

Printed for Th. Tompſon. *October* 13. 1642.

PRINCE

ROBERTS

TO

The KING'S most Excellent Majesty,

DUCKARING

His Royal Highness the Sieur's Army here

and Sir William Blount, who have joyned their

With the Proceedings of both Armies since Sunday,

LONDON

Printed for Th. Tomplon. October 13. 1643.

PRINCE ROBERTS

Declaration to the KINGS moſt excellent Majeſty, *octob.* 11. 1642.

Declaring his Reſolution to leave His Majeſties Army here in *England*, and with all expedition to go into *Holland*, having ſeriouſly conſidered of the preſent differences between His Majeſty and His two Houſes of Parliament.

Alſo the proceedings of both Armies neere Shrewsbury *from the* 8. *of* October *to the* 13.

Upon the 11. day of this moneth Prince Robert began to declare his Reſolution to the Kings moſt excellent Majeſty, and the reſt of the Nobles that are now attending upon his royall Perſon, which was to this effect: That he had information by Letters from Holland, that his roy-

all much discontented and troubled in mind for his residence there in England, and was very desirous that hee should take his leave of his royall Uncle, the King of England, and to come to the Hague in Holland, whereby she might impart her minde unto him: he being willing to fulfil his Mothers desires, and sorry for his first coming over, declared his resolution to His Majesty, that hee was now resolved to leave England, desiring His Majesty not to be displeased thereat, and that according to the utmost of his power, he would endeavour to send over such able Commanders as should finish what he had begun.

His Excellency the Earle of Esser having left a strong garison at Worcester and all other places which he thought might prove prejudiciall to his Army, if that the malignant Party should take them into their possession, and having secured these places, hee advanced with his whole Army towards Shrewsbury, where

where the Kings Majesty hath set down his resolution to meet with his Excellency and his whole Army: but the weather being somwhat vehement, insomuch as his Excellency could not march with his whole army fast enough towards Shrewsbury, therefore hee sent Colonell Hollis, Colonell Hampden, and divers other Officers with three thousand horse and Foot before, by reason of the information which he had newly received, that some of the Parliaments Forces that lay neere unto the said towne of Shrewsbury were in great distresse, because the Kings Army were almost gathered to a head, and lay within five miles of the said towne, and therefore expected they should suddenly have a battell with them, and not being able to encounter with them, because the Cavaliers did far exceed them in number, therefore forthwith they dispatched Letters to the Lord Generall, desiring speedy aid from his Excellency, and according

to

to their defires, he ſent the aforenamed Forces, which no ſooner arrived there, but immediately they had a battell with the Cavaliers, being in number about ſeven thouſand Horſe and Foot, which were under the command of the Earle of Lindſey, and the Earle of Weſtmerland, and our Forces were not above foure thouſand at the moſt: having joyned themſelves in battell with the enemy, continuing for the ſpace of three houres, the enemy retreated with the loſſe of fifty men, and twenty three on our ſide.

From Bridgnorth there is information by divers letters that the Lord Willoughby of Parham hath joyned his Forces with his Excellency the Earle of Eſſex, and are in their march towards Shrewsbury, and by the way they found great oppoſition at Bridgnorth (which is a towne about twelve miles diſtant from Shrewsbury) by Prince Robert and divers others of the malignant Party, whereupon

whereupon there soone increased many dangers, and the inveterate malice of the Cavaliers there burst out, and began to give out many scoffing speeches against our souldiers, but they not brooking of such scandalous words, desired leave of their Officers to discharge against them, but at the first they seemed somwhat unwilling, and would not condescend thereunto, untill they understood the pleasure of the Lord Generall; but after some consultation thereof, they fell to it pell mell, and in the space of five hours seventy of the Cavaliers were slaine, and divers taken prisoners, with very little losse on our party: whereupon the enemy sounded a parley, and at the said parley it was concluded on, that a set day should be appointed for the meeting of both Armies.

There are 340. souldiers come out of Herefordshire to his Excellency for the service of the King and Parliament, and that the city of Hereford had sent to his

Excellency,

Excellency, signifying their good affection to the Parliament, and their desire to have that city secured against the Cavaliers, which they much feared would come, there being a malignant party in the city, those that were well-affected durst not shew their forwardnesse so much as they would, whereupon his Excellency sent one thousand foot, and foure troupes of horse to disarme the malignants, and to settle that City in a good posture of defence, and likewise ordered that a sufficient garrison should be left there for the safety and peace of those parts.

Sir William Balfoure is gone to joyne his Forces with the L. Generall, and the Scots Commanders that profered their service to the Parliament, are gone to his Excellency and entred into their places.

FINIS.

THE INTEREST OF ENGLAND

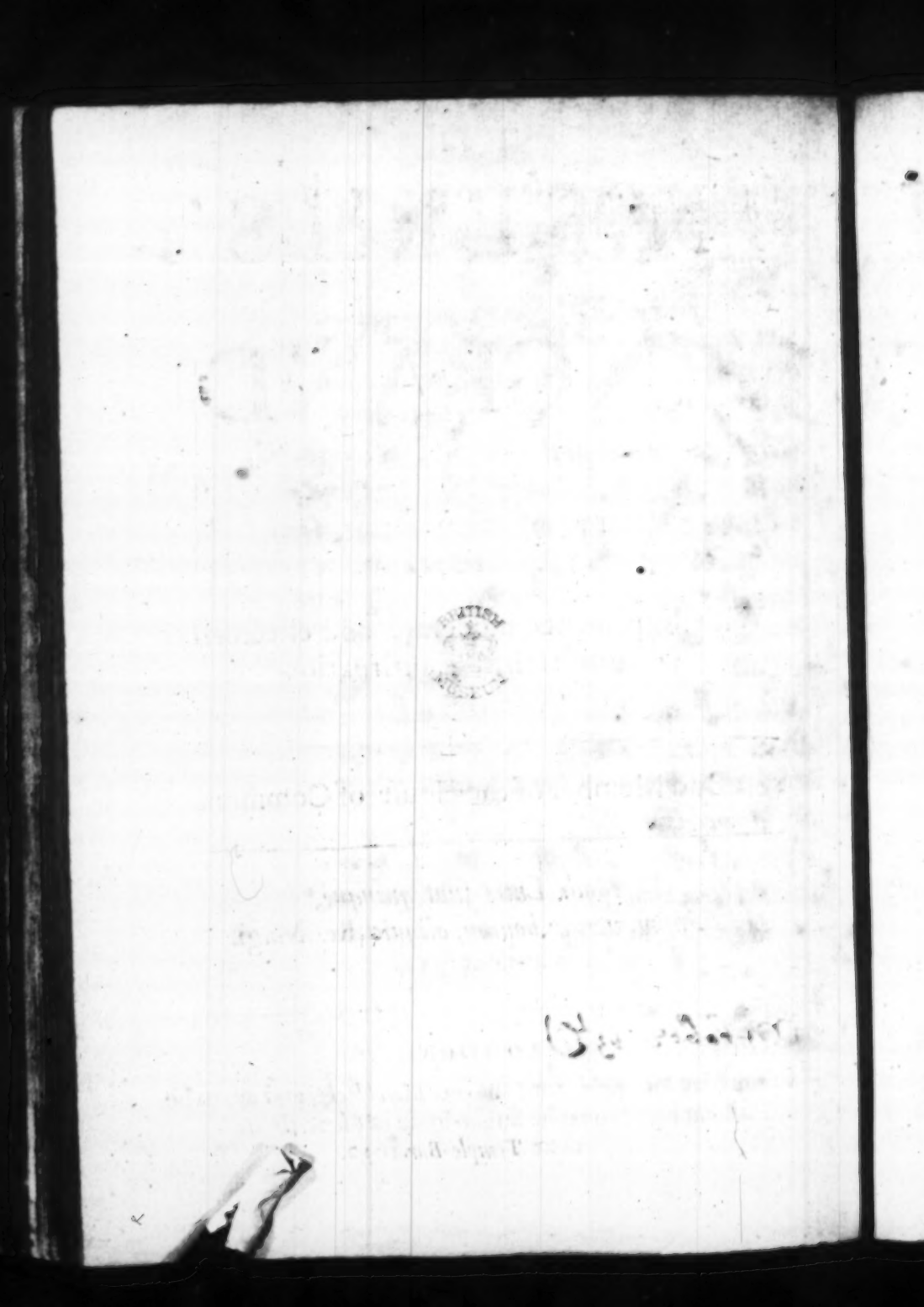
HOW IT CONSISTS IN Vnity of the Proteſtant RELIGION.

With Expedients moderate and effectuall to eſtabliſh it by the extirpation of the papacy.

By a Member of the Houſe of Commons.

Modi Entis ſunt quinque,
Vnum, verum, bonum, aliquid, Res. Magi.
Enchir. Metap. *Cap.* 2.

LONDON,
Printed by *E. Griffin*, for *Lawrence Blaicklocke*, and are to be ſold at his ſhop at the Suger-loafe in *Fleete-ſtreete* next *Temple-Bar*. 1642.



To the Reader.

ZEale to the ſervice of my King and Country throngs theſe apprehenſions to the publicke, rough, and unpoliſht, that they may be Timons.

The novelty of the matter, and my knowne dulneſſe, would have prejudg'd a bare motion, and buried it in the wombe: therefore rather then a ſubject ſo conſiderable ſhould periſh, unballanc'd, I have expoſed my ſence (yet Diogeticè, not dogmaticè, by way of inquiſition not Doctrine) to bee at leaſure pondered, and by it, my ſelfe cenſur'd.

Troth tis, ability I pretend to none but this, to know, that I have little; A ſufficiency perhaps not unſeaſonable: However innocent and faire endevours are not diſcountenanc't, but by ignorance, or humour, which as they traduce giddily, I deſpiſe; to ſuch whoſe ſteddy judgements, firſt apprehend, then deliberate, laſtly judge, I ſubmiſly vayle, and from them I expect either

ripening of what is here, like my ſelfe, greene; or but a gentle reprehenſion thus; tis his error, and thats to bee a Man;

I had not thus apologiz'd, but to uſher in a modeſt opportunity to expreſſe, that in this wanton age when the Preſſe riots, this as lawfull iſſue is acknowledged by,

William Conſtantine.

E ſociet. Medii Templi,
8. *Auguſti* 1642.

THE Intereſt of England, &c.

THat *miſterious* order the ſociety of *Ieſuits* diligence not onely their *Prieſtly* office, but upon emergents the embroylment of a *State*, To effect which, they are trained up in exact *principles*, as of *Sophiſtry* to ammuſe a diſputant, ſo of *Politicks* to ſubvert Intereſts. The deſigne of the ſociety of Jeſuits.

Their *ſupreme* deſigne is to reduce the whole Chriſtian *Laity* under one *King* and that of *Spaine*, the *Spirituality* under one *Pope*, as they are both under one *God*: the *Spaniard* cheriſhes this *project* with ſpeciall countenance to that ſociety, to preſerve which in *conſtant* growth, hee charges himſelfe to erect and ſupply ſeverall * *Colledges*, beyond the Seas, to entertaine the *Engliſh*, and hee *ſtages* inſtruments where there is the cheifeſt concourſe, to inſinuate and *decoy* thither our *ripeſt* wits: which inſtruments qualifyed with the *quinteſſence* of ſleight, have ſo wrought upon the *penury* of ſome, upon the *vaineſſe* of others, upon the *ungroundedneſſe* of the reſt, upon all with *flattery* and faire *promiſes*, that they ſtoope multitudes to their *Lure*. * St. Omers, Valladolid, Leig Douay, Bruſſels, &c.

Now this bounty of their great *Patron*, theſe fugitives are obliged to gratify with the *Ruine* or at leaſt *diſtraction* of their owne country; which (being *aſſayd* to be induſtrious, and ſubtiſt thither) they labour, and negotiate ſtoutly, by *cloſe*

Divide & impera. Match.

cloſe and *undermining* practices, whereof it is their *principall*, to ſuggeſt Jelouſies and foment miſapprehenſions betweene *King* and *people*. In which act, their *ſubtilty* it is, not to bee *viſible*, nay they contrive thoſe reſolutions which ſeeme moſt *oppoſite* to be their *Engines*; for they are poſſeſt that they ſione not, nay that they *merit*, though they *diſſemble, ſlander, faine apparitions, miracles, &c.* any thing to promote the cauſe; But *Dolus circuitu non tollitur.*

11 Rep. 74.

By theſe diviſions *Spaine* (though it coſt deepe) *acquires* an admirable purchaſe, for while *England* ſtruggles in *ſelfe-plundring*, its power is *diſunited*, and ſo diſabled to apprehend the *advantage* of the neceſſities, and uncompactednes of the *Spaniſh* Forces, whereby it is diverted from ſome exploits of *bravery* to relieve *confederates*, reinſtate *alliances*, partake the *Indies*, &c.

The Rebellion in *Ireland* how, &c. why fomented by the Jeſuits.

Even now when *this Kingdome* more rifely began to *reviſe* and *chaſe* its owne *intereſt*, and was almoſt inſtated in condition to propoſe *overtures* for the honour of the *King* and *Nation*, its providence and vigour is diverted by a rebellion in *Ireland*, blowne up (doubtleſſe) by an influence from the aforeſaid *principle* of the *Ieſuites*, flattering the *unſtedy* people to their owne *confuſion*, by fond promiſes of *ſupply* and *countenance*; Not that they hop't to *inforce* conditions by that more cumberſome then powerfull war, but that *England* toyling to reduce its owne *Rebells* may *exhauſt* it ſelfe, and not preſſe at this *precious* inſtant upon the intereſts of *Spaine*, that ſo ſenſing us off this buſy yeare, hee may provide *more firmly* in the next to obviate our atcheivements.

* Καθόλικος, *Univerſalis item perpetuus. Philo da Vita M. lib. 3.*

The *Spaniard* further to ſecure this *principle*, imprints and publiſhes to all *Romaniſts* a reputation of his *Faſt zeal* to the *Papacy*; whereby he has acquir'd that *boundleſſe* title of *King Catholick*; and in purſuance imployd that cruell ſpy the *Inquiſition*, by which as hee has invincibly intayld the *ſlavery* of *ignorance* upon his *owne ſubiects*, ſo he, *worries* out all exercile of the *reformation* in his dominions, which other *Romiſh* ſtates are induced to connive at, ſome to *tolerate*; nay in moſt treaties he negotiats (as a *ſeeming-prime* article) the indemnity of *Romaniſts*, as their indulgent *Patron*; under which

vizard hee inſinuates into the affections of ſome blind *zelots* (ſuch as ſadome not to the depth of *intereſt*) in all *ſtates*, whoſe fond devotion hurries them upon all occaſions, to ſecond *His* as they would *Gods cauſe*.

Section. I.

NOw (doubtleſſe) there is no *ſtate wiſdome* that can more *engrandize* the *royal Maieſty of this Kingdom* then to mate and countermine the aforeſaid *principles* of *Spaine*; Let *England* purchaſe to it ſelfe a *ſerious, fixt and conſtant reputation of zeale to the reformed Church*, ſuch as *Spaine* has to the *Papacy*, and as it ſhall conduce to *Gods glory* in the purity of his worſhip, ſo ſhall it erect a *puiſſance* ſelfe-dependant in this Crowne, not inferior to that of *France* or *Spaine*: For this Kingdome being then *unanimous* in deſigne will be moſt *powerfull* of all *proteſtants*, and being admirably *opportune* for *ſcituation*, ſhall be courted and apply'd to with *confidence* by all parties of the *Reformation* as there *grand protector*, by whoſe *truſty* correſpondency and *Unity of religious intereſt*, it ſhall attaine ſome *glorious* influence and power in all *ſtates* of *Chriſtendome*.

The true intereſt of England, is zeale to the Reformation.

That bleſt *Union* of the *two Crownes*, with that of *Ireland*, has enthron'd his *royall Maieſty* in dominions, *glorious, independant, cloſe-ioynted*, As *free* and *reſolute*, as they are *populous* and *rich*; and *opportunes* him (in the truſt and ſtrength of *his owne* ſubjects) to become as the *envy* ſo the *terror* of his *forraine* adverſaries; yet if in *one boſome* we foſter *two profeſſions*, that brave puiſſance will ſpend in *ſelfe-waſting*; wee ſhall *Militare cum Eraſinide*, exploit nothing, but our owne *diſtractions*; for what enterpriſe ſoever we undertake it thwarts the *intereſt* of *one Religion*, which ſo thwarted will retard, and ſtumble the expedition with as much *ſlight*, and *zeale* as the other preſſes *onward*; or be it by *both Religions* condiſcended to, (hardly poſſible unleſſe againſt the *infidells*) difference of opinion among the *undertakers* will dayly adminiſter occaſion of debate, which begets *offence*, that reluctancy of

—Diviſos orbe Britannos virg.

Eraſ. Adagidem Penelopes telam texere, to doe and undoe.

of ſpirit, and thence *foreſlowing*, if not *diſſertion* of the whole deſigne.

Section 3.

1. Some meanes propoſed to eſtabliſh the Reformation, more perfect.

TO prevent ſuch *miſchiefe* is to purſue our *maxime*; and to that end tis firſt requiſite, that his Majeſty be pleaſed to tranſact his *cloſe-counſels*, and *great affaires*, with the *adviſe* of ſuch perſons whoſe relations are *truly only* Engliſh; ſuch whoſe *tenderneſſe* in conſcience to the *purity* of *Chriſts Goſpell*, is moſt *conſpicuous* and *preciſe*; for theſe as they are moſt *averſe* to a reconcilement with the *Church of Rome*, ſo will they moſt *diligence* confuſion to the deſignes of *Ieſuits*; who (if it be feſible) will *ferret* into *our State-counſells*, (as to them moſt *dangerous*, and *ſuſpected*) To effect which they are accommodated, as with that *mighty Patron* before rehearſed, ſo with a *frolicke purſe*; againſt the aſſaults of which, there can be no engagement of *ſuch ſecurity* as *conſcience* in *Religion*, *Ex Diametro*, oppugnant.

Section 4.

2. Colledges to entertaine converts.

NExt let ſome *Colledge* in either *Univerſity* bee indowed to intertaine ſuch *Prieſts* as ſhall *convert*, over which by *diſcreet* providence, let ſuch *Divines* be elected *Governors*, as are moſt *zealous*, *conſcientious*, and *profound*; For the *raw Prieſt* being huddled into *orders* is at the inſtant manacled by three vowes, of *poverty*, *chaſtity*, and *obedience*, and this is the *buttreſſe* which ſupports the *Papacy*; for by theſe the ſilly *prieſt* is obliged to blind obſervance of *what ever* his *ſuperior* ſhall injoyne, and likewiſe driven to *abandon* all other *dependance*, but the *Pope the publik father*; From whoſe ſervice he may not be *diverted* by ingagement to *wife*, or *child*; He muſt forſake *alliances*, deſert promotions, ſolely he muſt *hackny* to ſupport the *reputation* of his *looſe ſuperiors*; Being thus deprived of all other *relations*, if upon the illumination of *Gods Spirit*, he ſhall *ſtagger* in opinion, and begins to ſavour the *true* ſence of his impoſed *drudgery*; as hee ſhall bee purſued with all violence

violence *ad ravim uſque* by his awfull *Hierarkiſt* (for that *ſly-chain* without which the *Papacy* cannot ſubſiſt, is now *link't* in this Kingdome) ſo is there none of the *reformed party* to whom with *confidence* hee dares apply, for *reliefe* or *Counſell*; It being ſo ſharply penall by our *Lawes* to have commerſe with *Prieſts*; whereby every man endevours rather to *betray* then *comfort* and *compoſe* his diſtracted *fancy*: Now were there a *Colledge* as aforeſaid, where (*un-indangered*) there *heſitations* might be ſetled, their *ſoules* conſolated, their *bodies* cheriſh'd, and protected, many like the *ſtray ſheepe* might have opportunity, to underceive themſelves, and encouragment to retire to the *true fold*, and prove rare *inſtruments* as to *unmaske* their owne *ſeducements* ſo to preſerve others from the like *ſorceries*; urge I need not, how *mightily* the *repute* of ſuch (and I doubt not *ſuch*) converſions would conduce to the *advantage* of the *Reformation*, and the diſabuſing many a *darke ſoule*, *precious in the ſight of God*. *Summa ratio eſt qua pro religione facit.*

Then tis requiſite to fore-lay the *number* of Recuſants, to win ſuch as are poſſeſt (if poſſible) to *conformity*, however to *crop the increaſe*; To worke upon the *conſcience* is indeed *ſpirituall*, and totally to *unſoule* the error, requires an *Expedient* alſo that is *ſpirituall*, and ſo proportionable to the worke, that is an exact *Church-diſcipline*, a *fence* ſutable to the Vine; A Diſcipline as *apt*, well *accommodated*, and as *naturall* to cheriſh *knowledge*, the drift of the *Goſpell*, as the *Romiſh diſcipline* is to conceale and ſmother it: A Diſcipline *adaquate*, *ſifting*, and *cloſe-rivited*, to reſtraine libertiniſme in *life* as well as in *opinion*, awfull to caſuall *each-bower* extravagancies in *ſin* or *ſchiſme*, as well as ſuch as are cenſurable and *multinary*; ἐπισκοπῆτε, *overſeeing*, not *coactè* but *libenter*, not *lucri gratia* but *prompto animo*, not for *gaine* but *conſcience*, not *Lording it over* κλήρους *cleris*, *all Chriſtians*, *Gods heritage*, *but as enſamples to the Flock whereof they are Epiſcopi overſeers*. That there be not two *ſeparate Juriſdictions* in *one* Kingdome Regall and Papall, which ever claſh and bandy, but that all may be equally, *in the ſame ſort* ſubſervient to the *Crowne*, ſuch as may beget *confidence* in *forraine* parties, as of our utter *abolition*

; An apt Church-diſcipline neceſſary to produce a Unity.

1 Pet. 5. 2.

Revel. 1. 7.

Acts 20. 17. & 28.

of the *Papacy*, and its dependants, ſo of our faſt *adherence* to the *reformation*.

The *Reſult* of this I expect with all *patience* and *humility*, from the ſage debate of *ſuch learned perſons* as ſhall be by *authority* thereto aſſigned, to whoſe *wiſdomes* and *moderation* I commend it *Mercurio dextro* with all *good ſpeed*.

Suffice it that the *ſubiect* of this diſcourſe is the *inquiry* what furtherance to this *Unity* may be attained by *Lawes civill*, executed in the ordinary *Courts* of *Juſtice*.

And tis true; ſhould we trace the *Spaniard* in his vigorous *Inquiſition*, wee may not be aſperſ'd with *cruelty* without reflection upon his *owne practice*; but for that the *inhumanity* of one juſtifyes not *the ſame* in others, and for that the *tender conſcience* is rather to be mildly *thawed*, then inforc'd or *violent'd*; for that, obedience that is *uncordiall*, ſavours not as *a pleaſing ſacrifice*; Laſtly for that their *error* ſeemes neither *malice* or *obſtinacy*, but *miſapprehenſion* and *ignorance*, as in *charity* we may preſume; Therefore it ſeemes reaſonable to reject ſuch *barbariſmes*, and to labour *unity*, by courſes more *civill*, *ingenuous*, and *goſpellary*, and in proces of time no *leſſe effectuall*.

* *Iniquum non eſt præſumendum* 4. *Rep.* 72. *Et ſtabilitur præſumptum donec probetur in contrarium* 5. *Rep.* 76 *Rep.* 73.

That which to this effect, I ſhall with *all humility* propoſe, is the rough modell of a *ſtatute*, abridg'd, and reaſond as it followes.

Firſt, it ſeemes not unworthy *a debate* whether it were not *requiſite* to be enacted.

1. Clauſe.

To repeale all former ſtatutes ſo farre as they concerne Recuſants for Recuſancie.

That ſo much of all and every the Statutes now in force againſt Recuſants, and all the penalties, forfeitures, diſabilities, &c. impoſed by them for the ſame, may be repealed.

The Statutes in force intricate & many.

1. The Statutes againſt *Recuſants* as they are * *many*, ſo they are *confuſ'd*, *voluminous*, and *intricate*, for being enacted in *ſeverall ages* according to the emergency of *things* and *times*, ſome are ſuppoſed, as now not ſo *ſeaſonable* ſo to enterfere with

* 26. H. 8. 3.

with the reſt, which difficulty ſo *ſcruples* the unſtudied *Majeſtrate*, that he growes *tender* in the execution of *any*, as willing rather to tranſgreſſe in *non-feſance*, then *injuſtice*; Therefore to explaine the *ambiguities*, to ſatisfye the *ſcrupulous*, and to quicken ſuch as are *moſt materiall* to an execution, it will be neceſſary to *compendiate* the now *moſt uſefull* Clauſes of all thoſe *Statutes* into *one*.* *Miſera eſt ſervitus ubi jus eſt vagum.*

2 Ed. 6. 20.
1 Eli. 1. 2.
23 Eli. 1.
27 Eli. 2.
29 Eli. 6.
35. Eli. 1. 2.
1 Ja. 4.
3 Ja. 4. 5.
7 Ja. 7.
3 Ch. 2.

2. The *nature of the Lawes* in force ſeeme rather to intend the eaſing them of their revenew, then us of their *religion*; for paying † 2 *parts of their annuall profits or twenty pound per menſem*, the practice of their ſervice is in a manner *continued*; Or indeed, it ſeemes to *expoſe them* to a neceſſity of *abſolute* compliance to the *looſe pleaſure* of ſuch *informers* to whom their *forfeitures* ſhall be *aſſign'd*, for if they ſhall *ſubmit* they attaine by *Court-ſlight* (notwithſtanding his *Majeſties beſt providence*, to the contrary) a *diſpenſation*, or ſlender *compoſition*, if they expoſtulate, they ſhall then be with rigour *haraſſed by the Lawes*; Either they muſt *ſervire ſcana* contribute to ſuch *what ever* overtures the *projectors* ſhall propoſe, or they ſhall be *legally* liable to their *ſpoyle* and *rapine*; ſo that ſhould ſuch as have the *Princes Eare* at Court incline to *policy* more then to *religion* (which tis poſſible ſome future age may evidence) it might ſeeme *State wiſdome* rather to increaſe by *diſpenſation*, then ſuppreſſe by *execution* the number of *Recuſants*.

* 6. Rep. 42.
† 29. Eli. 6.
3 Ja. 4.

The true ſtate and condition of Recuſants under the Lawes in force:

Farther it has beene the *wiſdome* of all States either totally and impartially to *eradicate* ſuch parties as they ſuppoſe *dangerous*, or to allot them *ſuch conditions* as they may *tollerably* undergoe; * The *Privernates* rebel'd, and being almoſt re-ſubdued to the *vaſſalage of* Rome, they addreſſe by their *Embaſſadors* for termes of *peace*; The *Senate* ſternly aske them, *what new peace they could expect, that had ſo inſolently infring'd the old*; 'Twas anſwered ſtoutly, *we muſt now take ſuch peace as you pleaſe to give; If it be moderate, you ſhall finde it faithfull; If too heavy it will be continued only till an opportunity to avoyd it*; The *bravery* and *ſtrong* ſence of this expreſſion induc'd that *wiſe Senate* to aſſigne them their owne *demands*; I inſtance this to inſinuate, that if we admit *recuſants* a ſub-

* Livy. lib. 8.

ſiſtence, we urdge them not with ſuch *ſufferances*, as irritate and imbitter, perhaps *make deſperate*; for [a] *Cum ad reſtem res rediit*, when perſons are expoſ'd *to a continance* of vexation, ſubjected to be plunderd by *ſuch inferiours* who deſigne their owne *profit* not their *converſions*, without peradventure they will [b] *maria omnia cælo —— miſcere*, aſſay all *diligences* to worke themſelves into a more *tollerable* condition; they will *comply* with all ſuch *malignant parties* as ſhall foment *diſtractions*, and contrive an alteration of the *eſtabliſht royall government*; ſuch as are *peraditi homines*, men of *loſt* fortunes, or others that are *exorbitant* in their *profeſſion* and feare to be reduc'd, ſuch who [c] *Honores quos quieta Republica deſperent perturbata ſe conſequi poſſe arbitrantur*. Theſe and the like, like *Crobyli jugum* wil unite in confuſion their *common intereſt*: Though their heads like [d] *Sampſons Foxes* looke ſeverall ways, yet they are *hampered in the Tayles* with firebrands and agree in this like hot *incendiaries* to ſet the whole Kingdome in *combuſtion*, that ſo either they may continue their *ſwolne greatneſſe*, ſhuffle into *better fortunes*, inforce a *moderation* in religion, or elce out of *malice* in *revenge* conſume the whole *body* with *themſelves*: *Quid valuit homicida, &c.* How little prif'd the *murderer*, to *inflame* the whole *World*, ſince hee ſaw *his own ruin* inevitably deſtin'd.

a *Terent. in Phorm.*

b *Virg. Æneid. lib. 5.*

c *Cicer. in Catil. Orat. prima.*

d *Iudge 15. 4.*

Tacit.

Not diſadvantageous to the King to repeale the ſtatutes.

As to that diminution which by *repeale of theſe Statutes* will incurdge to the *Kings revenew*, tis ſenſible that as thoſe receipts are *inconſiderable*, ſo were thoſe forfeitures never *to that end* deſign'd; or were they; doubtleſſe *the King will condiſcend* to deſert ſuch *perquiſites*, as are evidenc'd prejudiciall to the *publike*; Nor can his *Crowne* be impayr'd thereby, ſince as it is the *duty*, ſo is it the *ſafety* of the people *legally* to repleniſh his *Exchequer*, for if that be empty, how can his *Majeſty* with a *bare counſell* [e] *protect*, or *provide* againſt emergencies wherewith he is *intruſted*; A *truſt* to protect, &c. implies *accommodations* to performe the *truſt*; and indeed without ſupplies muſt the *luſter* of his Court *grow dimme*, which diſhonour reflects not ſo much upon *his perſon* as *the Nation*, the *Majeſty of which* is compendiouſly and glorioſly repreſented in *his royalties* and *State*; ſuffice it; let the ſubject

e *Rex ad tuelam legis corporum et bonorum eſt erectus. Forteſ. de legib. Angl. cap. 13. Stanf. Pl. Ca. 99. Bract. lib. 2.*

f *Conceſſo aliquo id conceſſu videtur ſine quo conceſſum conſiſtere non poteſt. 2nſt. Inſtit. lib. 2. fo. 21, 22. Rep. 52.*

ject be *endeard, inſpirited*, and *plentifull*, and he cannot be ſo *churliſh* to his owne *intereſts*, as not to endevour by *all juſt meanes* the gratification of his *Prince*, by whoſe *vigilance* he injoyes *ſolace*, by whoſe *magnificence* he acquires *honour*, for as jelouſy of *oppreſſion* moulds people *lumpiſh, deſperate*, and *ſtubborne*, ſo *indulgency* engenders *courage*, *generoſity*, and *love*.

Rex caput eſt & ſalus reipublicæ & a capite bona valetudo tranſit ad omnes. 4. Rep. 124.

3. Laſtly, if *Reaſon* of *State* gives *Recuſants* a ſubſiſtence upon ſome (*though hard*) termes, why then (they performing *according to thoſe termes*) enact wee ſome *other Lawes* that charge their *conſcience*, *under ſo ſevere a penalty, &c.* to which (if they have *Religion* ſuch (though erronious) as they profeſſe) they cannot cordially *ſubmit*; or if through *weakneſſe* they ſhould ſubmit *againſt conſcience*, thoſe Lawes which over-awed them ſeeme coadjuting *inſtruments* of their damnation, for an outward and *not cordiall* conformity aggravates the *crime*, as *hypocriſy* is more ſinfull then mere *ignorance*, perhaps *invincible*.

* The penalty for the firſt reſuſall of the Oath of allegiance is a premunire and cloſe impriſonment. For the ſecond Treaſon. 5. Eli. 1. 3. Jac. 4. *Aut deprime aut ne prome. Tac.*

Either therefore admit we them *no recidence* within this Kingdome upon any termes of *penalty* (which ſeemes hard *at this time* to inforce for that equally with us by the *Lawes in eſſe*, they are *now borne* to the freedome of the *Nation*) or give ſuch as are *ſo borne* and *conſcientiouſly poſſeſt*, ſuch *reaſonable* conditions of ſubſiſtence, as their *conſcience* bee not *violenc'd*, nor themſelves hurryed in *diſpaire* and *fury* to imbroyle the *Kindome*; which *tenderneſſe* as it may inſinuate and win into their ſoules by that *Goſpellary* way of *gentleneſſe* and *perſwaſion*, ſo it will conduce to continue the like *piety*, and *pitty* to the *Proteſtants* beyond the Seas; *provided* that we ſufficiently fore-caſt to ſecure their allegiance to the *Crowne*; (of which ſee the laſt Clauſe) and diſable them from a *further growth*; To which effect it ſeemes *reaſonable* that wee enact.

Vid. Fol. ult.

2 Clauſe.

To diſable all ſuch as are now under the age of ten yeeres, to inherit or purchaſe, &c. unleſſe they ſhall conforme at their age of twenty one.

THat all perſons now under the age of ten yeeres, who ſhall not within one yeare after they attaine to the age of one and twenty, repair and frequent the Church, and three times in the ſame yeere receive the holy Sacrament, and alſo take the Oath of Supremacy before the Miniſter and Church wardens of ſuch Pariſh where they ſhall inhabite openly in the Church, after Evening Prayers in ſome Lords Day, which taking the Miniſter and Church-wardens ſhall regiſter in ſome Booke to be kept for the ſame purpoſe, or ſhall after ſuch conformity, diſcontinue the Church, or refuſe the ſaid Oath being lawfully tendred, ſhall be held, reputed and adjudg'd Popiſh Recuſants, and ſhall be diſabled to take by diſcent or purchaſe in Fee, or Tayle, &c. to his owne uſe, or in truſt for others, any Lands, Tenements or hereditaments, &c. in England *or* Wales; *But all ſuch Lands which ſuch Recuſant ſhall be ſo ſeiſ'd of or any other to his uſe or, &c. ſhall deſcend and come to ſuch Recuſants next heire, that ſhall be of the age of one and twenty and conformable as aforeſaid; If ſuch next heire ſhall not enter* Bona fide *within ſix moneths, after ſuch* non-conformity *or refuſall, That then his ſecond heire that is of the age of one and twenty and conformable ſhall enter, and be thereof ſeiſed to his own uſe, in ſuch eſtate as ſuch recuſant had, or enjoyed, &c. If ſuch ſecond heire ſhall not enter* Bona fide, *within a ſecond ſix moneths, then ſhall it eſcheat or remaine to the Lord of the fee, or to him in remainder, as if ſuch Recuſant were dead; If he ſhall neglect his entry ſix moneths then ſhall his eſtate be diſpoſed of by the next Parliament to the publick uſe.*

Vid. a preſident for forfeitures in this ſort, in the Statute of *Mortmaine.* 7 Ed. 1.

The

The like for Leaſes, Tearmes, Copyholds or other Intereſts that hee may become in the ſame condition as an Alienamee.

Tis evident that ſome Clauſe *to this ſence* maturely ripened, being not poſſible to *be evaded* or *diſpenſ'd* with will in one age *unground* all *popiſh* Families: Tis their ſtore of *Lands* and thence of *tenants*, that makes them *formidable* to the ſtate, of which being *deprived*, as it will *diſcourage* them to ſettle heere, ſo will it *diſable* ſuch as are ſetled to *ingroſſe dependants*. A moderate and effectuall expedient to extirpate the Papacy.

Nor is it *penall* more then *ordinary* for that the *now Lawes* neceſſitate *Recuſants* to breed their *children* under *licenſt* [a] *Schoole-maſters*, for that none elce ought *to teach* in *private* or in *publike*; If their *education* be beyond the Seas an [b] act in force diſables them *to inherite or take by gift, conveyance, or deviſe, or otherwiſe*, untill they ſhall *conforme*; Now if wee ſhall enliven ſome *quicker Statute* for their education, me ſeemes as it is *not altogether naturall* to rend and force *a child* from the *vigilance*, and *nurture* of his *proper* parents, ſo will it not probably produce the effect, both by reaſon that it is *obvious* to a multitude of *Evaſions*, and for that *ſtomacke* which will *ſwell* in the *iſſue* upon the Fathers reluction.

[a] 23. Eli. 1. 1 Jac. 4.
[b] 3. Jac. 5.

Be it therefore at the *Fathers peril*, that his *child* be educated in the Doctrines *of our Church*, or if his conſcience be *ſo ſcrupulous*, as to derive to his iſſue *his owne errors*, he has faire leaſure *during life* to diſpoſe of his *Eſtate*, and tranſplant his *of-ſpring* into a *forraine* ſoyle, where the *principles* of his profeſſion are not ſo *deſtructive* to that *policy* of government. If notwithſtanding this *reaſonable* admonition, diſherifon ſhall accrue *to his poſterity*, it may not be traduc'd *injurious*, ſince the *private* of all men muſt *ſubmit* to the *publike reaſon of State*, [c] *Jura publica ex privatis promiſcuè decidi non debent.*

39 H. 6. 39. Mirror. cap. 3. §.

This Clauſe is onely to be avoyded by the *defect* of an *expedient* to ſcrutinye into the *true ſence* of men; For experience *dayly* juſtifyes, that *ſuch* whom wee ſuſpect to be *Recuſants* and *lately ſo profeſt*, glibly ſwallow *thoſe Oathes* of *Allegi-*

ance

ance and *ſupremacy*, reſort to *Church*, nay and *communicate*, whereby either that *act of* * *Diſcovery* becomes fruitleſſe, or *really they are* what they *now* profeſſe, *Converts*. Truth is, nor *diſpenſation*, nor *dread* nor *hope*, nor *malice* can mould a *conſcience* though *erronious*, *that is Religious*, to Hypocriſie; but ſuch as are *looſe* or but *formerly conſcientious* will ſcruple no *aſſay*, they have *volaticum juſjurandum*, and to provide a *Teſt* for the diſcovery of *ſuch*, were to make a *garment for the moone*; Notwithſtanding for *more ranke* conviction of ſuch *diſſimulation* (if it be *ſuch*) it may be requiſite to *inſert* into the Oath of *Supremacy*, the firſt Clauſe of the *Proteſtation*; viz. *To defend with life, power, and eſtate, the true Reformed Proteſtant Religion expreſſed in the Doctrine of the Church of* England *againſt all Popery and Popiſh innovations*, &c. or rather to compoſe the ſeverall Oathes that concerne *religion* into one, leſſe *equivocable*, and more *ſearching*, as not only to maintaine the Proteſtant Religion, but to *renounce* the *Romiſh*.

* 3 *Iac.* 4.

Non idem ſunt Scripturæ & Cricæmi. Eraſ. Adag.

3 Clauſe.

To raiſe a preſent ſupply of monies.

THat all ſuch as have not uſually frequented Church the firſt yeare of this preſent Parliament, and have not taken in the ſame yeare the Holy Communion, or ſhall refuſe the Oathes of Allegiance, Supremacy and Proteſtation, being tendered by the Commiſſioners, ſhall forfeit the—— part of their laſt yeeres revenew in Lands or goods, to bee aſſeſt upon their eſtates as they lie in the ſeverall Counties by the Commiſſioners nominated in the laſt Act of 400000. After the ſame ſort as is expreſt in the ſame Act, and to be returned accordingly, &c.

This charge will probably be *with alacrity* diſburſt by reaſon of the eaſe that *Recuſants* have from the *penalty* of former Statutes, and the rapine of *Projectors*; And this *way* of levying as it will be moſt *ſpeedy*, ſo moſt *certaine*, for that thoſe *Commiſſioners* upon experience of the *former taxes*, are well acquainted with *thoſe* which they *doubly charg'd* in their ſeverall *Counties*;

ties; Nor can ſuch *a ſupply* be *unwelcome* to the *preſent neceſſities* of the Kingdome.

4 Clauſe.

ALl Recuſant's not conforming as aforeſaid ſhall for ever till they ſhall conforme, pay —— to all Rates, Taxes, Charges & Payments, incident to their ſeverall Pariſhes, in proportion with the reſidue of their Pariſhioners, as Church, Poore, Bridges, High-wayes, Compoſition, Goal-money, &c.

A conſtant charge to be impoſed upon Recuſants.

This charge be it double or treble, &c. being aſſeſt by the *neighbour-hood*, and conducing to their *eaſement*, will be impoſed without *poſſibility* of evaſion, as well on *goods*, as *Lands*; and will be effectuall to incline eſpecially the *inferiour ſort* to conformity, who I ſuppoſe are *Papiſts*, rather of *cuſtome*, then *reaſon*; *faith* being grounded upon *knowledge*, which they abandon: Our Lawes in force ſcarce inflict *any penalty* on them, or ſuch as is ſo *inconſiderable* as never levyed; but being *phyſicks* with ſome *frequency* by this *potion*, ſomething *proportionable* to their ſeverall abilities, twill aſſay whether *the diſeaſe* be heart-ſetled, or no deeper then the *ſtomacke*: if ſo, they'l ſoone *vomit* it.

5. Clauſe.

THat no Recuſant ſhall come where the Kings Majeſty, or any of his Royall iſſue ſhall be, unleſſe he be commanded by the Kings Majeſty ſo to doe, his heires and ſucceſſors, or by warrant in writing under the hand of ſix of his Majeſties Privy Counſell; and then and there onely ſo long to remaine, as may ſuffice to diſpatch ſuch preſent buſines for which he is admitted, upon paine of 100. *l. whereof the moity to the informer, the other moity to be diſpoſed of by the next Parliament.*

To forbeare the Court.

3. Iac. 5. This Clauſe ſeemes *in force*; onely doubtfull, whether ſuch *licenſe* inables the *Recuſant* to make abode *at Court*, as his *habitation*; worthy to bee explained; Thoſe other Clauſes for their departure *from the City*, and *confinement within five miles compaſſe*, are uſually deluded; while we ſuſpect their contrivements, tis prudence to *ſcatter* them what wee may, from *conventing*. The aſſemblies of ſuch being moſt probably in *Townes* or *Cities*, twere reaſonable to authoriſe the *chiefe Majeſtrates* of ſuch places to *diſperſe* them; and none to have *reſidence* there, but ſuch as have a *licence* from them upon aſſurance of *quiet converſation*, Abundans cautela non nocet.

35. Eliz. 2. Ia. 5.

11. Rep. 6.

6. Clauſe.

To be diſabled in publick functions, and Offices.

That no Recuſants ſhall give Vote, or proxey in the Houſe of Peeres, nor ſhall practice the Common Law, as a Councellor, Clarke, Atturny, or Sollicitor in the ſame, nor ſhall practice the Civill Law, as advocate, Proctor, nor Phiſick, or the Trade of an Apothecary, nor ſhall be Iudge, Miniſter, Clarke, or Steward of or in any Court, nor keepe any Court, nor ſhall be Regiſter, or Towne clarke or other Miniſter, or Officer in any Court, nor ſhall beare any Office or charge, as Captaine, Leiutenant, or other Office in Campe, or Company of Souldiers, nor ſhall be Captaine, Maſter, Governour, or beare any Office or charge of or in any Ship, Caſtle, or Fortreſſe of the Kings Majeſty, his heires, or ſucceſſors, but be utterly diſabled for the ſame; Nor that any Recuſant or any having a wife being a Recuſant ſhall exerciſe any Office or charge in the Commonweal, but ſhall be utterly diſabled to exerciſe the ſame by himſelfe, or his deputy (except ſuch husband ſhall bring up his children in the true Religion, &c.) nor ſhall ſuch Recuſants preſent to a Benefice or Grant an advowſon, or Collate or nominate to any Free-ſchoole, Hoſpitall, or Donative whatſoever; but that the Chancellor, and

3. Iac. 5.

11. Rep. Chan. de Oxfords caſe.

and Schollers of either the Vniverſities reſpectively preſent as formerly; Nor be Executor or Adminiſtrator, or Gardian in Chivalry, Socage or Nurture, or to have the wardſhip or cuſtody of any infant, ideot or lunatick.

This is the Act expreſſe; onely that of the *Vote* of *Peeres*. 3. *Ia.* 5.
And ſurely ſuch *whoſe Religion* biaces them to an *intereſt* diverſe from the *publike*, are prudentially *preſumed*, not willing to promote *Counſels* ſo deſtructive to their *Intereſts*. And the ſame ground ſeemes appliable to *exclude* their *proxies*: For all that are *Proteſtants* in *forme*, are not alike *zealous* in *heart*; Now ſince it is one maxime to manage all *counſells* by ſuch as are *preciſeſt* in the *reformation*, it ſuits not wiſdome to arme ſuch as are but *luke-warme* with more accommodations, which they in *all probability* ſhall attaine, if *Recuſants* be inabled to diſpoſe their *Proxies*; by which *engagement* beneficiall Lawes may bee obſtructed though *His Majeſtie* with His *Commons* ſhall diligence to enliven them. Recuſants to give no proxies in the Houſe of Peers.

By priviledge of *Parliament*, their blood conferrs as much right to *give Vote*, as beſtow *proxyes*; and that reaſon *of ſtate* which diſables them in the *one*, is of the ſame ſtrength and not *more injurious* to diſable them in the *other*; nor can it be more injury *to a Peere*, then it has beene to the *Commons* who muſt receive, and pronounce the Oathes of *allegiance* and *Supremacy* in teſtimony of *conformity*, before they can give *vote* in *Parliament*, or ſit as *members*, though never ſo ſufficiently elected: That which diſcharg'd the *Temporall Lords* of the *Oath* in the Act of 5^o^. was *implicitly* the great power which they *then* held in the *Houſe of Peeres*, *Explicitely* becauſe the *Queen* was otherwiſe ſufficiently aſſured of their *faith* and *loyalty*. Now *faith* wee have often found is now *intayl'd* upon *ſucceſſion*. 5. *El.* 1. 3. *Ia.* 4.

Nor can *prejudice* inſue unto the *publike* by paucity of *votes* ſince *His Majeſty* may pleaſe to inlarge the number by his *Patents* of perſons *fitly qualified*; yet *of old* that houſe was not ſo *strong* when onely ſuch were *Peeres* as were cald *by writ*, No prejudice by their exclusion.

our *Ancestors* being unacquainted with other titles then *Comites & Barones.*

[a] *Edward* the *black Prince* was our first *Duke* and that of *Cornwall*; [b] *Robert de vere* was our first *marquiss* and that of *Dublin*; and [c] *Dominus de Bello monte* was by *Henry the sixt* created our first *Vicount*: Now the first *Baron* we read of to be created by the *Kings patents* was [d] *John Beuchamp* of *Holt*, *Baron of Kedermister.*

a Created 10. Ed. 3 An. Domi. 1336 Caus principib. 8. Rip.
b Created 6. Ri 2. An D. 1384.
c Created 23. H. 6 An. D. 1444.
d Created 1. Ri 2. An. D. 1387.

Some Phisitians now in practice to be forborne.

Something might be offer'd to tolerate *some physitians* now in *practice*, lest in disabling them, we *smart* our selves; whose *bodies* perhaps are inured to the *nature* of their *prescriptions*, having succesfully imploy'd their *learn'd experience*; But to continue them in *succession* appeares *mischievous*, by reason of those *oft* and *faire* opportunities which as they have *abilities*, so doubtlesse they have *wills* to contrive to a *by-use* upon their *patients* in *extremis.*

7 Clause.

Some Priests that shall have testimoniall not to abjure the Realm, and why?

That it shall not be lawfull to and for any Iesuite, Seminary Priest, or other such Priest, Deacon, Religious or Ecclesiasticall person whatsoever being borne within this Realme or any other His Majesties Dominions, made, ordained or professed by any authority or jurisdiction derived, challenged, or pretended from the Sea of Rome, *by or of what name, title or degree soever the same shall be called or knowne, to come into, be or remaine in any part of this Realme or any* * *other His Majesties Dominions; without the testimoniall licence, or approvement of the Iudges or any three of them, whereof the Lord cheife Iustice shall be one, before had, and obtayned; And if any Priest, &c. having such licence as aforesaid, shall be seene abroad, without such knowne habit of his Order whereby he may be distinguisht, and avoyded, Or if any Iesuite, Priest, &c. unlicenc'd, shall come, be and remaine within the said Dominions, shall be*

* 27. Eli. 1.

*be adjudged a Traytor, and ſhall ſuffer, loſe and forfeit as in caſe of High-treaſon; And every perſon, which ſhall wittingly, and willinglie receive, releive, comfort, aide, or maintaine any ſuch Ieſuite, Prieſt, &c. that is not licenc'd as aforeſaid, * being at liberty, and out of hold, ſhall for ſuch Offence be adjudg'd a felon without benefit of Clergy and ſuffer death, loſe and forfeit as in caſe of one attainted of Felony.*

* Vid. ſtat. de 5. El. 1.

This exception implying *admiſſion* of *ſome Prieſts*, though it be with *qualifications*, by ſuch as are more *curious*, then *deliberate*, may be *ſcandal'd*; For vindication I ſhall apprehend *this opportunity* to repreſent my *ſence* of the *Romiſh Church*, and ſo *drive on* thoſe *reaſons* that induce the *intimation*.

A Digreſſion Hiſtorically reaſoning the degreeing uſurpations of the Romiſh Prelacies.

I *Decry* that *Church* as a *grand Impoſtor*, buttre'ſt by *ſophiſtry* in Doctrine, and *policy* in Diſcipline, *erronious* in the one, and *machivillian* in the other; The *ſource* where-of were thoſe *miniſteriall* * *Officers* mentioned by the *Apoſtle* to be *Paſtors* and *Teachers*, who by *degreeing* inſolence have *appropriated* the titles [a] *Clergy* as if *all Gods people* were not *his lot*, and the [b] *Church* as if men *not in orders* were not of it, or *that* were not a *Church* which was in [c] *Priſcillas* houſe: Recommending *ignorance* to the *uncleane* (ſo they ſtile it) *laity* as the *mother* of *devotion*, thereby ingroſſing *knowledge* as a [d] *monopoly* to their *owne profeſſion*. By which *powerfull* advantage as they impoſ'd what *ſufferance* they

* Cor. 12. 28. 4 Eph. 11.

a χληρος. Ex κλαω frango ſorte datus, ſorte electus, ut unus ſit in orbe terrarum clerus i.e. Eccleſia. Quod Deus ſibi illum populum veluti portionem quandam a reliquis ſeparatam ſelegiſſet. 1. Pet. 5. 4. *Appellatio Cleri aut ex errore aut prava affectione nata*, &c. Calv. Inſti. lib. 4. cap. 4. Sect. 9. b Εκκλησια evocativum cœtus qui verum Chriſti Religionem profitetur, a καλεω voco. 1 Cor. 1. 2. c Rom. 16. 1. & 5. 2 Cor. 11. 28. d *Monopolium dicitur απὸ τυ μονὸ καὶ πωλιομαι, cum unus ſolus univerſum emit, precium ad ſuũ libitum ſtatuens.* 11. *Rep.* 68.

pleaſed

e Gen. 49. 14. pleaſd upon the *dull Laity* who like the e *Aſſe of Iſſachar* couch't to every *burthen*, ſo they uſurpt *dignities* and *revenewes* under the maske of *piety* to ſupport their owne *pride*, *pompe*, and *avarice*: For demonſtration.

That *charge* (which was by *Chriſt* committed with a f *Dic Eccleſiæ*, to the *whole Church* (whereof perſons *not in Orders* are a *part*) and ſo executed upon that *inceſtuous perſon*, if wee referre the (*yee*) in the *fifth Chapter in the firſt to the Corinth. ver.* 4. to the (*All*) *in the firſt Chapter verſ.* 2) became by the *leſſe diverted* diligence of the *Miniſtry* executed, and ſo in time *appropriated* to themſelves.

f Mat. 18. 17. *Cal. Inſt. lib.* 4. *cap.* 4. *Tr. Conf. Art.* 30

g Acts 15. 6. Act. 20. 7. *Church-aſſemblies* were uſually in g *Cities*, as moſt *populous* and *civill*, and to this ſervice *choyſe* men were elected from the *vulgar* to repreſent them, and for this uſe were *Elders* ordained by h *Titus* in every *City*. for though all the *miniſtry* were i *Elders*, yet all that were k *Elders* were not of the *miniſtry*, but *helpes in government*; 1 Cor. 12. 28.

b Titus 1. 5. i 1 Pet. 5. 1. k 1 Tim. 5. 17.

In ſuch *aſſemblies* were perſons moſt *eminently grave* elected to *precede*, to ſtate *queſtions*, collect the *ſence*, declare the *ſentence*, &c. So l *Peter* when 'twas lotted for *Matthias*; m *Iames* at *Hieruſalem*, and n *Paul* the chiefe *Apoſtle* of the *Gentiles*. Where ſuch perſon had the *primacy* of *Order*, not *dignity* or *power*. o *Be not ye called Rabbi for one is your maſter even Chriſt, and all ye are brethren.*

l Acts 1. 15. m Acts 15. 13. n Gal. 2. 7. o Mat. 23. 8.

Ful. Annot. Tit. 1. *Sect.* 2. In proces of time this *preſident*, or *primus ordine* being reverenc'd for his *gravity*, and eſpecially apply'd to for his *conſtant preſence*, and *diſpatch* upon the negligence of his *aſſiſtance* aſſumes a *Soveraignty* in *juriſdiction*, and uſurps it with the ſtile *Epiſcopus ſuperintendens*, by us ſometimes Engliſht p *Biſhop*, ſometimes q *overſeer*, This *Biſhop* for his more repute aſſociates *a conſiſtory*, by the name of *Chapter*, or *Prebends quia præberent auxilium Epiſcopo*, who reſenting it as matter more of *toyle*, then *honour* or *profit*, (which ſoly accrued to the *Biſhop*) are ſoone *cut-diligene'd*, and to this day they retain only (and that *pro* * *forma*) his *election*, and *confirmation* of his *grants*.

p 1 Tim. 3. 2. q Tit. 7. r Acts 20. 28. *Rad. D. Cicha. & Norwich.* * 25 *H.* 8. 20 *Mazleb. Cent.* 11. *c.* 7. *Quum vero hæc Evangelii in una civitate accenſa &c*

From theſe *Cities* (where was the *Cathedra* of the *Biſhop*) the *Pagi* or leſſer *Townes* adjacent were *illightned*: and the devotion

vation of *pious* Chriſtians there erecting and endowing *Churches*, thoſe *Churches* were ſupply'd as *Colonyes* from the *City*, and acknowledg'd ſuch *City* whence they had their *light*, the *mother Church*, and conſulted with the officers ther-of in *controverſies* and *cauſes Eccleſiaſticall*. This aſſiſtance the *Biſhop* with his *conſiſtory* or *counſell* condiſcends to at firſt *Ex charitate & ædificandi ſtudio*, from a holy deſire to edifye, but continuance of *ſuch addreſſes* ſwells the *Biſhop* with ambition, and *Imperii gratia*, he ſubſtitutes all thoſe villages which ſo reſorted to him to be *His Dioces*, and this about three *hundred* years after the *Paſſion*, towed into a *canon* at the* *Nicen* councell. * *A. D.* 325. * *Æn. Sil. Epi.* 301.

The *Biſhop* thus being ſet'd above his *Presbitery*, in emulation ſprings among the *Biſhops*.* As the ſame *councell* the whole *Church* is divided into *foure precincts* over which were appointed foure *patriarkes Rome*, *Alexandria*, *Antioch*, and *Hieruſalem*; But for that *Rome* was the* *Emperiall* and *chiefe* City, and endowed with *ampleſt* priviledges, it had allotted to it the *primacy* of *order*. * *Confirm. in conſtanti. Can.* 2. * *Concil. Calce. Can.* 28.

Rome acquieſt with this *dignity* till the yeare 606, when *Phocas* having ſlaine *Mauritius* the Emperor, his Maſter, by the aſſiſtance of* *Boniface* the *Roman Biſhop* gets the *diademe*, & gratifyes his *confederate* with the ſtile of *Univerſall*; which was re-confirmed by King *Pipin* to *Pope Zachary*, who upon complaint that *Childeric* King of *France* (*ſolo regis titulo contentus otioſam vitam degeret*) raign'd *laciviouſly*, depoſed him, and *contributed* to ent hrone the Conſpirator, that he might, *Officiis precium rependere*, countenance by *power* his ſelfe-encroachments. *A. D.* 606. *Buchol.* * *Boniface* 3d. *Onuph. Brda.* *Plu. Fr. Ann.*

Theſe Church-ambitions St. [a] *Baſil* ſtil'd [b] *occidentale ſupercilium*, the weſtern pride, with an *odi faſtum illius Eccleſiæ*, and they occaſioned the [b] *Greeke Patriarks* to deſert Communion with the *Roman*, inveying thus, [c] *Magnitudinem tuam ſcimus, &c.* Thy hautineſſe we know, thy avarice we cannot ſatisfy, thy uſurpations we will no longer abide, *Tecum vivito*. And when *Zozimus* in the yeare 417. urg'd a Canon in the *Nicen* Councell for his ſupremacy, The whole [d] *African Councell* explode *him* for ambition, and that

[a] *Baſ. Epiſt.* 10: Bi. *Vſher de Eccl. ſuc & ſtatu cap.* 1. *Pag.* 23. [b] *Gerſon part* 4. *ſerm. de pæc. & Unit. Græ. c.* 6. [c] *Carlton. Iuriſ. cap* 5. [d] *Conc. Afric. Can.* 105.

that forgery with an objurgation, *Ne fumeſum typhum ſeculi*
e *Greg. reg.* 166. *in Eccleſiam Chriſti induceret, &c.* e *Gregory* the *Great*, after
4. *lib.* 8. *Ep* 38. *Pope*, brands the ſtile of *Univerſall* as *ſceleſtum nomen, nomen ſingularitatis*, and that hee that ownes it is the fore-runner of *Antichriſt*; Nay hee propheſies that *the King of pride is at hand, and* (which is moſt grievous) *an hoſt of Prieſts are prepared for him.*

f 2 Theſſ. 4. 7. Now though this *miſtery of iniquity*, f *that ſits as God in gods Temple*, began to worke in the *age of the Apoſtles*; yet he that then *did let*, did withhold *till he was taken out of the way*; probably, the power of the *Romane* Empire, which ſo *awed* the inſolence of the *Clergy*, that it dared not ſo *notoriouſly* reveale it ſelfe; But about the yeare 1000 when
g Rev. 20. 7. 8. g *Satan* as 'twas propheſyed ſhould be *looſ'd*, h *Hadrian the*
h *Plat. Bery. Onup.* *third* firſt preſumes upon ſome *notable* advantage to exclude the *imperiall authority* its prerogative in the Creation and inveſtiture of the *Romiſh Biſhop*, and then broaches the *donation* of *Conſtantine*, that had beene *tund* up about *ſix hundred* yeares without *vent*, which occaſioned a deluge of *ſciſme* in that *chaire* of *peſtilence*, by mutuall murders, poyſonings, excommunications, &c. *Nullum ſeculum indoctius,*
i *Bellar. de Rom. Pont. lib.* 4. *c.* 11. *aut infelicius*, ſo i *Bellarmine*; *ſceleſtum ſui aſperitate, & boni ſterilitate ferreum, &c.* So k *Baronius*, In the ſpace of
k *Tom.* 10. *A.* 900. 150 yeares, were *fifty Popes*, moſt of which came *violently* to their graves; At length by deepe ſleights, in the *fulneſſe* of time,
l *A.D.* 1076. l *Hildebrand* by the name *Gregory* the ſeventh mounts the *Pepedome*, when it ſeemes that *Antichriſt* was *full* growne, and that was then the *Univerſall* ſence of men:
m *Avent. Ann. li.* 7. he (ſaith m *Aventine*) was the firſt that under the *gloſſe* of *Religion*, *Antichriſti imperii fundamentum jecit*, layd the
n *Onup. in vit. Greg.* 7. *Col.* 27. ground-worke of the *Popes* Empire; By him ſaith n *Onuphrius* their favorite, was that chaire endowed with *Wealth, Pomp, & profana ditione*, worldly juriſdiction: *Res ante ea*

Hoc nefandum ſacula inaudita.

primus auſpicatus eſt quod per ſucceſſores hac usq; continuatur. & c. Avent. An. Boio. 1077.

Now the inſtruments extraordinary that this *Pope* managed beyond his predeceſſors, were the eſtabliſhing certaine *Head-aſſertions*, of which *no diſpute* was to be tolerated, *probant, & non probantur*; Theſe to be the *touch-ſtone*, to aſſay

aſſay whether a man be *for* or *againſt* them: and hee that without heſitation *conſents* to theſe may have *connivence* in any other diſguſtment, he that *doubts*, is anathematiſ'd as an *Heretick*; ſome of thoſe *Decretals* I ſhall releaſe out of [a] *Onuphrius*.

[a] *Onuph. in vit. Greg. 7. Col. 148.*

That the Biſhop of Rome *onely is* de jure Univerſall.

That hee alone may for the neceſſity eſtabliſh new Lawes.

That he alone may depoſe Princes.

That hee alone may abſolve Subjects from their allegiance.

That his ſentence may not be retracted by any man, all ment by him.

That the Church of Rome *never did erre, nor can.*

That no Councill without him, can be generall.

That an appeale lyes from all powers to the Apoſtolick Sta.

That he alone can admit by indulgence, or exclude by excommunication whom he pleaſe from Heaven, &c.

Then hee forbids *Marriage* and commands *abſtinence from meats*, for ſo it was [b] propheſyed *he ſhould*. [b] 1 Tim. 4. 3.

By theſe *principles* that Sea is intitled to a *Monarchy jure Divino* over the whole World; nor is it improvident to build upon, and *fortify* what it hath thus *founded*; For theſe *principles* are become the very *rules* whereby they ſquare out the *Canons of Faith*; [c] *Eadem Scripturarum faciunt ad materiam ſuam*; Both Diſcipline and Doctrine they ſo *faſhion* as it may beſt comply to this *Intereſt*; For having reduc'd men to a *ſufficiency* of *ignorance*, commended, as the *Mother* of *Devotion*, they obtrude upon the *ſilly* people, what they pleaſe to be believed by an *implicite Faith*. [c] *Tertul.*

2. To this effect muſt *Divine Service* be officiated in a *tongue unknowne*, that the vulgar may the more admire at

what hee *underſtands not*, and apply with reverence to the *Prelate* for his information, which *tiel quiel* he muſt ſwallow as *Divine*.

2. All that are in orders muſt live *ſingle*, and adhere thereby and *depend* ſolely upon the *Pope*; Had they houſe, wife, or child their affections might more reflect upon their *Patrons*, which indulgence as it would diſtract them from a *totall* ſervice, ſo might it induce them to conſent to ſo ne *prejudices* of the *Romiſh* Church, which in the preſent ſtate they are they endevour *mightily* to advance, ſince under the *Popes protection* they ſecure themſelves vaſt *exemptions*, and *prerogatives* above the temporalty; and by *going Friers* rather are diſcharg'd of the *toyles*, then debarr'd the *ſolaces* of this life, injoying the opportunities as of *eaſe* ſo of all ſorts of *Luxury* at the *charge of others*; nor is it impoſſible but that their *ripe* fortune, or *notorious* diligence may commend them *gradatim*, to the higheſt dignity.

3. Certaine *meats* muſt be prohibited at *ſet times*, to enure people to *obedience*, or occaſion to purchaſe *diſpenſations*, But the reformation of this as alſo the *chalice* in the Sacrament had beene granted in the *Trent Councill*, at the inſtance of the *Germans*, but that it would have open'd a *gap* to demand an abrogation of all *poſitive conſtitutions*, by which only the *Popes* prerogative is preſerved, for by thoſe which are *de jure Divino* no profit doth ariſe, but that which is *ſpirituall*.

Card. Pio de Carpi diſ. con. Trid. pag. 460.

4. *Confeſſion* muſt be injoyn'd with this *inforcement*, that if any ſinne were pretermitted, the *totall* was ineffectuall; whereby there is a *dayly* diſcovery of the very *thoughts* of men, and preſent prevention if any thing be projected that's *miſchievous* to their cauſe, and this opportunity they *aptly* uſe to perſwade their penitents, to ranſome their ſinnes *by conſecrating their goods* unto the Church, as alſo to excite the multitude to *ſedition* and *tumult*, with annexing ſuch conditions to their *abſolution*, as beſt conduce to the *deſignes* they aime at.

5. The Doctrine of *merits* muſt be inforced, that there may be a *treaſury* in the *Church* full of their workes who

ſu-

ſupererrogate, the *diſpenſation* whereof is committed to the *Pope*, who when he gives indulgences *recompenſes* the debt of the ſinner by *aſſigning* ſo much in value out of the *treaſury*: and leſt this treaſure might be deficient, the *Merits* of *Chriſt* are added which are *infinite*; The grant of theſe was firſt practiſed by *Pope Urban*, to all ſuch who made VVarre to regaine the *holy Land*, after, to ſuch as maintained a *Souldier* in thoſe wars; In progreſſe of time the like indulgence was granted to ſuch as *rebell'd* againſt their owne *Princes* if *Excommunicate*, or refractory to the Church of *Rome*; But by *Leo decimus*, and ſo ſince, it's granted to *whoſoever will give money*, extending it to the *dead*; No ſooner ſhall the *mony* be diſburſ'd, but the party *pro quo* is freed from the paines of *purgatory*; And who will be ſparing of his *revenew*, to ſecure *himſelfe* or *friend* of Heaven? *Deus bone, quot hoc commentum de purgatorio miſere afflixit*; ſilly people are *dar'd, and ſqueaſ'd by this figment as a Larke by a Hobby*. So Lavatar. *A.D.* 1100. *circ.* 2. *Hiſt. Con. Trent. lib.* 1. *Lavat. Part.* 1. *cap.* 16.

6. By pretenſed power of *diſpenſation*, they interpoſe in *Princes marriages*, and legitimate *illegall* iſſues. whereby it is as neceſſary for *ſome princes* to ſupport this *infinite authority* of the Pope as to continue the *honour* of their birth, or *title* to their Crownes: They intermeddle alſo in *all treaties*, for if any Prince be involved in *hard conditions*, and falſly deſires a *freedome*, The Popes *Almighty* power can diſpenſe, and juſtifyes the *unholineſſe* of the act by the *holineſſe* of his authority; By which the *princes proteſtant* are irreparably prejudic'd, and brought to a *continuance* of incertainty in their *weightieſt* reſolutions, there being a *warrant dormant* for all men to breake *league*, or *oath* with them; Their Church having *long ſince* declared *Nulla fides cum hæreticis*. That leagues with them are *more holy* in their breaking, then their making. Sir *Ed. Sands his ſpec. Europ. Chriſtianagraphy. ll.* p. 101. *Id. Pag.* 43.

7. VVhen the corruptions of the *Clergy* like the *ſonnes* of *Ely*, *made men abhorre the offering of the Lord*, and miſdoubt the Doctrines of their *Prieſts*, whoſe practice gave themſelves *the lye*, and when that which ſhould be *Veneranda raritate venerabilis*, was proſtitute for *Tith*, and *Teſtament*, 1 Sam. 2. 17.

A.D. 1200. Mr. *Seld. Hiſt. Tythes. cap.* 14. & *pag.* 488.

(the *profitable* juriſdiction whereof they had incroacht, and became thereby as *Judges* of their owne *titles* ſo *ſharers* with all *executors*) then began the *naturall* cenſure of the *Church*, *excommunication*, to be contemned: Thoſe whoſe *haire* briſtled, whoſe *fleſh* trembled at the ſentence which

* 1 Cor. 5.

ejects them, Gods *providence* and the * *company* of all *good* men now diſvalued it, apprehending none *leſſe holy*, then thoſe that *moſt* denounc'd it, and that in cauſes where their *owne intereſt* was ingag'd; The *Clergy* then to preſerve their *unnaturall* Courts, and *credit* in ſome warmth, ſue for *ſecular* fomentations, to force that with the *Sword*, which would not open to the *Keys*: and by ſuch *monſtrous* aſſiſtance, as *fines*, *impriſonments*, *tortures*, nay and *death* (for they had

2 H. 4. 15. Fitz. N. B. 269. d Br. Hereſy 1. 10. H. 7. fo. 17.

once power in the writ *de* [a] *Haretico comburendo*) they *worry* the body to conforme to their *laviſh* pleaſures, leaving the *ſoule* to feſter and repine, to cleanſe which was the *drift* of Chriſt by *gentle admonition*, *meekeneſſe*, *&c.* in Church-Diſcipline.

8. Now the *prime Engine* that keepes this *politick* Fabrick in *continued* motion, is the *unfathom'd* power of their *Hierarchie*, wherby the *inferior* vowes canonicall *obedience* to his *ſuperior*, and ſo *upwards* till it determine in the ſence of *one man*, who deſigning any thing of *import* and *intereſt* diſperſes it into the ſeverall *Dioceſſes*, from thence it is diffuſ'd into the ſeverall *pariſhes* where the *Church Chaplaine* their *avowed* Creature, *Sermons*, and by it *poyſons* his dull auditors, having that mighty advantage to diſcourſe *often* in an

Dan. in Ed. 2. 2 K. 24.

attentive audience, and that without *interruption* or *reply*; ſuch was that at *Oxford* by the Biſhop of *Hereford* upon the Text *my head akes*, *my head*, by which he moſt *nudiviely* concludes that *an aking*, and *ſick head of a Kingdome* muſt of neceſſity *be taken off*, and that of *Doctor Shaw* at *Pauls* Croſſe

Wiſe. 4.

who out of the Text *Baſtard ſlips ſhall never proſper*, ſeconded by Fryer *Picket* upon *Woe to the Realme where a child is King*, invey'd againſt the undoubted right of the *fift Edward*; Theſe with ſome like *confederate* preachments ſo coſend the

* *An. reg.* 20. 1327.

blind credulity of the people that the *ſecond* * *Edward* was ſuffer'd to be depoſ'd, and the * *fift* a tender innocent *murder'd* in

An. reg. 1. 1483.

the *Tower*.

The

The power of this *miſterious Church-chaine* was oft checkt at by our *Princes*, but never mated till our *eight* [a] *Henry* liſtning to his *great counſell*, firſt unſeal'd the eyes of his *darke* ſubjects and inabled all to *ſearch Scriptures* [b] *whether the thing were ſo*, whereby the Clergy became *copies*, no farther then they agreed with the *Originall*, which was ſo evident (for I ſuppoſe the *holy ſpirit* more able then any *man* or *counſell* to dictate in expreſſions *moſt eaſy* to be apprehended) that the ſence of *every man* convinc'd thoſe aforeſaid *ſpurious* and *rebellious* inferences. Then he unhatcht the *lincks* of this *Hierarchie* from its dependance on the *Pope*, and affixt it more *immediately* to his Crowne with the ſtile of [c] *Supremum caput Eccleſiæ anglicanæ* which was his [d] *ancient* right. Surely that ſage *Parlament* as it expreſt deepe prudence to unward the Kingdome of a *forraine* ſervitude ſo expreſt it *mighty* confidence in their *Prince* to the *ſcale* of whoſe prerogative it added the waite which was formerly its *ballance*; An additament (being to the *perſon*) perhaps no leſſe *cumberſome* to prerogative then quarreld at by the *prelacy*; For ſhall not the *Prince* by wholſome and ſteddy *providence*, temper and qualify the *headineſſe* and *fiery* ſuggeſtions of his *Clergy*? they (ſwolne *aloft* from an *inferior* ranke) are ſoone *inflated* with ambitions, and under the *falſe gloſſe* of ſervice to their *maſter* deſigne their own *intereſt*, and in the end his *rifling*; for could they by a *higher power* check the curb of *Law*, they would ſoone degree into their *ancient* ſeparation and priviledges ſo *mortall* to *monarchy*, which the *Hierarchy* being now [e] *imperfect* cannot but as *naturally* Covet as it is to be *ambitious*; The attempt of which perhaps may expoſe *even Majeſty* (*quod avertet deus*) to much *ſufferance*, and hurry the *people*, (impatient of *Church-pride*) to combuſtions; certaine it is, *Variety* of preferments tempts men to *hanker* after their injoyment, and diſtracts from that diligence of *ſuperintendency* intended by the Goſpell: wherby the people become *libertines*, and they like * *Gallio careleſſe of thoſe things*. Thus thoſe *competencies* which our Anceſtors by the name of *Tithes* dedicated to preſerve knowledge in the *Laity*, are diverted to erect a *greatneſſe* in the *Clergy*, and *holy orders* are undertaken as a beneficiall *office*, not of *conſcience*

a 21 H. 8. 13. 1 Ed. 6. 12.

b Acts 17 11.

c 24 H. 8. 12. 25 H. 8. 20 19. 31 H. 8, 1.

d *Cantrices caſe* 5. *Rep. de. Iure regis Eccl. Dan* 26. H. 8. 1. 11. H. 4. 37.

e *Perfectum eſt cujus nihil eſt extra accipere. Ariſt.* 2. *cal. Tex.* 23. *Et appetitus materiæ non eſt niſi materiæ ad formã. 1 Phyſ. Ariſ.*

* Acts 18. 17.

ence, but to acquire *honour* and *revenew*: as if Religion were
a *Mach. de Princip.* as *Machiavill* designes only a *fallere civitates*, b *& regere vulgi animos*; *Sit alite dextro*, blest be the age when *each Church* shall
b *Tacit.* 1. *Ann.* be reindowed with a full competence, that each incumbent may *contentedly* acquiesce *in suo munere & superintendere* to oversee his *single* charge: that so some *ministers* might not be necessitated to *hackny* out their age in *penury* and *scorne*, while the rest perhaps *lesse worthy*, not *more Divine*, deboyst and *scandall* their profession in the *riot* of superfluity and *excesse*: endevoring in the *interrim* to patch up their own *deficiencies* by ammusing, & entertaining the *gasing sences* of their dull parish with *perfumes*, *pictures*, *chantings*, gorgeous and solemn *services*, &c. now *heere*, then *there*, now *low*, then *aloft*, now *Priest*, then *people*, then *clark*, then *quire*, by which *sportive* varieties some weake soules are possest that Gods Service is more *sensuall* then *cordiall*, or that their is a deepe *mistery* in the meere *forme* of worship, and industring to keepe *conformity* with the *severall changes* become disabled to *settle* and *compose* themselves to a *steddinesse* of *devotion*; stifling indeed the *pith* of true religion in the *barke*, which like a *simple* Infant is so straitned in the *prison* of his *garment*, that it scarce has liberty to vent *breath*. Lo all this is to the high impayring of that which is indeed the *miracle* of *Christianity*: To observe the supposed
a Mark. 6. 3. *sonne* of a a *Carpenter*, b *A man* of *sorrowes*, to inspire onely a
b Isay 53. 3. Mat 9. 9. few *unknowing publicans*, men in *raggs*, silly *women*, To waive
Mal. 4. 18. 21. Iohn 11. 2. Mal. 26. 7. the assistance of *Kings* and *Princes* (whom his *diety* might
c Cor. 2. 4. have *stoopt*) to neglect the *slights* of eloquence c *the intising*
1 Cor. 1. 17. &c. *speech of mans wisdome*, the inchanting *symphonies* of *Musick*
d 1 Cor. 2. 1. &c. ver. 4. *pomp* or sumptuousnes, only with *naked* simplicity, innocence, meeknesse, temperance and humility, those *celestiall* graces d *in plaine evidence of the spirit, and of power* to assault *powers*, *principalities*, *ambitions*, *lusts*, to force men from the *riot* of their *appetites*, levell their *high* thoughts with the *Earth*, and to reduce the disobedient onely with the *spirit* of *gentlenesse*,
e Mal. 10. 14. 1 Cor. 5. 13. 1 Tim. 1. 20. and *admonition*, or at most, e *dissertion*, by these *low* accomodations to disperse his *doctrines*, argues in deed a *Divinity* in the author and a purity in the *ordinance*; Wheras to have sown his *Religion* and preserved it by the ayd of *power*, *pompe*, *violence*,

lence, inquiſitions, burnings, fines, impriſonments, &c. had evidenc'd nothing of a *miracle*, for by ſuch *politick* principles *Mahomet* and the *heathen* have infuſ'd and fortifyed their *Idolatries*; It is the *badge* and *Emblem* of a Chriſtian (not Pomp, not Pallaces, not Pictures, Altars, Fire, &c.) but *humility* and *devotion* in the *heart*; which *argument* as it alone convinces all controverſy in *opinion*, ſo does it orthodox *Chriſtianity* to be *Divine*; Then does the Church of Chriſt *moſt flouriſh* when people are *religious* and *good*, not when the Clergy are *aloft* and *proud*; perhaps of this *Diana* to much, [a] *By whoſe craft, &c.* [a] Acts 19. 28.

Obſerve we from the *premiſes*, as the *novelty* of the *Romiſh Church*, ſo the *difficulty* to reconcile it to us; Our *Doctrines* are affirmative and derived from *all authority*, ſuch as neither the *Romiſh-Church* nor any *conſiderable body* of Chriſtians ever *diſaffirm'd*; Thoſe poſitions which they *adde*, and we *explode*, they either *father* upon darke *tradition*, or *ſqueaſe* obſcurely from the Text; to what is *demonſtrated*, or evidently *implyed* by the Scripture, we ſubſcribe; Their *ſuperfœtations* as we cannot *pedigree* their divine *originall*, ſo we juſtly ſuſpect to be *introduced* by deſigne: and good cauſe; for their is ſcarce *one doctrine* wherein we *vary*, but it contributes (*a capite ad calcem*) as the ſence of it at leſt is *now* diverted, to uphold *ſome* or *all* the aforeſaid laviſh *uſurpations* of their *Clergy*; Now were their *Hierarchie*, and thoſe ſuperiours level'd to their *primitive humility* (*Learne of me, for I am humble and in heart lowly*) and *diligence* (*woe is me if I preach not*) thoſe after births would of themſelves moulder off as *uſeleſſe* and *ungoſpellary*. But tis ſo ſenſuall to *tyranniſe* in a *ſeparate* Dominion, to riot *uncontrolably* in exceſſe and ſloth, that their *ſelfe-convittion* can no more probably be expected, then that *Belzebub ſhould caſt out Divills*, and their devout *lay-votariſt* is ſo awed by their *authority*, and ſo fitted by *confeſſion*, that he dares not *unhood* his underſtanding ſo much as to reſent the *miſtery*; Indeed they have beene ſo *provident* during their *univerſall ſway* over Chriſtendom, as to ſuffer few *Ancient wrightings* to be deriv'd unto *poſterity* to convince their *groſſe* incrochments; Some *Fathers*, they

Mat. 10. 26. Mat. 18. 4. 1 Cor. 9. 16.

Mat. 9. 34. Mar. 3. 22.

they have *father'd*, others they have *purg'd*, the reſt *confounded*, *Books* as well as *perſons*, ſo that to argue by *antiquity* ſeemes to be an *impar congreſſus*, as to joyne *iſſue* where the power of *one party* has purloyn'd the *evidence*, nay has ſate *Iudge*; The *Scripture* only we receive as an impartiall ſtanderd in its *naked* purity, which by its *primitive* diſperſion, and *Divine* providence, is uncorrupted, though the *Ieſuits* (being thereby *too evidently* convinc'd) begru ſith us that and *beſpatter* it, therein *helliſhly* ſtriking at the *root* of all *Chriſtianitie*.

2 Theſſ. 2. 10. 11. *Now becauſe men will not receive the truth that they may be ſaved, God ſends them ſtrong deluſion that they believe a lye*: and certainly the *Inferior Prieſt* by his raſh *vow* of blind obedience is ſo muffled, that hee *moſtly* appehends not the aforeſaid *miſteries* of the papacy; but ſimply in ſome ſort of *innocence* is precipitated to uncouth enterpriſes; and the *credit* of his *hot zeale* and boldneſſe beares up the *reputation* of the *Romiſh* cauſe; In which actions though I totally *explode* his preſumption in the defiance of *our Lawes*, yet I pitty that the *zeale* (if it be ſo) of ſo much *ingenuity* ſhould be *miſguided*: and ſince he that profeſſes with the *truth* but *formally*, *looſely*, and not of *conſcience*, is ſuppoſ'd in *darker* plight, then he that profeſſes *conſcientiouſly* opinions that are *untrue*, if not *blaſphemous*, Therefore as *Paul* of *Iſrael* (*my hearts deſire and prayer to God is, that they may be ſaved, for they have the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge*) ſo tis my *charity*, as not to force Romaniſts that are *now poſſeſt* from the means of truer *knowledge*, ſo not totally to diſable them the *practice* of Chriſtianity; It can be no *attractive* to our religion, to *inſtate* them in condition to be *of none*; either permit we *Recuſants* no *ſubſiſtence* in this Kingdome, or admit them to be *no Atheiſts*.

Rom. 10. 1. 2.

a Rev. 18. 2.
b Rev. 17. 9.
c Rev. 17. 6.
d Rev. 18. 13.
† 2 Theſſ. 2. 10.

Tis propheſyed that in the *fulneſſe* of time [a] *Babilon* (*that* [b] *City ſeated upon ſeaven hills, drunke with the blood of* [c] *ſaints, that has made* [d] *merchandiſe of the ſoules of men, and has inebriated* all Nations *with the cups of hir fornication*) *muſt fall*; [†] *Him God will conſume with the ſpirit of his mouth and deſtroy with the brightneſſe of his comming*; And certainly where the

the *Goſpell* is preached in its true *purity*, *liberty*, and *power*, that black darkeneſſe vaniſhes as a *miſt* before the *Sun*; Ponder we in this *Land*, where it gaines *ſettlement*, if it be not either where there is but *darke inſtruction*, or where the *pride*, *ignorance* or *looſeneſſe* of a Miniſter ſcandals his *profeſſion*; Adapt we our *Church-Diſcipline*, that it may ingage our *Miniſtry* to *diligence* more then *intereſt*, that people be ſo *ſuperintended*, as to become neither *ſottiſh* nor *libertines*, that there be a vigilant and *handy-an e* over *ſinne* as well as *ſchiſme*, the *Romiſh* Empire which covets *darkeneſſe* will be ſoone *confounded*, mauger the utmoſt endevour of hir *inſtruments*.

In the *interim* ſome *gentleleſſe* to ſuch adverſaries as are *now poſſeſt* in conſcience, as it will argue *confidence* of our own cauſe, and *brotherly longing* for their *fellowſhip*, ſo may it inſinuate and *court* them into a *kindly* approbation of our happineſſe in the *liberty* of Divine *knowledge*; which knowledge will ſoone *unvaile* even to ſuch as are *ingenuous Prieſts* the project of their *impoſed drudgery*, To the lay-votarill, of *confeſſion* and *ignorance*, which they cannot but *reſent* with *indignation*, and improve to *undeceave* themſelves, apprehending how their *eſtates*, *ſtrengths*, and *zeale* are imployed *implicitely* as *Dromedaryes* to ſupport the *inſolence*, *ſtate* and *riot* of their *ſuperior* Clergy. *Religionis ſua abuſus*, *quæſtus ſacrificulus eſt in cauſa*, ſo Poſtellus: Nor can they be *deterred* by our preſent *fractions*, ſince both *ours*, and the variance which is in moſt of the *reformed* Churches is nothing *dangerous* becauſe not *doctrinall*; Tis onely in *diſcipline* charg'd to be *overgrowne* or introduct for *politick* deſignes, or in *Ceremonies* which by ſome are thought *indifferent*, by others abſolutely *unlawfull*, by none *eſſentiall* to ſalvation; Theſe doubtleſſe the difference being *intereſt* not *divinity*, and conſiſting in the *garment* not the *body*, time and ripe providence will *temper* to a reconcilement.

Lib. 1. de orb. Concord. cap. 7.

But if *ſome Prieſts* according to the propoſition may not be admitted upon the grounds of *charity*, and *confidence*; let it be argued upon the grounds of *humane reaſon*.

The *profeſſion* of a *Romaniſt* ſo neceſſitates him to the *perſonall*

ſonall imployment of his *confeſſor*, that unleſſe we ſuppoſe him totally * *heatheniſo* and *unchriſtian*, we may aſſure our ſelves that he *commerſes* with his *Prieſt*; And well may the *rigour* of our *Law* inforce *Priests* to *privacy* and *diſguiſement*, but never to a *totall* abjuration; for *abſolutely* to diſſert their *party*, were to infrindge their *vow* of *obedience*, to renounce their *orders*, of which (ſome preſume) they make *conſcience*, or they would not *ſubject* themſelves to ſo much *ſufferance*: *reſtraint* rather *quickens* their inventions to *evade*, then *flats* their reſolutions to *adventure*, ſince the *difficulty* of the *action* inſtiles it as to them, *meritorious*; Perhaps to that *deboiſtneſſe* which in *forraine* parts among *Prieſts* is ſo notorious upon ſuch *relaxation* would here *diſplay* it ſelfe in its proper *colours*, whereby the *ſeduced* people would be no longer coſend by their *gloſſe* of *ſanctity*, and the *looſeneſſe* of our owne *miniſtry*, not ſo much *diſcourage* us, as if *unparaleld*.

* *Nemo præſumitur eſſe immemor ſalutis æternæ.*

Gaſp. Contar. De Rep. Ven.

Now the ſage *Venetians* fadoming that *dependance* which the whole Clergy have upon the *Sea of Rome*, forbid all *Prieſts* their *Councells* with a *Foras y Preti* by the voyce of common Cryers, but *Ieſuits* they experience to be ſo *ſtyly* officious in *State contrivements*, that they baniſht *that order* their *Dominions* upon paine of death; Nor is it memoriſ'd that any have *violated that Law*, for that neither *conſcience* nor *vow* obliges them to ſo *deſperate* a ſervice ſince their *Prieſtly office* as it relates *to God* may be diſpatcht by *others*; This ground onely is that which will *diſburthen* us of *Ieſuits*, and thoſe *ſuperfluous* ſwarmes of *Prieſts* which now cloy and peſter us: permit we upon *good teſtimonie* and ſecurity of *quiet* converſation, ſome *few ſaculars* ſuch as are borne *free-Engliſh* to injoy their *birth-rights*; Let their number be *ſo ſtraitned* as they have *no leaſure* from their function to be tampering *in the State*, let them be injoyn'd a difference *in habit*, whereby they may be diſtinguiſht, and *avoyded*, As *conſcience* would not bigge on the *recidue* to attempt hither with *ſuch perill* ſo *unavoidable* death if apprehended: Where they are not *neceſſary* in their *calling*, ſo *much miſchiefe* might chance to be *prevented* which they *now projects* under the maſke of *Gallantry* and *diſguiſe*.

Nor

Nor can ſuch a *prudential* act be inſtil'd a *toleration* of *Idolatry*, ſince we charge that *Religion* with ſo many *preſent diſabilities*, &c. as are *elſewhere* expreſt, as alſo with a *drift* in time of * *totall* extirpation: Not to execute the utmoſt *severity* of puniſhment, is not an allowance to the crime; Of two *evills* upon which we are *neceſſarily* inforc'd, tis wiſdome to chuſe the *leaſt*; as we rather *ſuffer miſchiefes*, then an *inconvenience*; Therefore prohibit we not *maſſe* in the houſes of *Embaſſadours*, nor puniſh we *uſury* though the [a] Statute votes it to be forbidden *by the Law of God*, a *ſin*, and *deteſtable*; [b] *Multa conceduntur per obliquum, quæ non conceduntur de directo.*

* *Vid. Claſ.* 2.

[a] 13. *Eli.* 8.

[b] 4 *Rep.* 20.

Thus I have expoſ'd my ſence, vindicated I hope ſufficiently from favour to *their cauſe*, though perhaps not without *pitty* and ſome *tenderneſſe to miſguided zeale*, and *perſons*; All which I ſubmit as *ingeniouſly* to *better reaſon* as is expected unto mine.

8. Clauſe.

THat all perſons that ſhall practice to abſolve, perſwade or withdraw any of the Subjects of the Kings Majeſty, &c from their naturall obedience to His Majeſty, his heires or ſucceſſors, or to reconcile them to the Pope or Sea of Rome, *or to move them or any of them to promiſe obedience to any pretended authority of the Sea of* Rome, *or to any other Prince, ſtate, or Potentate, * or ſhall openly ſay or cauſe maſſe or any other idolatrous ſervice to be ſaid in open and notorious places, whereby any Proteſtant may have liberty, and be permitted to enter, by the will and free conſent of ſuch perſon ſo ſaying, or cauſing it to be ſaid, That then all ſuch perſons, their procurers, counſellors, aiders and maintainers, knowing and conſenting to the ſame, ſhall be to all intents adjudged, &c.* Ut ante.

Withdrawing from allegiance or Religion.

* Saying maſſe in open and known places.

3 Iac. 4. The former part of this clauſe is expreſſe in 3. *Jac.* 4. the *latter* may obviate a *miſchiefe* which is too *frequent, ſcandalous*, and *temptations*, at the perill of ſuch as have *beſt opportunity* to avoyd it.

9 Clauſe.

Delivery of the armes of a Recuſant.

THat if any Popiſh Recuſant ſhall not before the day of and ſo from time to time voluntarily deliver up all his Armour, or Ammunition, &c. or ſhall knowingly keepe or detaine either to his owne uſe, or to the uſe of any other, any ſuch Armour, Ammunition, &c. other then ſuch quantity as he ſhall be allowed to retaine for the neceſſary defence of himſelfe, his Houſe and family, ſuch Recuſant being thereof convicted upon reiw of two Iuſtices, or other teſtimony, ſhall abjure the Realm, if he ſhall returne he ſhall be adjudg'd a Traytor &c

1 Iac. 4. 3 Ia. 4. Formerly ſuch *concealements* have beene practiſ'd, that the *Lawes* injoyning *Iuſtices* to ſearch become *fruitleſſe*, or if upon *diligent inquiry* Armes, Ammunition, &c. were diſcovered, the only *penalty* was *removall*, and the offendor becomes *inſtructed* how more *cloſely* to conceale a *new* ſupply; But a clauſe to this ſence, impoſing the *delivery* and *retainer* upon the perill of the *poſſeſſor*, wherein if he proves faulty, he undergoes *ſo deepe* a cenſure, will doubtleſſe be *more effectuall* to diſarme them.

10. Clauſe.

To diſcharge the eſtate of a Recuſant of incumbrances by Statutes, &c.

THat it ſhall be lawfull for all Recuſants ſeiſed of eſtates in Fee, or Tayle, to diſpoſe of them by ſale or otherwiſe according to the due ceremonies of Law, acquitted of all former forfeitures, and penalties incurd by reaſon of any former ſtatute, compoſition, or agreement meerly for Recuſancy.

A Recuſants *Land* is ſo incumbred and charged by *ſeverall Statutes* in duties to the *Crowne*, that without ſome clauſe to *this ſence*, few will adventure *to purchaſe* upon their *Titles*; And it ſeemes reaſonable if we diſable *their iſſue* to *inherit*, to inable them *to ſell* for their beſt *advantage*; provided that if they *tranſplant* their *families*, their *money* be returned by way of *exchange*, and not *tranſported*.

11. Clauſe.

THat all men whatſoever, that doe or ſhall inhabite in the Kingdome of England, or Dominion of Wales, being of the age of one and twenty yeeres, ſhall within one yeare next enſuing or within one yeare next after they ſhall attaine to the age of one and twenty, become of ſound wind, out of priſon, or returned into the Land, &c. take the Oath hereafter mentioned before the Miniſter and Church-wardens of every ſuch Pariſh where they ſhall inhabite, openly in the Church after Evening Service in ſome Lords Day, which taking, together with the name of the party, the Miniſter and Church-Wardens ſhall regiſter in ſome booke to be kept for the ſame purpoſe, and for ſuch their entry ſhall have . And if any perſon ſhall neglect or not tender himſelfe to take the ſame Oath in manner and forme aforeſaid, the ſaid Miniſter and Church-Wardens ſhall certifie the name of ſuch perſon to the next generall ſeſſions, and he ſhall incurre being thereof convicted, the dangers, penalties, and forfeitures ordained and provided by the Statute of proviſion and premunire, made in the ſixteenth yeare of the raigne of King Richard the ſecond, &c. I ſuppoſe the Oath to this effect.

An Oath of allegiance to the King, and fidelity to the Kingdom to be taken neceſſarily by all.

3 *Iac.* 4. An Oath of allegiance to be taken by all persons, &c.

1. *I, A. B.* doe truly and sincerely acknowledge, testifye and declare in my conscience before God and the world, that our Soveraigne Lord King *Charles* is lawfull and right full King of this Realme, and of other His Majesties Dominions and Countries.

3 *Ia.* 4.

2. And I sweare from my heart, that notwithstanding any declaration, or sentence of Excommunication or deprivation made or granted, or to be made or granted by the Pope or his successors, or by any authority derived, or pretended to be derived from him or his Sea against the said King, his Heires or Successors, or any absolution of the said Subjects from their obedience; I will beare faith and true allegiance to his Majesty, his Heires and Successors, and him and them will defend to the utmost of my power, against all conspiracies and attempts whatsoever which shall be made against his, or their persons, their Crowne and Dignity, by colour of any such Sentence and Declaration, or otherwise.

3. *Iac.* 4.

3. And I will make known unto His Majesty, his Heires and Successors, all treasons, and trayterous conspiracies which I shall know or heare of to be against him or any of them.

1. Eli. 1.

4. I doe also promise, and vow that to my power I shall assist and defend all jurisdictons, priviledges, preheminences and authorities, granted or belonging to His Majesty, His heires and successors, or united and annexed to the imperiall Crown of this Realme.

Protestation.

5. I shall also maintaine and defend as far as lawfully I may, the power and priviledges of Parliament, the lawfull rights and liberties of the Subject, and every person that takes this Oath in whatsoever he shall doe in the lawfull pursuance of the same.

Protestation.

6. And to my power, and as far as lawfully I may I will oppose and by all good wayes and meanes indeavour to bring to condigne punishment all such as shal either by force practice, coonsels, plots, conspiracies, or otherwise, do any thing to the contrary of any thing in this present Oath contained.

3. *Iac.* 4.

7. And these things I doe plainly and sincerely acknowledge and sweare according to these expresse words by me spoken.

and

and according to the plaine ſence and common underſtanding of the ſaid words, without any equivocation, or mentall evaſion, or ſecret reſervation whatſoever; and I doe, and will renounce all pardons, diſpenſations, or abſolutions whatſoever to the contrary.

8. And I make this recognition and Oath heartily, willingly and truly, upon the true faith of a Chriſtian. *So helpe me God.* 3 *Iac.* 4.

He that deliberatly, *præcogitate*, ſhall refuſe *ſuch an Oath ut videtur*, has deſignes of *Treaſon* to the *King*, or *State*; He that maliciouſly, *præcogitate*, ſhall infrindge it, *implies* he is *no Chriſtian*; As *Divinity* confounds the one, ſo *Jus gentium*, the Law of *Nations*, explodes the other.

Rerum progreſſus oſtendunt multa quæ in initio non povidentur. 6. *Rep.* 40.

The Drift.

May Glory be to God in the liberty, purity, power of his worſhip; Honour to my King, in the might of his dominions; Proſperity to my Country, *England*, in the Unity of its Intereſt; And

May ſome moderate Overture bee here hinted as may contribute to ſtanch the gore of *Ireland*.

Faxit Deus.

FINIS.

Errata.

For reluction p. 15. l. 21. r. *reluctancy*; p. 16. in the margin for Cricæus r. *Lineus*. p. 23. l. 11. for towel, r. *towred*. p. 24 l. 1. r. that for *Forgery*. id. l. 34. for inaudita r. *inaudite*. p. 25. l. 4. for releaſe r. Rehearſe. p. id. l. 30. for Δυλκιη, r. Δυτιαη. p. 31. l. 20. for ſuperfortation. r. *ſuperfetations*. ib. l. 34. inandita. r. read *inauditæ*.